TRAFFORD'S TRADING CLUB

BOOK 04

White Jade Of Sunset Mountain

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Trafford's Trading Club

(特拉福买家俱乐部)

by

White Jade Of Sunset Mountain

(夕山白石)

Synopsis

Luo Qiu became the boss of a ‘club’ by chance.

It was a weird club that sold strange items and with servant girl that had 300 years of working experience. Countless people with dreams, hopes and ambitions came to the club to exchange anything precious they own for what they want. They would offer their lifespan, items, and even their soul. Every successful trade would increase Luo Qiu’s lifespan by a little.

“Tribute successful, your lifespan has increased by 99 years.”

As thus, Luo Qiu began his endless life of the club’s boss.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alfredo Poutine Soup @ Qidian International

Translations Edits by DesTheSloth @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301: An Office that Wasn't Leveled Up.

The police station.

Yelgo was snoozing--- Of course, not because there were no jobs to do.

It was because he stayed up to write a report last night and had no time to rush home to tidy himself up. He just kept on working.

Suddenly, the office door was opened. Yelgo woke with a start and stood upright, "Mr. Victor! I'm not loafing on the job!"

"I... I'm not Mr. Victor. "

Yelgo was surprised, he turned around and only saw a civilian policewoman, he suddenly grinned with awkwardness.

The policewoman said with laugh, "Well, Mr. Victor is sitting at the cafe downstairs, he wants you to go there. He is meeting a guest, and his face looks very serious... Well, his face is still as unfriendly as always. "

"Guest?" Yelgo was stunned and he went out with doubt.

Running down the stairs to the cafe, Yelgo saw Victor in the corner. When he walked over to him, he saw the so-called 'guest' the policewoman said.

He had a typical oriental face, black hair, wearing black coat... around 30 years old.

The eyes of this man suddenly gave Yelgo a strange pressure.

But this time, Victor also turned toward to Yelgo, "Please sit down. Let me introduce, this is Mr. Ye Yan from Lyon, France. He has some questions for you in detail, you just need to answer it honestly. "

Talking about Lyon in France... Yelgo immediately realized

something. He looked at Victor and Ye Yan, "Mr. Victor, this..."

"Do you remember the Italian drug-runner arrested in Moscow two years ago?" Victor laughed, "That was a joint action, and I knew this guy from that time."

"Oh..." Yelgo primly sat down. Though they came from different systems, but they both wiped out evils. Yelgo quickly adjusted his attitude, "What questions does Mr. Ye want to ask me?"

"Then let me get to the point." Ye Yan laughed... Of course, this old man didn't speak Russian.

They could only talk in English.

He was Ye Yan, who directly came to Moscow from France overnight just because of one message from Victor.

"I want to know about that 'corpse'." Ye Yan sternly said, "Would Mr. Yelgo please tell me the whole thing. Listen, Mr. Yelgo, it's very important to me and my headquarters, I hope you can speak in detail!"

Yelgo subconsciously looked at Victor... Though the International Criminal Police was a very prestigious profession, it actually had no right to directly get information from other police systems.

But Victor gave an acquiescent look, Yelgo hesitated before nodding, "OK, Mr. Ye, please."

"That man, why did he turn out like that?"

Yelgo recalled, "I remember, he took out a syringe at that time and then he injected it to his neck..."

Ye Yan's eyes suddenly lit up, "Are you sure? He really injected it? "

"Yes." Yelgo nodded, "After that his body began to swell, I'm sure of that."

Ye Yan nodded and heaved a breath, but he squinted, "Finally... I

got some clues about those guys."

Yelgo... Yelgo was confused throughout.

...

Ye Yan left with satisfaction after he repeatedly asked the question and the scene more than ten times.

He said he had something else to do.

And left Yelgo and Victor here.

Yelgo couldn't help but hesitated, "Mr. Victor... We, We revealed this matter in private, is it a little..."

"It's not privately revealing it." Victor quietly said, "There are a lot of things involved in it, and it's a long story. You'll know it later."

"Ah?"

Victor suddenly took out a ticket from his suit, "This is tomorrow's ticket to France, and this is your transfer letter."

"What? Mr. Victor, I don't understand. "

"They are lacking good staff members in France recently. A month ago, when I contacted Ye Yan, he asked me if there were any good guys I can recommend. Of course, I spoke thoughtlessly at that time, but I recommend you."

"Mr. Mr. Victor!"

"Listen." Victor lightly said, "Don't follow me... I don't know how my future will be. Maybe I can go along, or maybe not. But anyway, it's good for you to go out and gain some experience. Of course, you can refuse it, I'm not forcing you. But if you choose to stay here, I will apply to transfer you to the evidence room."

Transferring to do clerical works...meant demotion.

"Can I think about it? I think I need time to consider."

"Don't take too long."

...

...

Yakov returned home after being busy for a whole day.

He sat on the sofa, shouting his wife, but there was no respond. So he doubtfully looked around.

When he turned back, Yakov suddenly jumped up with panic, " Who are you!"

"Mr. Curator, you shifted the misfortune onto me, but forgot who I am?"

A woman with black leather, and face was covered by a black clown headgear.

Yakov frowned, "You... You are the real F&C?"

He stepped back with alert.

"If I were you, the best choice is not to move... Otherwise, I don't know what's gonna happen in the room. Oh, I mean your wife, and your children."

"What do you want to do!" Yakov was shocked and angrily said.

"Where is the real 'The Nameless Maiden'?"

"'The Nameless Maiden'? Hasn't it been returned to the art gallery?" Yakov said in a cold sweat.

"Today it reopened, and I went there." Vera sneered in the clown headgear, "But I have scanned it with some special equipment... You know, your pigments color will change under the light. I spent two days on testing the intensity of this light."

"I, I don't know what you're talking about!" Yakov turned his head.

"Do you?" Vera sneered again, "Do you want me to go to the art gallery to light up the so-called 'The Nameless Maiden'? I think some interesting things will happen. Oh, I have found something

interesting in your house, they are documents about the use of the repair funds of the art gallery."

"You..." He took a deep breath, "Don't, let's have a talk. What You want is the real painting, but it's not in my hand. It's... It's Efim who threatened me, and I had to do that! I directly gave the painting to him after I took it out! I really don't know where it is. I also suspect the painting in the art gallery is fake, but I have to pretend that I don't know that."

Vera suddenly walked to Yakov, and sharply said with the voice changer, "Mr. Curator, you know, I don't have a good image...So I also can't imagine what I'm going to do."

"I really don't know that!"

"Do you? The 'real' painting... as I got it, why is it just a 'Made-in-China' one?"

"I, I don't know what you're talking about..."

Vera didn't want to talk more, she directly pressed the man on the table, taking out a knife and suddenly stabbing it on the table---near the curator's face.

"Wait, Wait! Don't kill me! I tell you all!"

Yakov was greatly frightened at this time and hurriedly said, "The painting... The painting is still in my hands! I, I know Efim didn't understand art at all, he couldn't imagine that I dared change the painting before I gave him... I just took a risk, I really owed a fair amount of money, you know, my family relies on my income..."

"I'm not interested in your family affairs. Where is the painting?"

"In the study... Behind the bookshelf."

Vera pushed Yakov into the study, and had him open the bookshelf. They found a painting wrapped in oilpaper here.

Yakov could only tear open the oilpaper and unwillingly take the

painting out under the threat of Vera.

But when the painting was spread, Yakov showed a strange look, "How could this be! How could this be! "

He suddenly shattered the frame--- in front of Vera!

Vera was surprised by this guy's action... Was he going to destroy the evidence? But how could he ever do this to the real 'The Nameless Maiden'?

But soon, Vera knew why Yakov showed such devastated expression.

Because this so-called the real 'The Nameless Maiden' he kept was also 'Made-in-China'.

"How could this be! Where is my painting? Where! Where! Who stole my painting!!!" Yakov crazily rummaged everywhere in this study.

Vera looked at Yakov for a while, who also seemed to be tricked... Where was the real painting?

"I have no clue!"

Miss Vera left from the window with a disappointed face. Upon seeing Yakov's wife and children driving back, she subconsciously sneered, "You even don't know your family had a party today, how can you say you work for your family."

At this time, Vera's phone rang.

"Boss Vera, the identity of the werewolf you saved was found... He is Yelgo, a Moscow policeman. But I found he has bought tomorrow's flight to France."

"France?" Vera was stunned and then she suddenly smiled, "Vicar, good job. Let's go on vacation to France."

"... Are you sure it's a vacation?!!!"

"I hear that French man models are very nice."

"...what about the flight at 3 p.m.? "

...

...

Someone knocked the office door of the sub-editor, who was good at gossiping in this city.

Ren Ziling raised her head as hearing the knock; she wiped her saliva, but merely saw Lizi come in, so she rolled her eyes, "It's you, I thought it would be the perverted chief editor."

Lizi walked in embarrassedly.

Why embarrassedly?

Because this place was like a mass grave filled with various instant noodles' smells.

Lizi looked at the messier worktable and couldn't help sighing, "Miss. Ren, why do I feel your life falls into the hell during the period without Luo Qiu? You don't go back home and just sleep here."

Ren Ziling yawned, "I haven't washed clothe for 5 days. Do you want to help me with those?"

"No!" Lizi pinched her nose and waved her hand.

Ren Ziling showed the third finger to Lizi, and stretched herself, "Anything you want to say? If no, go out! I will continue my sleep! Tell me in advance if the boss comes!"

"Miss Ren, you have an express parcel!"

"Parcel?"

"Yes." Lizi nodded, "Seems to be a painting. International express from Moscow... It should be a gift from Luo Qiu!"

"My God... Why did he mail me a painting? It can't be eaten!"

"So... you want me to throw it?"

"Let me throw you first!"

...

Ren Ziling opened the package and found an oil painting.

Subeditor Ren who was refreshing herself with coffee twisted her neck, she didn't feel good because of sleeping outside... Sleeping at home was good for her to replenish her energy!

After looking at the oil painting for a while, Ren Ziling found nothing, and just put the oil painting down the wall.

"'The Nameless Maiden'? what a weird name! "

But maybe that's how art was.

When she looked at her refuse-dump-like office, she felt disappointed because the oil painting didn't level up the office.

"How could you count on leveling up by a tourism product?" Ren Ziling shook her head and said, "Maybe it's a 'Made-in-China'!"

Chapter 302: Former Site of the Club

Morse• Urey• Typica didn't like his name Urey; he preferred others to call him Mr. Morse.

Especially these days... He felt he had a strange dream.

In the dream, he was strangely detained in a police cell because due to being frammed... But in fact, these days he was secretly making a plan with Brubov to deal with Efim.

And the plan was finally completed.

"Brubov, Congratulations, you will be the new Duma. The House of Commons needs an excellent person like you."

That was not in the Typica's manor, but in a private room of a restaurant downtown.

"Well done, Mr. Morse." Brubov was calmer than Morse imagined. He could be described as taciturnity at the banquet.

And Brubov strictly did not touch alcohol... which was very rare for Russian men.

Brubov looked at Morse and lightly said, "The nomination will be released in two months. And I will bring forward the shipping amendment plans in the Parliament to fight for more benefits for your 'company'."

"Hahaha! Brubov, I like your pragmatic character." Morse happily said with his eyes narrowed, "But work hard doesn't mean you don't need to relax. I've arranged a few good girls for Mr. Brubov tonight..."

"If that's everything you need, I'll go back to the company." Unexpectedly, Brubov suddenly stood up and looked at Morse, "Please keep in touch."

Morse face didn't change, but showing a rather regrettable look, "Well, then I'm looking forward to have a dinner with Mr. Brubov

next time."

Brubov just nodded and tidied up his clothes... After that, he left with his bodyguards.

"Tut. Brubov reminds me of the Germanic nation." Morse drank a mouthful of red wine, "Not a real Russian."

"Sir, Brubov is a real Russian, this should be confirmed." The old butler reminded him.

Morse shrugged, "I said it's my feeling... I hate such stiff guys."

Morse suddenly thought of something, and whispered, "Go arrange a few people to go to Brubov's company. I don't like that he leads me by the nose."

"Yes, sir."

...

"Boss, do you really want to work with the Typica family from now?" In the car, the upright-sitting secretary suddenly asked.

Brubov slowly opened his eyes; he looked out of the window, and suddenly asked, "Where's this place?"

The secretary just said, "It's near Tverskaya Street."

"Stop here, I want to get off and take a walk." Brubov quietly said.

The secretary had to ask the driver to stop the car near the street. After getting off, Brubov said, "Wait for me here, I want to walk alone."

"Boss, it's too dangerous." The secretary frowned.

Tverskaya Street, which was filled with lots of shops and restaurants, was a good place of consumption for tourists and local people. The large crowds allowed this place be the favorite place of pickpockets. So, it was reasonable for the secretary to worry about the safety of her boss.

"Did you forget what my previous job was before?" Brubov patted the secretary's shoulder and indifferently said, "Just wait for me here."

The secretary had to stop speaking. Of course, she knew what her boss was before he went into business.

He was a soldier.

...

...

When it came to the history of the club, there should be a place for it to settle. Just like the club that was now was settled in a real shop, but in a different dimension. The club must have existed someplace in Russia too.

"A spice shop?"

"Yes, this is the former site of the club."

Boss Luo sized up the shop, which specially sold all sorts of spice coming from the European area.

Anyway, he didn't believe the former boss who never went out could specifically select such a place to do business.

So... It was probably chosen by the servant girl.

Luo Qiu curiously looked at You Ye... The servant girl just blinked her eyes and asked with her head tilted, "Master, what's the matter?"

Was she... acting cute?

The servant girl of the club acted a once-in-a-century cute.

"Nothing." Luo Qiu just remembered her appearance in his heart and quietly admire this instead of talking more. He smiled, "You seldom come back, so let's buy some spices as..."

He suddenly stopped talking, and turned his sight with a trace of suspicion.

The weirdness came from a black card... And the black card reflected the mood of its owner.

It was not very strong but it gave a signal that it wanted to meet the boss. You Ye seemed to sense the same feel, and her steps stopped, throwing an inquiring look to Boss Luo.

"Build a place for negotiation." Luo Qiu slowly ordered.

The servant girl nodded, and her sea-like dark blue pupils were glittering... Looking at You Ye's eyes, Luo Qiu couldn't help thinking of the day that he came to the club as a guest.

She was still so charming.

...

Gradually, Brubov strangely felt that the pedestrians were decreasing.

It was not because he went to a place with few people, but people disappeared gradually from his sight in this street.

And the dusky gray mist began to emerge from the ground. Brubov subconsciously put his hand on his chest.

In his suit pocket, there was a secret that he didn't intend to share with others in his life... He subconsciously walked faster, and finally he came to a small spice shop.

Yes, the small shop... Once in a while, he went through this shop, and quietly stood here for a moment.

Most of the time, he gained nothing. But this time... He saw something different.

Everything in the shop seemed to turn static... Like going through a gap of time and space.

There was no shopkeeper or guests... Except a man and a woman. And the man, who had his back facing him, was watching the commodities on the display cabinet.

As for the girl...

"Miss You Ye! It has been a long time. "

Brubov took a deep breath; he looked up, stepping into this spice shop after a second of hesitation.

...

"It's been a long time, Mr. Brubov." The servant girl greeted with a smile.

Now Brubov sternly said, "Since that time, I went through here many times, but..."

"The club had moved away from here for a while already." You Ye still had the professional smile, "But, if the transaction desire of the customer is strong enough, it is entirely possible to come to our club. Mr. Brubov, maybe every time you just hesitated when approaching. "

Brubov bitterly laughed, "Twenty years ago, I spent my love for obtaining enough money... Now I'm still single."

He shook his head, "These years, no female could touch my heart, even if many of them were excellent enough. I think my hesitation may be because of this."

"Well." You Ye nodded without talking more, and quietly turned around to look at the figure of her master.

Brubov took a deep breath and sternly said, "Long time no see, Mr. Luo."

"But I think we haven't formally met each other before. Mr. Brubov... Have we?"

Actually, several days ago, Boss Luo had seen him but he couldn't see Luo Qiu; However, Boss Luo thought, "What the hell do you mean by 'it's been a long time'..."

Chapter 303: Is This Why You Become A Rich Woman?

Brubov was stunned when he listened to this voice.

Because it seemed younger than the voice of the club boss.

"Mr. Brubov, this is the new boss."

The servant girl answered him and got rid of his doubts.

Brubov lips moved slightly... The club never stopped giving him surprises since he met them.

At this moment.

Luo Qiu took a bottle of lemongrass powder from the display rack and looked at the label without turning around, "Mr. Brubov, you said you passed by the former location of the club many times... is there anything we can do for you?"

Brubov subconsciously glanced at the servant girl, who was exactly the same as twenty years ago and didn't age. He suddenly said, "No, I just occasionally thought of the scene where I talked to the former boss."

"Consultation?" Luo Qiu added.

"Something like that."

Brubov nodded, whether out of sarcasm or true feelings, "I think the consultation is the most favorable aspect of the club."

"Although I'm not the former boss," Luo Qiu put back the bottle and took another one, "But we're doing the same thing; so, Mr. Brubov, feel free to raise your needs."

Brubov said after a moment of silence, "I want to know that if you need to do one inevitable thing that goes against your original principles, in the process of achieving a goal, how would you make the choice?"

Luo Qiu lightly said, "Why do you assume that I would face the choice? Mr. Brubov, do you think it'll be helpful for you?"

Brubov gave a start.

He suddenly felt that he asked a rather stupid question--- he had a deal with the club, and got a huge amount of money, so he was in awe of the secretive ways of the club.

If the club boss wanted to do something... it probably wouldn't be a problem because of the mysterious powers of the club.

"No." Brubov shook his head and suddenly joked, "There's no value...I did ask a rather stupid question."

"Do you think I can change this country?"

Suddenly, Luo Qiu heard Brubov's question again.

Luo Qiu put down the bottle, and took down a third bottle, watching its label, as if he didn't hear his words.

Brubov didn't care about being ignored, speaking as if talking to himself with a hint of doubt, "That year, I did all kinds of investment with the money. 20 years passed, I have much more wealth compared to that year. However..."

Brubov gave a wry smile, "It took half my life only to gather wealth, which is not enough for me... I have to climb higher to an end that I can't see for now."

"Sometimes I even wondered if I could succeed in finishing what I want to do." Brubov heaved a sigh, "I don't know if I can continue walking down the path."

He stopped talking, but the new boss didn't reply him.

Rather, he picked up the third bottle of spice that he'd like, putting it in the shopping basket in the hands of the servant girl.

Then, he went to another showcase.

Brubov was stupefied; he felt he was being ignored, which made

him agitated. However, the feeling soon calmed down.

It happened very fast, even out of his expectations.

"Are you feeling better?" Luo Qiu asked while unscrewing a bottle of ginger powder and sniffing.

Brubov moved his lips. After a while of deep thought, he nodded unconsciously.

Luo Qiu then softly said, "I read a book before, but forgot who wrote it. If the consultant didn't want to give a suggestion mixed with his own viewpoint, merely listening is enough."

He continued after putting the ginger powder into You Ye's basket, and suddenly said, "Since Mr. Brubov paid an entires life worth of love as the transaction fee, it seems that you really need the money to finish your desire. So I think you probably know if you should go down this way. After all, you made your own decision at beginning. So, what else do you need to take this step?"

"No," Brubov shook his head gently, as if suddenly feeling relieved, "It's not necessary... I think I just need a listener. Thank you for listening to my words."

"It is nothing." Luo Qiu lightly said, "It's also considered as an after-sales service, anyway."

"I'll come again if I have a chance." Brubov said as taking a deep breath; his face suddenly turned serious, nodding toward Luo Qiu.

After that, Brubov came up again to You Ye, smiling, "Miss You Ye, you are still as beautiful as ever. To show my respect... Well, I have a small house at riverside of Lake Ladoga in St. Petersburg. If you don't mind, you are welcome to go on holiday at any time. It belongs to you. Bye."

Brubov seemed to relax, leaving this store calmly.

"Brubov used to be a soldier who participated in Chechnya War... His hometown has been destroyed and all his family members

died."

You Ye suddenly said.

"A single person's will won't shake the will of the state... and a soul is not enough to change the way of a nation directly." Luo Qiu shrugged, "It seems it will be difficult to have more deals with Mr. Brubov..."

Luo Qiu eyed the servant girl.

Suddenly, he remembered a sentence the servant girl once said, "Well, sometimes I received some small gifts from our passionate guests."

So, was this why you became a super rich woman?

A lakeside villa... a 'small' gift.

"Master?" Miss Maid couldn't guess Boss Luo's mind.

Luo Qiu smiled and patted her shopping basket, "These are all for me and you can choose what you want."

He then snapped his fingers.

Once he snapped his fingers, everything returned back to its original appearance.

When they checked out, Luo Qiu suddenly said, "We'll go to St. Petersburg next, right? It'll be good to go on holidays at lakeside villas. We still have time, don't waste it."

"Ok, I'll make the plan right now."

...

...

"Boss, you came back."

Seeing Brubov walk down the street, the secretary felt relieved. She was really worried about the boss, because he was the soul of the company.

This business had an unimaginable future.

Brubov simply nodded and got into the car. After sitting down, he said directly, "After going back to the company, we'll have to work for a long time. By the way, show me the list of the aides you mentioned last time."

"In addition, start modifying the program on the revision of shipping. We need to do all the preparations even though the appointment hasn't been formally released... Well, ask if the mayor has time this evening, I want to have dinner with him."

The secretary gaped, quickly nodding... she sensed a passion from the boss, after he had the left alone.

He seemed to be trying to save some time, attempting to finish a two-day schedule within 24 hours.

"I got it, boss!"

...

...

The airport.

Yelgo, who carried a luggage bag along with a large backpack, was awkwardly running among the crowd. He had checked-in, and found his seat under the guidance of the flight attendant.

He finally sat down.

Yelgo exhaled. He also felt sort of nervous and excited because he knew he would set foot on another more stressful and stimulating life soon after.

But he was also worrying about that weird 'disease'.

Yelgo tried to avoid showing the changes due to whenever he became angry since his childhood.

Nobody knew the consequences if it happened. Occasionally he wondered if there were any werewolves still alive in this world and

what he would do if he met them.

One of the reasons for him to become a police officer was that he could get a lot of information that normal people couldn't get access to.

But obviously, he hadn't found anything useful these years since he became a policeman--- hopefully he could get something more mysterious in the international organization in France.

For example...the weird scene that occurred in the manor?

"However, I don't know where Mr. Ye went," Yelgo said to himself.

I think that My. Ye is by your side."

Suddenly a voice came from the next seat, in Russian that was not very fluent.

"Really? Just next to me?" Yelgo nodded, "Right next to me... Mr. Ye! Why are you here?"

Ye Yan put down the newspaper, stretching out his hand and showing a charming smile, "Hello, I am Ye Yan, your new partner in the next stage."

"Partner???"

Mr. Victor... the gaze of this friend of yours is so terrifying!"

...

...

"Vera! Vera! Did you finish? It's time to go to the airport!"

Vicar shouted outside the room.

"1 second."

Vera answered, after putting on a suit and dressing her hair.

What she didn't notice was that the black card she threw to the corner suddenly floated up and flew into her baggage.

She finally finished arranging her hairstyle and dragged the luggage out.

Chapter 304: Heresy and the Story on the Train

Kiev, the capital city of Ukraine.

It was built in the mountains, comprising brown, black and red soil, instead of being constructed by the mountain. However, it was big enough and could be seen from afar.

Some meanings seem to be hidden beyond the white wall and the simple and crude style also seemed to indicate its standpoint.

It was Pechersk Lavra.

Anatoly had returned to the monastery with Sullivan for three days.

However, Anatoly didn't see Sullivan again within these days. He seemed to go deep into the monastery---where he had never set foot in before, even if he graduated from here.

Forbidden grounds, sacred grounds...such names had been circulated among the students while he was still a student here.

He thought it was probably a conjecture among students, plus the old priest didn't formally explain it, so the legend had been being spread for years.

'Only those who have the grace of the Lord can enter.'

Anatoly was an orphan since an early age and was abandoned near the monastery. Later, he was picked up by an old priest and grew up there.

Because it was dawn, so the old priest named him Anatoly.

That meant sunrise.

Life in the monastery was as simple as returning to the primitive society. Growing up here, being baptized, and then officially becoming a priest. Finally, he gained the recognition of the Dean

with the best performance among his peers within merely 20 years.

He was a genius in others' view, but he knew that was just because he worked a little harder than them.

"Anatoly, are you in?"

Anatoly was praying when someone knocked the door. He always kept praying when he had time.

Praying made him empty his mind, and listen to the Gospel of the Lord.

"The Dean invites you to go to the 13th auditorium."

That forbidden place?

...

...

Anatoly saw Mr. Sullivan, and the dean, who had blessed him personally when he graduated... as well as the old priest who picked and raised him up from the wilderness.

"Anatoly, my child, come here." The old friar smiled as waving his hand.

Anatoly came to them, and began to look at this '13th auditorium'. He found it seemed more ancient here, and exuded a sacred atmosphere all the time, which could calm his heart... even more than the effect of praying.

But in fact, this 13th auditorium didn't look like a hall.

Correctly speaking, this was actually a stone room with candlesticks hanging on all four sides. He walked to the center of the auditorium, where was a round table actually.

Sullivan was waiting at the center for his arrival.

The dean and old friar stood at both sides of Sullivan. When Anatoly came to them, the old friar suddenly reached out his hand

and whispered, "Anatoly, my child, kneel down."

Anatoly nodded without hesitation; then he knelt down.

The old friar added, "Close your eyes, then pray in your heart and listen quietly."

Anatoly slowly closed his eyes.

In the meantime, both the dean and the old priest retreated slowly to the edge of the round table, lowering heads and closed their eyes.

Because what would happen next might be blasphemy if they witnessed.

Slightly white light emitted on the round table, and Sullivan got close to Anatoly. He opened his hands, and his body slowly left the ground.

He was floating up.

Suddenly, a ray of light burst out of Sullivan's body; at that moment, countless white 'feathers' dropped from the ceiling of the hall.

A pair of white, soft wings slowly opened at Sullivan's back---finally, Sullivan opened his eyes too.

That was a pair of slight golden pupils.

Almost at the same time, a golden beam of light emanated from a sphere in the center of the auditorium and shone upon Anatoly...as if being bathed in a golden sea.

It was warm and compassionate.

Anatoly was lost in this feeling that soaked his soul and forgot the passage of time.

Right then!

He sensed a burst of anger; this moment, the warm and compassionate feel suddenly disappeared.

As if being carrying a heavy shackle, Anatoly opened his eyes by instinct--- he knew something was wrong with his memory; and Sullivan and the dean that were revealing a serious look were just helping him with this problem.

But it didn't seem helpful in recalling the 'forgotten matter', even when he returned to the monastery and the 13th auditorium...

"Mr. Sullivan?" Anatoly calmly looked at the person in front of him with doubt.

The extraordinary image had long since disappeared, Sullivan just closed his eyes and stood at the original place... His face looked pale.

When the dean and the old priest heard Anatoly's voice, both of them opened their eyes with surprise.

Then Sullivan said a horrendous sentence, "Anatoly, you are heresy, and you need to wash away the sins of your body." Dean, get command of the holy power of his body; three days later, I'll purify the evil aura off his soul."

Anatoly moved his lips.

Obviously, his 20-year-last calm heart had sharply fluctuated at the moment.

He didn't understand.

And... what about the recovery of his memory?

...

...

"Long long ago, there was a kind but ugly monster in the forest."

On the train heading to St. Petersburg, the young mother was telling stories to the little girl, who was bickering with her.

"Later, the monster met a little girl. The little girl wasn't afraid of it; rather, she became its friend because of its kindness. Every day,

the monster picked the sweetest fruit from the forest with clear spring water, and sent it to the little girl. But she must promise that she wouldn't tell others."

The little girl in mother's arms was gradually attracted by this story, and her mother continued telling, "Many days passed, the little girl was very happy being with that monster. And one day, the little girl said innocently, that she'd marry the monster on her 18-year-old birthday."

"However, the little girl moved away with her families, and had no time to say goodbye to the monster. As usual, the monster still picked the sweetest fruit with the clearest spring water, but it didn't see the little girl again."

Hearing this, the little girl revealed sad expression.

Mother comforted her and patted her face, continuing softly, "It counted the day, marking one line per day on the stump with its nails. Suddenly, the monster found it was her 18-year-old birthday, but the little girl didn't appear."

Hearing this, the little girl muttered, "Mom, this monster is so pitiful. Won't it see that little girl again?"

Her mother said, "Yes, it met her later. The monster got up the courage to get out of the forest; it was mixed in the crowd, looking for her all the way. Finally, it found the little girl, who became beautiful when she was 18 years old."

"Then, did they marry?"

Mother was about to reply the her girl's expectation.

Unexpectedly at this time, her father spoke suddenly, "No, they didn't! The little girl fell in love with someone else, so that angry monster ate the little girl, and then became a handsome person, and married someone else later!"

As speaking, her father also opened his arms, getting close to his daughter with threatening gestures, "I'll eat you too and become a

handsome man! Whoa!"

"Ah!"

The little girl escaped from her mother's arms, hitting something, and was about to fall down.

"Be careful."

In fact, she didn't fall, but was helped up steadily. The little girl looked up; she tilted her head, and found an unacquainted big brother.

It was rare for the little girl to see persons with black hair and black eyes.

"Excuse me, sir!" Her mother stood up quickly and said with apology, "My husband was making fun of this kid, and he didn't expect her to be so scared. Sorry for that."

She said as glaring at her husband with a reproving look.

"That's OK." The young brother smiled and touched the little girl's head, "It's interesting to hear the ending."

"Ah?" The little girl's father was stunned... he didn't know how to continue the conversation with the young man.

He could only smile awkwardly.

"Oh, is this story original?" The young brother suddenly curiously asked.

The little girl's father quickly waved his hand, "No, I've heard this story, but I changed the ending, don't take it seriously."

"Really... then have a good time."

Looking at this young big brother walked back, the little girl climbed up her father's leg, heading out to see that the big brother sat on a seat 5 or 6 lines behind them. She pouted her mouth, looking down towards her mother, "Mom! A beautiful sister is sitting there!"

"Ok, sit properly, we'll arrive the station! Soon we can reach your grandma's home!"

Her mother said seriously; meanwhile, she wrenched her husband's ear, pulling back his head that wanted to turn to look back.

The train finally stopped.

"We are arriving at St. Petersburg Station."

Chapter 305: Cottage in the Forest

At nightfall, Luo Qiu watched the sunlight fade from the lake water on the wooden terrace.

Cool water evaporated and the vapor slowly came up to the part of the villa, which stretched to the area above the lake. You Ye now was standing at the edge of the terrace.

The hard-working servant girl was dragging something---it was a basket of bottled beer. She sank it into the lake for a whole afternoon, which made it taste cool.

This place was the area of detached villas, instead of row houses. Different kinds of villas had been set there alone.

Where they lived was merely a 3-floor building and looked hundreds of years old; but one would be amazed by the modern equipment inside.

It was a little bit large for two people.

However, Luo Qiu thought it was quiet enough.

An old man seemed to be waiting for something when they arrived, he handed over the keys, and then left by his old pickup truck without saying or asking any single word.

Unexpectedly, all food here was fresh.

Luo Qiu thought it was good to enjoy the last week of their travel at this place.

In this tiny house surrounded by groves and lakeshore...

The servant girl prized open the lid of the beer bottle, hops rose up in the glass. Everything in front showed a golden color.

Luo Qiu snapped his finger, then gramophone in the living room behind him automatically inserted a black vinyl. When the music started playing, he looked at You Ye, whispering, "Would you like to dance? I want to see you dance."

When the night fell, the light turned dim but stretched her shadow; and the place became even more quiet.

...

The off-road vehicle was running along the lake road. There were 2 pairs of couples---4 young people in the car. One pair was hugging and kissing in the backseat, and the two in front were talking to each other.

The two people in front seemed to become lovers recently... maybe the boy was too shy, he constantly peeped at the backseat from the rearview mirror; and when his girlfriend wasn't looking, he always gazed at her legs or chest steathily.

The 4 came out for vacation—the idea was raised by the two at backseat.

'I wish I could...' The boy quietly encouraged himself.

Suddenly, his girlfriend asked, "Are we going the wrong way?"

The driver cared his new girlfriend a lot--- She was his first girlfriend, so he cared about every word of hers.

The car suddenly stopped---He clicked on the mobile navigation, looking up to her and saying, "Seems we went the wrong way. Let's go back along the same way."

The girl on the backseat whispered, "I'm hungry."

"This place looks OK, there is a small house near here." The boy on the backseat replied calmly, "We need some unexpected issues in our lives occasionally."

The girl in the front seat sighed, "I hope we won't stay overnight in this car. And are you sure you can find food in this place?"

The backseat boy said with confidence, "I'm good at catching fish."

The girl in the front seat just rolled her eyes.

When he said, the backseat boy's girlfriend looked out, and turned round, "There seems to be a house there, I see the lights. Maybe we don't have to sleep in the car."

The driver quickly released the brake and said quickly, "Let me drive there to have a look!"

...

"Excuse me, anyone here?"

The SUV was parked in front of the lake hovel, the driver, Len, got off and shouted; however, they didn't hear any response, so he had to shout again politely, "Excuse me, is anyone here?"

The boy behind Len was Branham, who was relatively careless. Now Branham patted Len's shoulder, "Man, you should shout like me."

Then he whispered, "I think Ellie would prefer your skillfulness and decisiveness."

So Branham directly walked on the wooden stairs, patting the cottage door hard and hurriedly.

Bang bang, bang bang---!

Finally, Branham's hand suddenly beat air, followed by his sudden retreat. At the moment the door opened, Branham was held in a trance; soon, he gave out a crisp and faint whistle.

An extremely beautiful woman with dark and charming blue eyes opened the door.

"Excuse me, what's the matter?" The woman smiled and lightly said.

Branham suddenly felt he didn't know how to reply her, as if losing the ability to speak. He thought he may be lost in her extreme beauty.

But he realized soon that he had a girlfriend, "We took a wrong turn and there are no other buildings near here. Could we stay

here for a while? And it'll be better if we can have some food."

As saying that, he hurriedly fished out his wallet from his pocket, "Of course, we'll pay for it."

"Please wait for a minute." The woman nodded slightly, and walked into the house ---but she closed the door.

Branham was stuuned when watching this scene. He had to turn around to look at his companion and shrugged his shoulders.

Allie headed up to look at this cottage. The old architectural style, groves and the lakeside brought them back to several hundred years ago.

Suddenly she the biting chill of the night. Both her hands hugged each other and rubbed lightly; then she glanced at Len, who was looking down at the cellphone map.

She thought painfully, 'If this guy took the lead a bit more, the result would be better.'

Branham's girlfriend suddenly walked to Allie, hand patted her back, and suddenly said, "Isn't Len good? He's an honest man."

"Gloria, if someone is too honest, I feel a bit..." Ellie stopped speaking, it seemed difficult to choose some words to describe the following meaning, so she couldn't help sighing, and put down her hands, "Forget it, you will not understand."

As Gloria was about to replied, the door was suddenly opened again.

The incredibly beautiful woman appeared in front of the four again... the slight hint of smile didn't change, as if a sculpture.

She said, "You can come in. The master said that you can stay here for one night."

...

"I'm Branham, and these are Len, Allie, and Gloria."

"I'm Luo Qiu, and this is You Ye, she works in my house."

But Branham remembered that this You Ye said 'master'--- after they entered this house, they realized it was not as poor as it looked.

They must spent them a lot of expense for the decorations. The ground near the lake was also probably very hard to be obtained.

From the fluent Russian of this young man with an Asian face...it was hard for him to distinguish which country he came from.

Wherever he came from, at least he was a very rich man.

"Sorry for bothering you, Mr. Luo Qiu." Len cautiously said.

Luo Qiu wasn't a very hospitable person before; but now due to the job demand, he tended to communicate more with customers.

Two pairs of lovers drove to the countryside for their vacation on a weekend. It sounded like a very good way of life, right?

Young people are always talkative.

At the dinner table, Luo Qiu was listening to the two pairs of lovers, who starting conversing after staying silent for a while.

"China!" Branham finally learned about the motherland of the cottage owner, and couldn't help sighing with emotion, "It feels like a mysterious country, I like mysterious places."

Luo Qiu didn't answer until he cut a piece of potato and put it into his mouth, "Branham likes mysterious matters a lot?"

"I'm brave." Branham smiled, both his hands held the table, "I like both stimulating things and terrifying things. For example..."

Suddenly he stopped talking and checked around, looked he became cautiously. Then he lowered his voice, "For example, it is so quiet, and we just known each other just now. What if someone knocks the door right away? Is it a wonderful story?"

His girlfriend Gloria subconsciously touched the gooseflesh on

her arms, blaming, "Shut your mouth! Can't you read the atmoshpere?"

Branham shrugged his shoulders, "I just drew an analogy. Besides, how could someone knock..."

Right then.

Tap tap tap, tap tap... tap.

Suddenly, someone knocked on the door.

Chapter 306: Weird Man

They didn't find any other lights on the way. The only lights were those of the lakeside cottage.

What were the odds of meeting two groups that took a wrong turn at this remote place in less than half an hour?

They had to look at the house owner unconsciously.

But meanwhile, they also found a curious expression on the face of this young oriental man who was called Luo Qiu--- In other words, it meant Luo Qiu was surprised by the sudden knock.

Branham, Len, and their girlfriends looked at each other.

This was a completely subconscious behavior, as if they could see the nervousness hiding in their peers' eyes.

"Let me go take a look," You Ye softly said.

Luo Qiu nodded, watching You Ye leave, while drinking a sip of water, "What a lively evening."

They didn't know more about the owner, except his nationality; At the same time, it attracted the young people's curiosity--- especially with only a master and a weak-look maid, who lived in such a remote place.

Gloria couldn't help asking curiously, "Luo Qiu, aren't you two afraid of living here? Oh my god, it's extremely quiet. Will some wild beast suddenly show up?"

"It's fine, it has a very good scenery during the day," Luo Qiu responded.

Len didn't want to only be a listener in this conversation, so he chipped in, "Mr. Luo Qiu, what's your job? It must not be easy to purchase a lakeside house."

Len's words attracted the three others gaze, which made him feel regretful.

It's impolite to suddenly ask the job of a stranger.

"Oh ... I'm sorry." Len quickly apologized as waving his hand.

"It doesn't matter." Luo Qiu smiled and took another sip of water, "I'm just doing some small businesses, selling some things to others."

"Well ... Hasn't Miss You Ye come back? I'm afraid for her wellbeing." Allie suddenly looked toward the door.

"Don't worry." Luo Qiu said softly. "Eat, it's getting cold."

At this time, Miss Maid came back, bowing down to talk to Luo Qiu. Then, Luo Qiu nodded with a smile.

The servant girl turned to leave after.

...

...

When the door had been opened, a man with a black hat was seen at the doorway.

He had a very clean and gentle face. The body was also very slender... like a male model on the T stage. He looked between 20-30 years old.

And very polite.

By the way, he also carried an old leather suitcase.

It was large enough to completely covered his back.

When seeing the maid opened the door, he suddenly took off his hat and placed it on his chest, with slight nod. "I never expected to see such a beautiful lady here."

"Thank you."

I smelled the good flavor of the food from a far place, so I came here." The man smiled, "Forgive me for my hungry stomach, there seems to be no place around so I came by here..."

Looking the beautiful miss's smile which was getting happier, the man smiled gently, "Of course, I will pay for it."

"Hold on please."

...

...

The man put down the box at the corner, and turned to look at the people and the food. He suddenly inhaled the flavor, giving out an intoxicated look, "What a good smell."

This man was so handsome, that Allie and Gloria gaped and looked over to him.

Branham suddenly pushed Len, who didn't react but just gave a start. Only during the second time where Branham pushed him secretly, he understood the intention and patted the stool to invite the man to take a seat.

Branham said with exaggeratedly gesture, "How about if you sit here? Of course, we are also poor guys were allowed to stay here."

"Like an angel." The handsome man smiled slightly.

"What?" Branham gave a start.

The man still smiled, "Isn't it? In this lonely place, food and a comfortable resting place could be provided to those who are getting lost. The owner here must be as nice as an angel."

As saying, the man lifted a glass of beer, opened his arms, and closed up at his chest, with waist bent down, "Why don't we pay a tribute to the kind owner?"

Boss Luo mouth slightly opened by his behavior.

It really felt... sort of exaggerated.

Luo Qiu gently shook his head.

"Ha ha ha, what the hell." Branham suddenly laughed by the man's expression, "Sir, did you come from the Tsar era?"

He then imitated all his behavior; at last, he drank up the whole glass of beer, and wiped his mouth, saying, "It makes me remind of a drama played in my middle school, where a minister went to meet the king."

Len thought Branham was jeering at the man, so he elbowed his close friend and embarrassedly smiled, "Never mind him, he may have drunk too much."

The handsome man shook his head and smiled softly, "It doesn't matter. As this man said, maybe I really did come from the Tsar era."

"Then you have to tell us something about the Tsar era," Gloria asked with great interest at this moment.

The handsome man closed his eyes and slowly said in a magnetic voice, "There are sports cars running on the street... Oh, I mean a carriage. There are also cottages by the lakeside like here. And, of course, I should not skip our passionate and beautiful Russian girls, such as..."

He spun to Gloria like a dancer, gently lifting her palm and kissed the back of her hand, "...a girl like you..."

The onlooker, Boss Luo, was now peeping at Branham with interest, who had an awkward look.

...

...

Branham's look changed; he couldn't bear this behavior... He spoke indifferently, "Is there anyone like me? I think maybe I am a warrior."

The handsome man stood up and nodded, "I think so. Oh, yes, I haven't introduced myself, I'm Arex, and I think I should sit down and enjoy the unexpected dinner..."

He whispered to the true owner--- the young man with an

oriental face, "May I?"

"Sit down." Luo Qiu nodded.

Arex sat down and took a plate of stewed potatoes to his nose; he sniffed before laughing, "This will probably be the most delicious food I have eaten lately. Thanks a lot."

But just as Arex was planning to eat, someone knocked on the door... the sound was rather frantic.

"Is anyone here? Can you help me? Is anyone here! Can you help me out?"

It was from a woman... she was crying loud; the cry was very clear.

The woman said in horror, "Anybody here? Please help me, my husband said he went take a leak, but he didn't come back after a long time. I can't find him now! I just picked his cellphone... anyone here? My husband is missing!"

Chapter 307: Silent Night 1st

The little girl clutched to her mother's arm in fear and the mother unconsciously also tighten her grip on small hands of the little girl.

Luo Qiu had seen the mother and daughter on the train heading to St. Petersburg.

They were the family that told that story... But now, the man of the house was missing.

It was even colder by the lake in the evening, and the wind was pretty strong; but the light in the house and the soft sofa inside seemed to bring slight warmth to the mother.

She was surprised to meet this young man at this place, but her husband's disappearance completely overshadowed the surprise.

"We were going over the mountain road to my husband's old home; he had a call of nature midway, and asked us to wait in the car... but half an hour passed, he didn't come back. So I had to get off the car to look for him, but..."

The girl's mother covered her face painfully, sobbing, "But I just found his phone on the ground."

"Did you call the police?" Len---the young man asked after hearing it.

The girl's mother shook her head and took out the phone, "It shows it's out of service...I don't know what to do, so I came for help with my kid."

The several young people looked at each other, Allie fished out her cellphone, but she was stunned and said, "I can't receive any signal either."

"Me either." Gloria also looked down at her cellphone.

"Me either."

"I can't..."

The four threw their look towards Luo Qiu, so he had to took out his cellphone, shaking his head, "I think mine is the same as yours."

"Is this place out of reach?" Len was stupefied, "But I could connect to the Internet before going in. What's wrong..."

"Now it's not the most important, the point is how to help this lady." Allie bit her finger suddenly, "Oh, by the way, Mr. Luo Qiu, do you have any other means of communication? I mean a landline."

"Sorry, I don't have it."

Luo Qiu suddenly stood up and said, "It looks like we have to wait for it to recover or when dawn comes, we can go find the policemen for help. Of course, if the missing gentleman could come here by himself without any accident, it'll be the best result."

"There are so many people here, can we just go out and look for him now?" the warmhearted Len suggested; but when seeing the look from his friend---Branham, he lowered down his voice, "Well, that's just my suggestion."

Any kind of help was urgent needed by the girl's mother. Now, she turned to see all others in a wistful look.

At this time, Gloria subconsciously looked at the shades outside the living room, and hand touched her arm with hesitation, "Isn't there any other place around for people to live?"

Suddenly, the look of the girl's mother dimmed... It was probably right, maybe some of them would be in a dangerous situation, especially in the case that someone was missing.

She knew that they couldn't do something if they were not capable.

"Madam Maggie, do you still remember where your husband

went missing?" Suddenly, a voice rang out at the dining table.

Arex.

"Yes, I do!"

Arex wiped his lips with a napkin on the dining table, then stood up and smiled. "If you don't mind, I can go back with you to look for him."

"I, I can also go to help." At this time, Len took a deep breath, saying as raising his hand slowly.

As if plucking up his courage.

And Allie eyes seem to turn brighter. Seeing Len promised, Branham frowned, but suddenly stood up and said, "Then, I'm going with you too. At least it'll be safer. But Gloria and Allie, you two stay here."

They made the decision.

After that, Mrs. Maggie, Arex, Branham and Len went back to where her husband disappeared.

Maggie chose to leave her daughter in the house, though she still worried about her... perhaps it was because she only met the young man twice, but her child needed a stable and safe place to stay for now.

Though it was a hard decision to Mrs. Maggie.

"Hopefully, god will bless us."

Arex was the last one who entered Mrs. Maggie's car.

Allie held the little girl's hands, who didn't jump into her arms until she couldn't see her mother.

Allie comforted her and took her into the house. Gloria now hovered around, seeming to worry about them.

Allie didn't know what to say.

She unconsciously looked at the young master of the house, and

found that he was now reading an old book--- He took it down from the shelf in the living room.

He didn't seem to worry about them at all... 'What a calm person' Allie thought.

After some time passed, the maid came in with holding a tray, putting down the cups, and saying softly, "Take some tea. This is Roselle tea, it can calm your mood and help recover your energy."

You Ye passed cups to each one.

Allie said thank you.

Gloria never stopped hovering from the beginning, even when she received the cup. She paced about while holding the cup and drinking tea, as if considering about something, and forgot herself.

"Tell me, what's your name?"

Miss Maid finally came to the little girl.

"Lena!"

"Lena is a good girl." The maid touched the little girl's hair. "Are you scared?"

Lena nodded, but suddenly asked, "Big sister, my dad will be safe right?"

"Sorry, I don't know." You Ye whispered, "But a lucky person will be blessed by god. Do you want him to be lucky or not?"

The little girl have a start. She tilted her head... the words from the big sister that were hard to be understood. Lena took a sip of tea, then looked around with curiosity.

"This sister is so weird."

Lena suddenly whispered to You Ye---she meant Gloria.

"Why?" You Ye asked curiously.

Lena suddenly said, "One, two, three, one, two, three. Did you see that? This big sister turned after three steps, and then repeats that.

I found that."

"Really?" Miss maid smiled.

She stood up and patted Lena's head, before walking to Luo Qiu and sitting down.

She sat quietly, without any noise and extra actions.

Allie took a glance curiously... She felt as if she met a puppet.

...

...

Tick, tick, it was the sound from the clock hanging in the living room.

It seemed as if heartbeat, each swing could be passed to people's heart.

Gloria sat down; she looked at her cellphone, then turned to Allie. She tried to find a topic, but couldn't say out even one word.

Lena looked around the living room---It was the time for her to sleep; however, the accident disrupted her schedule.

Lena, who wore a floral dress, white stockings and red little leather shoes, gently jumped down from the couch.

She saw a large luggage bag at the corner of the living room.

Lena subconsciously walked toward it.

She was getting closer.

She wanted to touch the box.

When her hand was near it.

Bang--!

Suddenly, Lena heard the voice, which gave her a shock, causing her to turn around her body.

It turned out it was the sound when the big brother suddenly closed the book. He said gently, "A good girl should not touch

another person's stuff without permission."

Lena stuck her tongue out and quickly put her hands at her back.

Luo Qiu smiled, picking up a candy from the snack boxes on the coffee table, "Do you like candy?"

Lena nodded, hurriedly stepping towards Boss Luo.

The box at her back, at that moment, seemed to move slightly.

Chapter 308: Silent Night 2nd

Milk-strawberry-flavored candy seemed to fit Lena's taste.

"Big brother, can you tell me a story?" Lena suddenly asked.

"Story?"

The little girl nodded, "Every night, my mother tells me a story to coax me to sleep."

Luo Qiu suddenly remembered someone asking him for a request. It was when he met those little monster children at the Taoist temple of Yang Taizi... Unconsciously, he thought of something weird.

Was it because he looked like a story-teller to those naughty kids?

"What kind of story do you want to listen to?"

Lena thought for a moment, "Big Brother, do you know the ending of the story that my mother told me in the train?

Luo Qiu said, "Didn't your father ever tell you that?"

"Lena didn't believe the ending my dad told me!" The little girl pouted, "I want to listen to the real ending!"

"What do you think the real ending should be?" Luo Qiu suddenly asked.

The little girl bowed her head and thought for a while, "Well...Poor Mr. Monster, he should marry the little girl and have a happy life together!"

"What Mr. Monster?" Allie suddenly interrupted... She started to talk, perhaps due to staying silent for too long.

"It was a very kind but ugly monster." Luo Qiu looked at Allie, and told her the first half of the story he heard from Mrs. Maggie in the morning.

"Oh, it turns out it's this story!" Allie revealed a look that she

understood. She saw the gaze of the little girl, and smiled, "I've heard this story in my childhood... Well, it has been passed down in this area."

Lena suddenly went to Allie.

Allie touched her head and said, "But at the end of the story, Mr. Monster didn't marry the little girl or live happily with each other."

"Ah? Why?" Lena suddenly said with disappointment, "Did Mr. Monster really eat its bride?"

'Wait... Why did it suddenly jump to the part of a bride? Luo Qiu was amazed at the little girl.

"No," said Allie. "On the contrary, it was that the little girl that ate Mr. Monster's heart!"

"Why did she eat Mr. Monster's heart?" Lena showed a sad look.

Allie said indifferently, "At the end of the story, the little girl grew up and left Mr. Monster. She went to the outside world, saw a lot of people and learned a lot of things. After that, she fell in love with a noble boy. However, the little girl didn't become beautiful and the boy didn't like her. However, she met a wizard, who told her to eat Mr. Monster's heart, which would make her beautiful and everyone would love her."

Allie sighed, "Mr. Monster was sad since it knew the situation; but it still dug out its heart because it liked the little girl very much. Even if the girl grew up, and didn't like it, it still hoped to see her have a happy life. Therefore, Mr. Monster dug out its heart, passing it to her, and left alone."

"Then, did she marry the noble boy?

"No." Allie shook her head, "After eating its heart, she didn't turn beautiful, but uglier, just like the monster. So the boy didn't like her at all. Even her parents abandoned her. In the final part, she had to go back to the forest and avoid seeing people. She lived

alone without Mr. Monster."

Lena felt sad, "Did Mr. Monster die?"

"I don't know, the story ended here, but it said that Mr. Monster wandered out in the world after it dug out its heart."

Allie said slowly, "People say that a monster without heart was like a walking corpse; however, it wanted to find it back, so it attacked innocent little girls everywhere to obtain its heart again. Nevertheless, it failed even if ate many many girls. In the end, Mr. Monster walked to a lake and jumped in. Since then, it has never appeared."

"What a poor monster!" Lena said with sadness.

Ellie had to touch Lena's face and softly comforted her.

"Is this a local legend?" Luo Qiu suddenly asked.

Ellie nodded and smiled wryly, "I don't know the intention of the story writer, but when I grew up and thought about it, I feel that it's not suitable for children."

But didn't you just told the original tale in its entirety?

Boss Luo shook his head, he didn't know Ellie's thoughts, but he looked outside and softly said, "That lake..."

"Right here, Lake Ladoga."

...

...

The three men opened the car windows. Flashlights shone at the tree shades on both sides of the road, while they called the name of Mrs. Maggie's husband.

But they didn't hear any response the whole the way.

"Logically speaking, there shouldn't be houses at such a remote place. The closest place is at least 30 miles away from here... Did he meet some wild beasts?"

Branham suddenly raised his hypothesis. Len had to elbow this guy.

"Mrs. Maggie, don't worry, it's not a danger zone where brown bears would appear. This place probably has more squirrels." Len quickly comforted her.

"Right here, I parked my car here just now." Maggie stopped the car at this time.

"Then let's get off and check carefully." Arex suggested.

Mrs. Maggie nodded, then pointed at one direction, "My husband's cellphone was found in front."

Several people then walked towards the direction into the forest; they stepped on the dry branches and leaves, which gave an extremely loud sound.

"I have a feeling."

Branham walked at back, lowering his voice, murmuring at Len's ear, "We'll meet her husband's...dead body!"

Len gave a start, saying quickly, "Don't talk nonsense!"

Branham smiled, "Don't you feel excited? When we found the dead body, then he suddenly says 'wow!' and stood up! After that, you run in front, and he keeps chasing after you! What's wrong? I just wanted to make up a story, are you scared? If you are so timid, how can you go f*ck Allie?"

"Branham, are we... lost?" Len swallowed saliva, and his flashlight shone the front.

Nobody was there.

Chapter 309: Silent night 3rd

"Mrs. Maggie! Arex! Mrs. Maggie..."

Len tried to call out Mrs. Maggie and Arex; however, he could only see mist under the beams of the flashlight.

"What should we do! Branham..." He looked at his friend in panic, and even grabbed his arms in bewilderment.

"Calm down, don't scare yourself." Branham took a deep breath, "We should think about where we got lost... Oh, we should go back to the place she parks the car, they may realize that we are lost, so they probably went back to wait for us."

Len nodded.

They immediately went back. But Len suddenly dropped into a pit carelessly, and cried out painfully.

Now Branham swore at him due to nervousness, "Be careful! You idiot."

"Pull me out." Len stretched out his hand.

Branham put out his hand; but while using the flashlight to illuminate the ground, he couldn't help quivering, "Len... What's under your body?"

"Don't scare me." Len trembled with fright.

He instinctively reached out for the thing under his body...It was warm and soft, not like soil. Len's look then turned abnormally frightened.

"It's Mrs. Maggie!!"

Len suddenly got up and shouted in horror! Branham moved his flashlight unconsciously.

When the light was moved to Mrs. Maggie's head, he found Mrs. Maggie was watching him too.

"Is she still breathing?" Branham subconsciously swallowed saliva, he was still calm--- But Len couldn't keep calm. His fingers quivered, reaching for Mrs. Maggie's nose.

"No, no!"

...

...

You Ye covered a thin blanket on the little girl, Lena.

It was midnight, long past her bedtime. She was worrying about her mother, but after a long time, her body couldn't stay up anymore.

So she fell asleep on the sofa.

"Let me go clean the cutleries." The servant girl walked to Luo Qiu, as she had nothing to do. She said, "I won't keep the dirty dishes until tomorrow."

Luo Qiu nodded. As You Ye cleaned up all the tableware and went into the kitchen, Luo Qiu suddenly looked at the clock, and took a glance at Allie.

She sat at one side of the couch, propping her chin, but was dozing off... No internet, a silent environment and worry, people would easily feel tired and fall asleep under such a situation.

Probably.

All of a sudden, Allie's head slipped from her palm and she woke up. She started to look around, but could only see Gloria, who completely fell asleep on the other side of the couch.

She asked, "They haven't come back yet?"

Luo Qiu shook his head, "If Miss Allie is sleepy, you can go to the room to have a rest, there are many rooms in this house. And I think taking a shower will help relax yourself."

Hearing the scrubbing sounds from the kitchen, Allie didn't ask

where You Ye was. She shook her head, "I'm OK, let's wait for Len and Branham..."

"Hum..." Luo Qiu suddenly stood up and walked up to the little girl Lena.

The little girl turned around as sleeping, and the blanket almost slid down. Boss Luo tucked her in the blanket, and suddenly asked Allie, "Are Len... and Branham Miss Allie's good friends?"

Allie scratched her hair, took a deep breath after yawning, and then gathered her energy, "Len is my boyfriend, we just started going out." Branham and Gloria have been together for a long time."

Boss Luo's gaze followed Allie's, who was focused on the other side of the sofa. He nodded, "Did Miss Allie known Miss Gloria for a long time?"

"We were high school classmates and later went to the same university together." Allie smiled, "She's always energetic and I'm happy to have met her."

"Miss Allie is good too." Boss Luo politely praised.

Allie suddenly faked a smile, without explaining more. She didn't seem to want to continue this topic, so she asked, "Luo Qiu, why have you built a house in such place?"

It was a lonely area without any other people and family. But the decorations inside the house were apparently very extravagant...

"This is what one of my customers gave me." Luo Qiu added, "I like the quietness and had nothing to do these days, so I came to live here for a while."

He sat down again and said indifferently, "An occasional holiday for 2-3 days is a good way to gather one's energy."

"Then we won't bother you." Allie smiled.

"Never mind." Luo Qiu shook his head, "There are always many

weird things that happened around me. For example... Well, just like Mr. Monster in the story, if it suddenly came out of this lake, I think I wouldn't be too surprised."

Allie both hands rubbed her arms due to the scare. She subconsciously saw the dark lake outside the terrace, "As you said that, I seem to have this feeling... It seems to be true."

Luo Qiu looked at Allie.

And Allie looked at Boss Luo too.

Suddenly, both of them looked on each other with a smile, so that the atmosphere turned light. Allie looked around the living room again, "However, your customer is really generous, though it's sort of... Well, I mean quiet, but this is a very good house! I'm now curious about what kind of business are you doing? Unexpectedly, the customer is willing to send you such an expensive gift."

"What business..." Luo Qiu thought for a while, "Probably selling some things that customers need . You know, if people get what they desire, they'll turn very generous."

Allie gaped, that was a general concept. It meant he didn't answer it.

She frowned, "What things do they need...?"

Luo Qiu smiled slightly and said, "Miss Allie could think about what you desire."

"I?" Allie shrugged, "I think I want them to come back right now."

But at this moment, she heard the door was knocked. She gaped, then turned excited, "There they are! Luo Qiu, you're so miraculous. They came back right after I said that. Let me go open the door!"

Luo Qiu stood up.

Allie quickly walked to the doorway and opened the door.

At the moment the door was opened, Allie saw Len and Branham, who walked in with extremely pale faces with a nervous expression.

Len's lips looked dried, with a little mud on them. He seemed to have taken a tumble.

Allie was stunned, "What happened to you?"

Branham panted heavily, as adjusting his breath. He said quickly, "Corpse! We found a corpse! Mrs. Maggie's corpse!"

"What?" Allie screamed.

She turned to look back and found the owner walking to them curiously upon hearing her screech.

"What happened?"

Allie quickly said, "Branham, he just said, he found Mrs. Maggie's ..."

She had to keep her voice down, "... Corpse."

Len looked at Allie at this time, and said with panic, "That's true! I carelessly dropped into a pit, and then found Mrs. Maggie's dead body! We got lost and left her before, but unexpectedly..."

"How could this be..." Allie felt inconceivable, "But ... Oh yes, is there another person, Arex. Where is he?"

Branham quickly said, "Don't talk about that guy! We couldn't see..."

He glanced at Len, and his face suddenly turned serious, "We suspect that maybe that guy..."

"Don't talk nonsense before getting evidence." Allie suddenly interrupted.

Branham replied, "But think about it, is it weird that this Arex suddenly showed up? Think of his behavior... just like a psychopath! How could someone carry a such large case here!

Think carefully, we don't see any vehicles of his, but he just walked alone to this house!"

Allie's thoughts suddenly wavered.

"Box, box?" Len swallowed his saliva at this time, then he said with hesitation, "I mean... Allie, Branham, don't you feel the box size..."

"What are you trying to say?" Branham asked nervously.

Len swallowed saliva again, "The size is just right... I mean, if it is for fitting an adult...maybe...yes."

"That box ..." Branham frowned.

Oh my god---!!!

At this moment, Allie suddenly heard a scream--- that was Gloria's voice!

Did Gloria wake up as hearing some sound? But Allie was not in the mood to concern what time she woke up.

She walked quickly into the living room, seeing Gloria curled up her body in horror, finger trembled and pointed at the large leather suitcase at the corner.

"Blood...a lot of blood..."

Yes, thick blood was now oozing out from the gap of the suitcase.

Fresh blood was flowing on the floor. Soon it spread across a large area but did not show any signs of letting up.

Chapter 310: Silent Night 4th

University means more freedom--- Although students already had a high degree of freedom in their high schools.

However, who will reject escaping their parents' eyes, to live with their peers in dormitories, far away from the nagging of parents about coming back late. Furthermore, having more time to do part time jobs and earn a discretionary income?

One should be happier... Allie thought so.

She sat on the grass next to the school playground while reading Tagore's book and thinking of it--- but half a semester passed and she didn't feel the so-called happiness.

Suddenly someone patted her head.

Allie turned around unconsciously--- it was Gloria---the classmate who had been living with her since high school.

"You are here."

Gloria sat down and looked at Allie, "People in the group asked me why you were absent again. Allie, if you don't like it, why did you attend at the beginning?"

Allie sulked, "Do you think I really like to participate in the ridiculous group? Biting lettuce? Oh my God, just what kind of weird brain do they have to think of such a strange activity? Actually I don't even know why biting lettuce can be popular in a university! Are your lives so boring if you don't bite lettuce?"

"I don't like it either." Gloria said while shrugging her shoulder.

Allie was stunned, "But it was you who dragged me in that group."

Gloria played around with her curly hair---she just had it permed into big wavy hair--- Allie knew she did it for fully 5 hours in the salon.

"That's because some boys in it look good." Gloria said with excitement, "And, don't you think getting a boyfriend is what you need to do at this stage?"

Allie snorted, "Yeah, our parents paid to get us here just to hook up with boys."

Gloria lay down and said, "I just feel youth without love will be too boring. Besides, I'm also studying. You, don't just stay in the classrooms, library and the dormitory, OK?"

Allie sulked, "I'm not you, Miss Gloria. You can get an A in the quiz after attending a whole-night party; if I don't review before tests, I would probably get a B."

"Don't hold your nerves too tightly!" Gloria patted the lawn beside her and said, "Follow me, stop, stretch yourself, and then you will think the world is still very good."

Allie shook her head, "I just know if I cannot get a high score in the exam, I may fail to get the scholarship for next semester."

As saying, she quickly put away the things on the ground and stood up, "I'm now going to the library, would you like go with me?"

Gloria waved her hand.

At the time Allie turned around, she collided someone, and books dropped down the grass.

"I'm sorry."

"Don't worry..."

"My name is Len, and this is Branham..."

...

...

Blood was still spreading.

After a long time did Allie respond to the situation.

Gloria jumped up from the sofa, she had no time to wear shoes and just rushed towards them.

Allie saw Gloria holding Branhma's arm and crying, "What the hell is going on... Oh! My God!"

"It must be that weird guy! Must be!" Branham took a deep breath at this moment. "It must be the dead body of Mrs. Maggie...My god, did we meet a crazy killer?"

"Let's go! I don't want to stay at this place! Branham!" Gloria said quickly.

Suddenly --- bang.

The door was suddenly slammed shut.

It was too loud, and attracted Allie's focus towards the door!

"What happened!"

Not only the door, but both the sliding floor of the living room and the window of the dining room had been closed!

Branham suddenly walked to the doorway, turning the door handle. But no matter how hard he turned, he couldn't open the door lock.

Branham tried several more times, but he failed.

He suddenly turned his head--- he stared at the house owner--- the young man from the East, "What's wrong with this place? Why was the door suddenly closed?"

Luo Qiu slightly opened his mouth.

He frowned, looking toward the doorway--- Boss Luo came to the doorway, trying to turn the lock.

"Why was the door closed?" Branham still hurled a question loudly.

Luo Qiu then turned around and said, "Why...did it lock? But, can you lower down your voice? You will wake up the little girl."

He pointed at Lena on the sofa.

"Shouldn't we wake her up now?" Branham snorted, and then walked quickly to the sofa.

He tried to wake up little girl Lena--- but he stopped, couldn't help stepping back, "Oh my god..."

The bravest person now was like a coward.

Looked through Branham's view, Allie found that it was the large suitcase that Arex left!

The large suitcase was lying in blood, and its fasteners opened automatically... It stopped opening once a gap was seen.

All of a sudden.

Something stretched out from the dark crack... it was an arm!

A blood-stained arm.

"It, it's creeping out... creep, creep, creep..." Len's face turn pale, a complete sentence couldn't even be blurted out of his trembling lips.

The other arm stretched out after the first one... they were human's arms... but what was inside?

He / she seemed not to climb out of the suitcase, but only moved the suitcase by hands and approach them...

"Ah---!!"

Gloria screamed and ran to the sliding door connecting the living room and terrace. She crazily tried to pull it, but it couldn't be opened.

Under the emergency, Gloria rushed up to run upstairs.

"Gloria!" Branham shouted.

At this time, that leather suitcase suddenly rushed over. Allie was stunned, she only felt her arms were grabbed and she realized, she was dragged by Len upstairs.

Branham followed them.

There was only Boss Luo there... who was slightly turning the door handle.

Chapter 311: Silent Night 5th

Branham was funny, and emitted a male's charm--- which may be derived from his identity---a football player, along with his good family background and talent of romance.

Anyway, he was considered as a good boyfriend... what about Len?

He was probably dull, in his friends' view.

"Allie, Allie... Allie?!"

"What's wrong?"

At the corner of the school cafeteria, Gloria suddenly patted Allie's shoulder, which surprised her.

Gloria said, "We are asking what you were thinking about."

"Oh yeah?" Allie pretended to be calm. She answered, "I'm just thinking about a question that the professor arranged. Sorry, I didn't hear...what did you ask me?"

Branham sitting on the opposite side of the table cracked a charming smile, "We invited both of you to attend the Halloween party at this weekend. You know, we haven't found a female companion. Gloria has agreed, what about you?"

"I?" Allie wanted to refuse it... but for some unknown reason, when she had eye contact with Branham, she nodded subconsciously.

When she regretted her decision, Gloria was surprised, "My God, you know that our Ellie has never attended any party because she thinks it's a waste of time."

Branham smiled, "That is really a great honor... right, Len!"

"Oh ... Yeah, yeah."

After Branham and Len cleaned up the dishes and left, Allie

drank up the remaining borscht...she was looking forward to party.

"It's so good that you are enlightened." Gloria hands put together, and face was filled with surprise.

"Should I go?" Allie suddenly hesitated, "I need to hand in project design on Monday..."

Gloria both hands held Allie's face, taking it seriously, "Allie, do you think a professor's praise will be more important than your first party in the school? Trust me, the professor won't only praise you."

"But ... Oh, I remembered that I don't have suitable clothes for the party." Allie shook her head, "I think I shouldn't participate."

"Is this a problem?" Gloria patted Allie's shoulder, blinking her eyes and patting her chest, "Let me help you! Princess Allie!"

Allie thought that she needed to enjoy the school life occasionally.

...

...

Enjoy her youth.

"Oh, is it? Turns out there are so many funny things happened in your high school."

Looking at the words on the interface on VK... Allie sensed it was a different day from the usual in the library.

"Can you tell me more funny things about yours? I want to know more."

Ellie sighed and admired those who did proactively while watching Branham's profile picture. They never lacked of chatting topics.

When did it start?

It might be from the last time she received the invitation, there were more and more topics in the conversation between Branham and her.

"Ah, I'm really looking forward to tomorrow's party."

"Me too."

Ellie looked down at the opened textbook... People would dance in a party right? The words in the opened book seemed to be playing some wonderful fantasy.

'Does Branham like me?'

...

...

Hmmm... In fact, parties at the university seemed to be far more different from what she expected---It'd definitely not dancing trippingly with melodious music.

Loudspeakers guided students to twist their young and crazy bodies, caliginous lights dizzied them.

Several of them stayed on the dancing floor...However, Allie was suddenly crowded out.

Gloria was always so brilliant.

Allie looked at her, who was surrounded at the center of the dance floor, like a queen.

"Gloria is so beautiful..."

Since sometime, Len was the only one around her... Allie turned to Len, and found he held a bottle of beer in hand.

"Why are you sitting here?" Suddenly, Branham walked to him from the crowd, with his body gently twisted following the rhythm.

Branham patted palms, and said loudly, "Come on! Don't just sit there!"

As saying, Branham pulled Allie's and Len's palms, straightly dragged them to the dancing floor.

Although it was not a formal banquet, it was still very good... Allie thought while she was rotating.

She looked up at Branham, suddenly feeling a kind of enjoyment.

"I'll go to the toilet, you keep going." Branham whispered at Allie's ear, and then patted Len's shoulder.

"What did he say?" Len asked curiously.

"He said he's going to the toilet."

"Oh, I'm sorry, I don't adapt to this occasion, I may be not good at dancing like Branham..."

"It doesn't matter, I don't always come either." Allie shrugged her shoulder.

Indeed, without Branham, she felt awkward being with Len.

"You ... your clothes are so beautiful today."

"Is it? Thank you..." Allie looked around, "I feel a little tired, and want to go outside for a while."

"Allie, Allie..."

Len was suddenly pushed by the people in the dance floor, and became dizzy.

...

...

But meanwhile, Branham and Gloria were enjoying kissing under the eaves outside... In a way that Allie had never experienced.

Allie quickly turned around and backed on to...

She thought and hoped that Branham and Gloria wouldn't notice her.

'It turned out Gloria likes Branham too...'

...

...

Crack.

The door was easily opened; Luo Qiu looked at the lawn outside, but didn't find anything useful.

He closed the door quietly, slowly walking upstairs to the living room.

The little girl Lena rubbed her eyes at this time and woke up. "Big brother, did my mom and dad come back?"

"Not yet." Luo Qiu shook his head, walking up to Lena and sitting down.

Bang--- bang bang---!

A loud striking sound came from upstairs!

Lena suddenly grabbed the blanket covering her body, and looked up at the ceiling, "Big Brother, Is there anything upstairs?"

"Yeah.." Luo Qiu thought for a while, suddenly smiled, "There are monsters, do you believe it?"

Little Lena was stunned, and asked subconsciously, "Is that Mr. Monster?"

Luo Qiu touched her head, and asked back an interesting question, "If it is Mr. Monster, and wants to eat your heart, what would you do?"

The little girl seriously considered, but suddenly both hands held her chest, "Is it enough to give it half?"

Luo Qiu showed more curiosity, "Why would you give half?"

Lena's big eyes opened wide, "Because if Lena has no heart, I'll disappear like Mr. Monster, and then my parents will be very sad! But they won't if there's still half left on me!"

"Then, what if the thing Mr. Monster had dug out is not a heart?"

Luo Qiu questioned softly.

"What will it be?"

Luo Qiu also looked up at the ceiling, saying indifferently, "Something ... belonging to itself."

Lena tilted her neck, thinking about it carefully though she didn't understand what the big brother was talking about.

At that time, a ray of light filtered in. The little girl suddenly jumped down the couch; she heard a sound of a car engine, "It must be my parents coming back! Let me go open the door!"

The little girl excitedly ran to the house gate, standing on her tiptoes and opening the door.

But she didn't see her mother, Mrs. Maggie, or her father... Instead, it was Arex!

"Oh, is this our little princess--- Miss Lena?"

Arex revealed a surprised look; he smiled and took off the hat, making a bow to the girl, "I'm honored that Miss Lena opened the door to greet me."

But as realizing the person was not her parent, a disappointing expression generated from Lena's face, "Where's my mother?"

The little girl still remembered that her mother went out together with this weird brother.

"Mrs. Maggie?" Arex slightly smiled, "Don't worry, Princess Lena, I think you'll see your mother soon... and of course your father!"

"Really?" The little girl showed a happy expression.

Luo Qiu slowly came to them, and asked, "Did you find her?"

"Of course," Arex squinted his eyes with a gentle smile, "Thanks to your help, we found her very soon."

Luo Qiu said, "But I did nothing."

Arex blinked, he put his palm at his ear and faked a listening

gesture, "Oh you didn't? But I seemed to have heard something interesting."

Then, Arex took one step back, and looked up.

"By the way, Mr. Luo Qiu, may I come in now?" Arex suddenly asked, "Oh... I just told that noble maid, that I'll pay for it...Does Mr. Luo Qiu want to obtain payment now?"

"No." Luo Qiu shook his head, turning his body and smiling, "Please come in... dear guest."

"Thank you."

...

...

Bang bang bang!!

"I want to leave here immediately!" Gloria scared, cold sweat dropped from her pale face.

They had hid in the room at the upper floor and Branham and Len were pushing hard against the room door...however, the door kept being struck.

"Baby, listen, I want to get out here too, but who can drive away that damn thing!"

"The owner should find a solution... Oh, they are still downstairs... did they... Len said with a more panicked expression.

"We can't think about them... let's jump down from here!" Branham promptly suggested, "We cannot hold any longer... Baby! Allie, you two jump first!"

"No, it's too high, I can't do it!" Gloria glanced at the distance to the ground, and quickly shook her head.

Bang---!

Branham and Len fell down the ground together as the door was struck open.

Both arms in that huge suitcase were grabbing both sides of the door frame and a pair of bloodshot eyes showing a ferocious and horrible look came from the gap.

It was like a spider hanging on the doorframe!

Ah---!!

Harsh screams shrieked, Allie and Gloria were scared and slumped down the ground!

Just as Branham tried to stand up, the suitcase rushed to him and pressed down on his body!

Branham cried out painfully, but both his hands managed to catch its arms; they were in a stalemate!

Len saw that, and hurriedly strike its back with coat hanger severely, but only succeed in infuriating it!

Suddenly, a third arm stretched out of the gap---it was an extremely thick and long arm!

It caught and squeezed Len's neck, and then lifted him up.

"Go... fast ... go..." Len ordered in a choking voice.

Allie quivered. She suddenly got up and pulled Gloria, rushing towards the doorway along the wall.

The two went out of the door. Then, Allie took a deep breath and closed it.

However, where should they go next?

Downstairs!

Branham couldn't burst open the door, but they could smash the glass door connecting the living room and the terrace...Maybe the house owner had done that and escaped from here.

"Allie ... we can't just leave Branham here..." Gloria said nervously.

She stuck her ear on the door to listen to the sound inside the

room while swallowing saliva, "There seems to be no sound... Did Branham and Len conquer that thing..."

"Is that possible?" Allie gave her a negative answer; however, the quietness confused and had her hesitate.

They quietly waited for a moment... but there was still no sound.

Allie hovered at the corridor, biting her finger, "Let me think about it..."

Chapter 312: Silent Night 6th

Finally, Len found Allie in the crowd.

She was holding a small bottle of beer and had been leaning against the handrail for some time. Len felt he should get close to her... but he hesitated, stopping his steps.

Because he witnessed Gloria approaching her from the opposite side... with a light pace and a radiant and enchanting smile.

What would they say? But on such an occasion...he couldn't hear anything due to the loud music; however, seeing Gloria intimately clutch Allie's hands, they should be talking about something happy.

"Allie!"

Gloria clutched Allie's hands affectionately, leaning against the railings arm in arm together.

"What's the matter? You look so happy." Allie asked while pretending she didn't know nothing.

"I got together with Branham just now!" Gloria smiled and blinked. "Branham is so sexy. Oh my god, my heart is still beating fast."

"Did you... Congratulations!" Allie nodded.

Gloria now grabbed Allie's hands, saying softly, "You will bless us right? We are good friends!"

At that moment, Allie wanted to pull back her hand... How many times had she wanted to do so?

Exactly like the moment when she grabbed her hands, saying, "We are good friends!"

In her childhood, she shared more than half of the cookie her mother made.

"Let's go shopping together!"

"Oh ... OK."

But there was still lots of homework for her to do.

"Oh... I've run out of my pocket money, Allie..."

"Well... I have some for you, and you can give it back to me next month."

But there were still some things she wanted to buy; so, did she have to wait for next month?

"Well, this dress looks good! I like it... Great! It fits you very well, do you like it? I can buy it for you!"

"Yeah...it's pretty good."

'I don't like this one... but the one you are holding.'

"Yeah... bless you two."

'Actually... I like him too.'.

...

...

Finally, Gloria saw Allie halting her steps; so she hurried to grab her arms, "Allie, did you come up with a solution?"

In her opinion, Allie was an brave girl who knew what she wanted all the time.

She was thankful that she had a good friend like Allie for some many years.

Alice nodded, and suddenly looked at her in a serious face, "Gloria, do you really want to rescue Branham?"

Glolia nodded.

"Well, first of all, we have to confirm the situation inside... Let's take a look! If it's dangerous, we can only escape, understand?"

Gloria hesitated... 'What's the situation inside? There's no

sound... Did they... Have Branham and Len been murdered?'

But she was still eager to know...just took one glance.

The door was slightly opened, Gloria and Allie closed to the door gap, gazing at the situation nervously.

Suddenly, Gloria covered her mouth with an ice cold hand; as if all her energy had been extracted.

In the room, that huge suitcase, was now devouring Len's arm little by little; and Branham was silently lying next to it.

And Len, whose arms had been swallowed in the suitcase, did not move either!

Gloria both hands covered her mouth tightly... but she felt a lack of oxygen.

Gloria quivered and leaned back against the wall. She felt both of her legs were too heavy to move.

"What should we do... What should we do... Allie, Allie... I, I don't wanna die..."

She grabbed Allie's arms, as if firmly grasping a life-saving straw; her face turned pale with lips trembled, "I can't move...Allie... You won't leave me here alone right? You won't leave me here alone right? We're good friends!"

"Branham and Len...are dead." Allie lowered her head now.

Allie's face suddenly turned blurry in Gloria's eyes, who was scared and almost cried after the horrible matter had been mentioned, "I know, I saw that... stop talking... it's extremely horrible."

"Why did we meet this kind of thing?" Allie said sorrowfully.

Allie... Allie...Are you OK?"

"It's all your fault."

She raised her head, and eyes opened wide, but scattered bangs

covered more than half of her eyes---It was a very ferocious look---With it, Allie stretched out her hands, squeezing Gloria's neck.

She put forth all her strength!

Gloria felt incomparably panic-stricken and painful; at that time, she had to look at her in an imploring expression.

As if asking, 'why?'

"My life used to be good without you! If only you didn't suggest to come here! Originally, I should be studying quietly, and... that's all your fault!"

Gloria was in too much pain!

This deadly suffocation motivated her instinct for survival; she suddenly kicked Allie's belly, so that her neck had been loosened.

But like crazy, Allie pounced towards her again!

The two wrestled together, squeezing each other's necks; and their bodies broke open the room door unwittingly!

The two fell down the floor at the same time!

Gloria breathed quickly, with her eyes moved... that huge suitcase with several arms stretched out--- was now creeping towards them like a spider.

Allie, Allie..." Gloria crazily patted Allie's body, and hoped to notice her the danger was getting close.

But, since it couldn't wake up Allie or stop her crazy behavior, Gloria had to kick her away forcibly!

When the two separated, Gloria stood up at all hazards, running for the door out.

She was so scared, that she had to close the door again.

Gloria desperately tried to open the door, roar and scream kept coming from the room---Allie was shouting and crying, "Gloria! Gloria!! Gloria!!"

Yes, she kept on crying out her name.

Gloria covered her mouth, tears flew out of her eyes---She didn't stop until no sound came from the room.

This time, she dared not to open the door again, but scratched and scrambled escape from this place. At last, she held the wall and handrail, walking downstairs to the living room.

The light of the living room was muted.

The house owner and the servant girl, the weird traveller Arex and the little girl Lena, were sitting around the tea table.

They looked at her... slowly walking down.

"Leave quickly!"

At the last stages, Gloria rushed down the stairs---she almost missed her step...but she still ran down towards them.

"Get out here! Quickly! Monster!! I saw a monster !!" Gloria pointed upstairs in horror.

"Let's go!" Gloria grabbed Luo Qiu's arm, trying to pull him out of the chair.

Luo Qiu was pulled up, but curiously asked, "Wait... who are you now?"

Gloria gave a start.

Luo Qiu said calmly, "Branham? Len? Gloria? Or Allie?"

"What are you talking about?" Gloria let go of Luo Qiu's arm. "I'm Gloria! I... I'm Gloria? I...I'm...I'm..."

She looked up slowly, considering, "... Who am I?"

...

...

Looking at this scene.

The little girl little lips closed to You Ye's ear, asking puzzledly,

"Sister You Ye, why does Sister Allie speak to herself all the time? That's so weird!"

Chapter 313: Silent Night 7th

Allie had been standing in her instructor's office restlessly for over 10 minutes, but he didn't tell any single word; he just gazed at a pad of A4 paper---that was the curriculum design she had done.

But she vaguely sensed that a slight dissatisfaction would be come from her instructor.

As expected, the professor adjusted his glasses on the nose bridge. "Well, Allie, it's obviously that it must have taken you much time to finish it, right?"

"Yes, Professor, it took me almost five weeks to prepare it." Allie quickly replied.

"Five weeks... well, it's really a long time." The professor nodded, but he put down the text, regretfully looking at Allie, "But why doesn't it look precise as the front section? Do you know it almost denies all your effort at most of the paper?"

"I..."

What she couldn't tell him was that she hurried to start the curriculum design since 4 o'clock at dawn. And that some thoughts even had a bad influence to the idea she thought... likewise, when she reviewed the work, she also thought the final part was totally garbage.

"You went to play last night, right?" The professor shook his head, "Your face doesn't look good. You changed clothes but your makeup has messed up, don't you know that? Plus the alcohol smell is everywhere."

"Professor, can you give me a little time to edit the last part? I can do it well in only one day." Allie implored.

The professor shook his head, "I'm sorry, Allie, I thought to send your excellent works to showcase and I'm glad to give you the chance but you made me so disappointed."

"Professor! I have worked hard for such a long time, couldn't you give me one more chance? Half a day! I just need half a day!"

The teaching shook his head the second time, "I don't care why you don't have enough time, every student is equal, but others didn't ask for more time. Allie, I think you need to adjust your current state. Get out here, I have a class soon, and have to prepare for it."

"Professor, wait a minute! I..."

"Allie, I appreciate you strive for the chance, but can you think about your actions before that? If you think the assignment is important to you, why did you choose to go play at the last night?"

The professor heaved a sigh and got up, "Of course, I still have expectations of you, but I hope my students are all self-disciplined."

Seeing her supervisor politely wave his hand and point at the door, Allie had to put her head down, collecting all the paper and leaving the room.

She felt lost all at once and walked alone through the corridor.

"Allie, A, Allie..."

Suddenly someone patted her shoulder; Allie looked up... It was him, Len.

He asked with concern, "What's wrong with you? You look terrible. And...You didn't sleep?"

"I'm fine but can you leave me alone?" Allie said stonily.

"But Allie, we..." Len wanted to say something.

Allie whispered, "Can't you mention the thing last night? We are both adults, just let it be."

She must have lost her head last night, unexpectedly she agreed for Len to send her back---but not to her dormitory; instead, they went to the park around and had a drink.

When they woke up, the two were embracing each other... She felt that her privates were a little uncomfortable, so she realized what had happened after drinking.

Len couldn't help being disconsolate as watching Allie leave.

...

...

"Goodbye, my love."

Gloria and Branham had had a treacly kiss; on the other hand, Allie and Len seemed to be much more insipid.

Then... see you tomorrow."

"See you tomorrow."

They just nodded---outside the dormitory.

After boys left, Gloria lay on Allie's shoulder, saying, "Aren't you too much cold to Len? You two don't look like lovers even after one month passed. I thought you should be switched on."

"Not everyone is as passionate as you." Allie took it lightly, "And Len is not as enthusiastic as Branham, is he?"

Gloria didn't refute this view, "Yes, but... Len looks pitiful. Allie, my good friend, I want to tell you that your hard-won love will probably be broken due to your coldness."

"Let's go upstairs, I want to take a shower." Allie interrupted her and avoided continuing this topic.

"Oh, you go up first, I remember I forgot to buy something."

Allie didn't care for her words; she just dragged her tired body back to the bedroom. She sat down, thinking that there was a rapid decline in her recent grades.

How could this be?

She scratched her hair and felt agitated... but she quickly took a deep breath to calm herself down, and told herself that she must

stop this tendency.

"Study."

Allie said silently, and quickly opened the textbook on the desk... but she felt something was missing.

"Notes... I lent Gloria the notes yesterday." Allie shook her head; she laughed at her obliviousness while made a phone call to Gloria.

"What's the matter, my dear?"

"Where's my notes I lent you yesterday? I need them now."

"Oh ... I think it may be in the first drawer on the left... wait, no, it's still in my bag. Wait me, I'll be right back. Don't open it now..."

"I saw the notes, and..."

"What did you see?" Gloria's voice suddenly turned nervous.

"Finalist notification of the last curriculum design competition. Why didn't you tell me that?"

"Allie, listen to me, I didn't know the professor will choose my work... and I didn't know before the course design that... besides, it's just finalized, I may not get the prize right..." Gloria's voice was full of regret.

"Do you think I will be unhappy?" Allie said relaxedly, "Foolish, I'm happy that you can enter the final! Come back soon!"

"Really? Oh! Allie, I know, you are my best friend! Wait, let me buy some beer, let's celebrate it." Gloria let out a sigh of relief, "I didn't sleep well these days, just for how to tell this issue to you! But now it's good! Wait me! I'll right back!"

"Alright... my dear."

Beep--!

Allie smiled and hung up the phone, then put the envelope back into the drawer. She was still smiling, and sitting on her own stool.

Suddenly, she abruptly swept everything on the table down to

the floor, with a scream; both her hands got in her hair with force, as the flood erupted.

She cried.

...

...

"Who am I ... Who am I ... Who am I?"

She suddenly bit her fingers very fast, moving back and forth quickly. Her eyes opened wide under the scattered hair.

Suddenly, she turned around to look at Luo Qiu, eyes still opened wide, "I'm Gloria...Allie was trying to kill me! Just now! Kill me!"

She suddenly approached Luo Qiu, and firmly grasped his arm, "She squeezed my neck! Look!"

She pulled open her collar, clear fingerprints could be seen on her neck.

"Seems she used all her strength."

Not only Luo Qiu, but Arex, the little girl Lena and You Ye also witnessed her action. Arex even came close, as if he wanted to study it further.

She was scared of the approach of Arex, unwittingly retreated back with finger pointed at Arex, crying in horror, "It's him! He killed Mrs. Maggie! Len dropped into the pit, and when I tried to pull him out, I found the dead body of Mrs. Maggie! It just happened after Maggie and he suddenly appeared! Then... it must be him! He's the murderer!"

"Are you Branham now?" Luo asked suddenly.

She was stunned, and shook head. "No... I fell into the pit and found the dead body of Mrs. Maggie! Branham wanted to pull me out! He said I was an idiot! He was brave was but scared by me!"

Arex squinted his eyes, "But you ... just ... said that you're

Gloria?"

"Gloria... Gloria..." She suddenly screamed, both hands were tucked into her hair, and cried in a more terrified tone, "Gloria! Gloria just wanted to kill me! She squeezed my neck! You see! You see! "

"Didn't you just say it's Allie who wanted to kill you?"

"Allie...Allie... Yes, she wanted to kill me..." She said under a dazing statement; suddenly, her expression turned painful, and shouted in horror, "Go away! Quickly! Allie! Go quickly! Gloria! Hurry up!!"

She waved her arm and shouted again, "Jump down! Let's jump down here...quickly!!"

She suddenly shouted, "No ... I'm afraid! I can't jump!"

She cried in fear, "Ah--- It's coming!!"

"What is it?"

"The big suitcase!! Hands! The hands stretch out of it! Monster! Eyes! I see its eyes! Arms! Two... no, three arms! It... it swallowed Len's arm!"

"Isn't the suitcase placed right over? Miss?"

"Suitcase..."

She subconsciously looked toward the dining-room, and put down her hands holding her hair and said to herself, "Why is it still here...why..."

She walked back step by step, Luo Qiu, Arex, You Ye and the little girl Lena were gazing at her, at this moment.

In her sight, they... suddenly grinned; white part of their eyes disappeared; they turned into mummies, they...

"Who are you?"

"Who are you?"

"Who are you?"

"Who are you?"

They asked her.

Chapter 314: Late Night Talk 1st

Sometimes she laughed and sometimes she was frightened; sometimes she would glaze over and sometimes her eyes rolled; also, she sometimes couldn't distinguish who she was, and sometimes wished herself to be some specific person.

Finally, she stopped moving, and standing here like a sculpture. She even gave others the feeling that she could keep standing there forever.

The little girl looked at her and felt scared. She tried to plucked the skirt of the beautiful sister and her body leaned against her leg.

Her leg was very cold.

Arex closed his eyes at this time. He seemed to be listening and revealing a satisfactory expression... what was he listening to?

Luo Qiu tried to figure it out.

Suddenly he felt that Arex was like a mirror, who seem to show some parts of himself.

Just like the appearance he revealed when he saw a beautiful color. Luo Qiu couldn't help controlling his curiosity, just like the first time he walked into the club.

He slowly closed his eyes; because he knew he would hear it.

"It's not polite to interrupt other people's enjoyment."

That was Arex's voice, "Though you are strong enough that I can't even stop everything that happened; however, I thought you should not be interested in them like the former boss."

Luo Qiu slowly opened his eyes and smiled. He glanced at her, who was still standing there, then sat down again and pointed at the seat beside and said, "Take a seat."

Suddenly the little girl looked up but soon she felt sleepy and then closed her eyes.

"Finally, we can talk, but may I have a good meal before that?"

"Yes, please."

Arex walked to her, with both eyes emitted a slight hint of purple gleam.

He seemed to be swallowing something from the girl, which had Luo Qiu become more curious... That thing not something good to her; rather, he was devouring the harmful stuff in the girl's body.

Arex was eating her nightmare.

"Arex was a Yumekui(Dream-Eating Tapir), he might be the last existing Yumekui." The servant girl whispered at Boss Luo's ear.

Like Brubov, Luo Qiu was not surprised that You Ye would know the secret---because he was one of the club's customer before.

Unexpectedly, Arex suddenly turned around and corrected, "It's not exactly true, Miss You Ye. I'm not the last one, but the last one and a half. Because I've been working hard for collecting the transaction fee in order to get a peer from your club. Since I already have this thought, isn't there another half existing in the world?"

'... You are the customer, as long as you are happy.'

Luo Qiu thought.

However.

'Does a Yumekui only eat a human's nightmare, but leave their good dreams...?'

A slight smile gradually showed on her face. She even closed her eyes, her face became unruffled and then fell into Arex's arms.

...

...

After putting down the girl on the couch and having her fall asleep, Arex sat down in front of Luo Qiu.

A feeling of satisfaction could still be seen on his face, after enjoying the meal.

Suddenly as if remembering something, he took out a black envelope, "By the way, what about taking it as the transaction fee? I've told this beautiful servant girl that I will pay for the meal."

You Ye received the envelope from Arex, and then brought it to her master. Luo Qiu didn't take it over, but took a glance at it, then turned to Arex, "We didn't do anything."

"Yes, you did."

Arex chuckled, "The club owner looks like a mirror and will expose the sin and desire in one's heart. Boss Luo Qiu didn't do anything actively. However, being with you let me skip some troubles."

Luo Qiu nodded, "So you deliberately brought the lady... borrowing my powers?"

"Once upon a time, Mr. Arex would always sent people around our club, when he met something he wanted to eat but was not willing to take action himself. Of course, he paid every time." You Ye explained.

Why did Luo Qiu think it looked like this guy took materials to the restaurant, and he had turned into a chef who had to cook for this customer?

Arex smiled, "It's just an accident for me to meet this lady on the road... at dinner time. In fact, I just wanted to bring a message to Boss Luo."

"Message?" Luo Qiu gave a start.

It was impossible for someone around him to bring a message through Arex--- of course, as the club boss.

That was to say, it was about the other identity of him.

"Who?"

"The former boss."

"Tell me about it."

Arex praised, "Boss Luo Qiu is much calmer than I thought. I thought you would be more astonished."

Luo Qiu said indifferently, "When I was in Moscow, I met an old customer, who sent me this lake villa, even if he gave it to You Ye, but..."

Luo Qiu glanced at You Ye, "I think it is too quiet here, and I realize that the former boss will be comfortable staying here. The old customer gave him this house... Perhaps, they might have a talk before, and that gentleman copied it down quietly... and has long since prepared this house."

Luo Qiu smiled and said, "As time goes, my prediction will be more and more precise. And so would the former boss, who used to be in my current position for longer time than me... therefore, it won't be an astonishing matter if he had a presentiment that I will come here, and ask someone to give a message to me. Besides..."

Luo Qiu asked, "Did someone tell Mr. Arex this address? It seems to be like that."

After Arex heard it, he suddenly asked and skipped the answer, "Can we have a talk alone?"

"Is it the customer's request?" Luo Qiu indifferently asked.

"No ..." Arex squinted eyes while saying, "I just think it would be better. Doesn't Boss Luo Qiu think that it'll be better to have a private conversation?"

"Master, I will go to prepare the bedsheets for you." Miss Maid softly said near Luo Qiu.

"No," Luo Qiu shook his head, "You can join the conversation, he doesn't want you to leave us alone."

"Alas..." Arex sighed, and said reluctantly, "That's why I'm not

willing to deal with the club owner, because I'm totally transparent in front of the club owner, and will be seen through."

Arex suddenly came closer while saying this; he looked carefully at Luo Qiu and asked, "Won't it be very boring? I mean you could know whatever you want to know?"

"What did the former boss want to tell me?" Luo Qiu asked back with no answer to the question.

"First, to give this envelope to you." Arex smiled, "So the transaction fee I gave you is actually the reward I earned, Boss Luo won't mind it right?"

Boss Luo nodded without any reply... this guy didn't have to pay that. Because they didn't obey the rules of trade all through the course.

"Second, he said..." Arex recalled it, as if falling into puzzlement.

He said slowly, "... do not try to peep at the future."

Do not... peep at the future?

...

...

After a long time of silence, Luo Qiu nodded.

He didn't judge the message, but only grabbed that black envelope, saying calmly, "Thanks."

"In addition."

Luo Qiu went on asking him, "Where did you meet him?"

"By coincidence, I met him in Vatican." Arex shrugged his shoulders, "But I feel that it's more likely that he was waiting for me there and requested me to finish it. But I think you won't find him even if you go there."

Luo Qiu couldn't find the former boss, really.

Indeed, like the texts he found in the former boss's room, the

price of getting the entire intelligence would be very high and one had to pay an enormously high cost to master the whereabouts of the former boss.

He couldn't get knowledge about the former boss except from You Ye.

"How's he doing?"

Luo Qiu looked forward to get the answer; he felt that it might be a conundrum that the former boss set for him.

What would happen if he tried all his ways to find the former boss according to the club intelligence?

"He's getting older."

Arex closed his eyes and said, "He spoke to me while his lifespan was passing fast. Aging, weakening, dying, and disappearing..."

Arex suddenly opened his eyes and smiled.

He stood up, wearing his hat while walking towards the big leather suitcase to carry it.

Once again, he made an exaggerating bow for appreciation, like what he did as he came first, saying slowly, "Then, thank you for your welcome. I'm continuing my travels. Hopefully I can afford to purchase something in Boss Luo's club when we next meet."

Chapter 315: Late Night Talk 2nd

At the moment Arex turned around, Luo Qiu's caught sight of something.

The so-called Yumekui's original appearance belonged to a tapir... Arex's figure was getting bloated.

His hands turned into hoofs; and his nose got longer but it was still much shorter than an elephant's.

Luo Qiu blinked his eyes, while Arex's figure returned to normal. Finally, he opened the door and left without looking back.

He had already done his task, that was sending something to the current boss and accidentally had a delicious meal.

He should be in a good mood--- but leaving at this point was kind of like leaving the trouble to those who were still over here?

"Are former customers all so headstrong?" Luo Qiu suddenly curiously asked.

The servant girl wouldn't knowingly smear them, but she tried to judge it as a third party. "Mr. Arex could be considered as a special customer among all. He won't stay in the same place for long, but will keep travelling."

Luo Qiu subconsciously looked toward the girl lying on the couch. She turned so serene after having her nightmare eaten.

Miss Maid suddenly said, "However, Yumekui may eat nightmares but the dreams left are not all fond dreams."

Luo Qiu curiously looked at the maid.

"He just ate this kind of nightmare, so similar ones will no longer appear in her mind. Thus, what he ate up is the wish that 'such a nightmare doesn't come to your mind again'; but to the dreamer, the origin of the nightmare still exists."

Seeing her master blinked, the servant girl tried to explain it

more precisely, "For example, humans planted the fruit tree. Each time after they picked up the fruit, the tree will keep bearing fruits...Master, did you get it?"

Luo Qiu shook his head, "No, I'm just thinking that you always know a lot... Oh, she woke up."

...

...

However, she didn't seem to have a clearer mind after having her nightmare eaten. Massaging her forehead, she looked around blankly.

There were still the young master of this house, the servant girl and the sleeping Lena, in the same living room. Oh, don't forget Gloria, who was sleeping at the other side of the sofa.

"Was I asleep..." Allie patted her forehead gently, "I may have had a dream, it's kind of..."

She was getting more blurred.

Luo Qiu asked, "It's kind of what?"

"Kind of..." Allie frowned, but soon shook her head, "Nothing... By the way, hadn't Branham and others come back yet?"

Luo Qiu nodded, "In fact, I haven't seen Mr. Branham and Len ever appear."

"Really..."

She misunderstood that Branham and Len hadn't come back yet... As to this kind of weird way of expressing it, it might be because an Eastern person made a mistake due to the unfamiliarity of Russian grammar.

Even if she was shocked by the local accent coming from the young house owner.

"Right, when did I fall asleep?" Allie tried to recall her memory

before. "Oh, did you ask me any questions just now?"

"Are you ... Miss Allie?" Luo Qiu suddenly asked.

"Haven't I introduced myself yet?" Allie gave out a surprised look and shook her head, "Your question is weird."

Luo Qiu smiled and said, "I'm sorry, just take it as my occupational disease. I always need to ask some questions to my customers...Well, it's a consulting work. Many customers desire for something, but they can't distinguish what they really need."

Allie frowned, "However, you cannot be 100 percent sure that the way you led is what they really want... Isn't your statement too subjective?"

"Onlookers can always see more clearly." Luo Qiu said softly, "But Miss Allie is right, indeed I cannot guarantee that, so customers are still the ones who know what they really want."

"Are you...in some job like psychologist?" Allie smiled and said, "You gave me that feeling. Of course, I'm not joking. In fact, it's fun chatting with you."

"Thank you."

Allie stretched herself and got awake. "Just like what Branham said, Eastern countries are mysterious. Aren't both of you normal people?"

It was like a joke---it really was to Allie, just for breaking up the tediousness.

Luo Qiu looked at the window outside the living room, and then turned to Allie and said, "Are we, who can sell anything a customer wants, considered normal?"

"Everything?" Allie gaped, as if thinking about what the 'everything' covered.

"Yes, everything, we sell all things, as long as customers can imagine and afford it. Of course, customers can choose not to

purchase it. They possess the choice."

Allie blinked, and suddenly biting her finger, "Well... is there something wrong with this statement? For example, the customer may have the option to give up the goods...however, what if they have no other ways to buy it? If so, it means they have no choice. Besides, if they really need it, they can't choose not to buy it, can they? It's the same as a monopoly."

She was the first customer to discuss this issue with Boss Luo.

...Turning on the super-scholar attributes??

Allie smiled and said, "So, You cannot possibly sell everything. It's an exaggerated statement. To be exact, you're selling what customers can afford; and if they can't, it doesn't exist---So, the so-called 'sell everything' is just an amplified slogan similar to an advertisement."

"It's true that we sell everything." Luo Qiu took it lightly, "Every customer has a different purchasing powers, but as one side providing the supply of goods, there's no concept of 'No'. At least that has been my experience until now."

"It sounds like it's true." Allie shook her head and casually said, "If I say I feel that my life is very bad, can you sell me a good life? And how much should I pay for a happy life? Besides, if a life could be counted by money, and I already owned that, why do I have to buy it from you?"

"Just because of this," Luo Qiu smiled, "We will not receive any kind of money."

"Not accepting money?" Allie was stupefied, "Then how will you profit?"

"A portion of health, sensibility, friendship, love..." Luo Qiu slowly said, "Even a soul could be the way we profit."

That moment, Allie felt her body getting cold.

Her legs, thighs, the skin under her clothes, her forehead and her cheeks were all turning slightly numb.

Subconsciously, she felt that might be true. It lasted for a short time, because a flurry of rapid knocks woke her up.

Allie quickly stood up. "It should be Branham. They came back! Let me go open the door!"

...

...

"Branham..." At the moment Allie opened the door, she suddenly stopping talking.

She saw two men dressed in police uniforms, instead of Branham and his peers--- Upon seeing Allie, the two men immediately pressed Allie down to ground and handcuffed her.

"At long last, we arrested the psychopath." One of the policemen breathed a sigh of relief.

Chapter 316: Monster

Alley was arrested by two police officers,and her mouth was covered with a piece of cloth. A police officer was holding her arm behind her to prevent her from escaping.

Allie's eyes was full of horror, anxiety, and tears.

At this moment, another police officer looked back at the house door and said loud, "We caught the patient, Madam and Sir, you can come in to see your daughter."

After the permitting words, a figure quickly rushed into the room.

That was Mrs. Maggie.

She searched in the room with a limp; when she found her daughter sleeping on the sofa, she was relieved, walking to her and taking her into her arms.

"Mom..." Lena rubbed her eyes and woke up; as seeing her mother, she shouted happily. Meanwhile, the little girl also heard the voice beside.

Her father's voice, "Lena!"

"Dad!"

Another figure came in---he was the father of the little girl Luo Qiu saw on the train--- He had been scratched on face and his forehead was bound up by gauze. Blood could still be seen.

He was dirty, as if he had rolled on the ground.

He quickly came to both his wife and daughter, hugging them with happiness, "Great! I was so scared for you! Good to see you're safe!"

He also wept.

"Don't move!" The police officer, who was holding Allie, shouted

at this time. "Do you want to add more trouble?"

Allie was struggling with agitation, but could only make 'wuwu' sounds at this point.

"Can anyone explain the situation to me?" Luo Qiu asked softly.

Another police officer came up and took a glance at him. "Are you the owner of this house?"

Luo Qiu nodded.

The police officer pointed to Allie, "This woman went mad one year ago, and stabbed several classmates with knives; then she was diagnosed with a serious psychological disorder and a propensity for violence. She has escaped from the hospital several times, including this time."

Luo Qiu nodded.

The police looked at the time, "Well, she successfully escaped yesterday afternoon and knocked out a driver in the gas station, then drove his car away. We located the car after we received the call and found this place. And incidentally, we found this Mr. Markem."

The police shrugged, "But Mr. Marken was pitiful. He had been knocked out by the women he met while answering the call of nature. But you know, that woman has a serious psychiatric disorder, so it's useless to prosecute her."

"It's okay... at least they are safe." Mr. Marken shook his head and glanced at Allie, before sighing, "The girl is pitiful, I'll look it over."

"Oh, thank you for your magnanimity, sir." The officer suddenly smiled.

Because it also reduced his workload.

Marken didn't say anything, but just combing his daughter's hair, as if being afraid of her being scared.

Mrs. Maggie looked around and curiously asked, "Oh, where's Mr. Arex? I fell into a pit and sprained my foot while we walked out for looking for my husband, but fortunately we met these two policemen who followed the trail here. I only knew the matter that Ms. Allie was a patient after having a talk with them."

The two policemen were worried that their direct intrusion would cause Allie run away, so they asked Arex to come back first to check the situation... but they didn't get any information after waiting for a long time."

For his safety, they had to quietly come back with Marken and his wife.

The two police officers stooped over at the window to peep inside and saw Allie was chatting with the young owner of this house peacefully, so they decided to knock the door and arrest her.

...

...

"Officer, my wife and I are taking our daughter to visit her grandma during our vacations, we don't want to waste time."

Marken sighed, "Besides that, I don't want to investigate this matter. After all, she's just a patient. So can we exempt the inspection procedure and just do the record here? I don't want to waste one day for traveling around the police station."

The police considered for a while, "OK, but you have to write a letter of guarantee, that all of these are of your own accord and you will not find us accountable later. Is that OK?"

Mark nodded briefly after thinking for a moment.

"Now let's do the detailed record." The police officer took out a pen, paper and a voice recorder, "Tell me the course of the incident again."

Mark said slowly, "It was around sunset and I was going to the

bushes to... Oh, then I suddenly saw and a shadow flitting past and was shocked, thinking that had met something bad. However, later on, I figured out it was a woman, who was walking alone. She looked weird, as if something was on her mind... Anyway, she looked to be in a terrible situation. I tried to call to her, but she didn't react. So I walked up but unexpectedly..."

Marken touched the wound on his forehead, "She suddenly pounced on me like in a frenzy and I was struck by a stone, then fell unconscious."

The police nodded and seriously recorded his words.

"Officer, can you untie the cloth strip on Ms. Allie? She might want to say something." Luo Qiu looked at Allie.

The police officer blurted, "No, what if she bites her tongue?" According to the hospital record, she had attempted suicide several times and the words of a psychopath have no force of law at all. "

The policeman was right.

Suddenly, Allie broke free from the control of the other cop. She could only give out groaning sound because her mouth was gagged. Her hands had been handcuffed at back but she crazily dashed against the door with her body.

She probably wanted to say something, but no one knew what she talked about due to the strip of cloth.

Soon, she was pressed down by the two cops again.

Allie twisted her body madly on the ground; looking up fiercely and gnashing her teeth against the cloth, with frenzied eyes and red cheeks.

She just stared at Luo Qiu.

Endless demands hid in her eyes.

She kept her eyes open wide, until she was dragged out of the door by the two policemen.

"Mr. Marken, I am done with the record. Please keep your phone turn on, we may contact you if necessary." A policeman turned around, "We'll have to take this patient back, and return the car to the owner. Have a good holiday."

When Allie was pushed into the police car, she still struck the car window...as if trying to break through.

She still had her eyes wide open... Until the car was driven far away and disappeared.

Then the servant girl gently shut the door, with only slight lamplight reflecting the lawn.

...

...

"I didn't expect to see you here."

After a long while, Marken broke the silence. He smiled, "Originally, we should have just passed by this road but didn't expect to stop halfway."

Mrs. Maggie glanced at the wound on her husband and quickly inquired, "Excuse me, is there a medical kit here? I need to clean the wound on my husband. And... may I stay up for tonight here? Both of us are fine, but the daughter... "

She glanced at her daughter, who was totally scared. She need to be comforted in a quiet and comfortable environment.

"Let me go take the medical kit." You Ye left with smile.

At this point, Marken found that the owner of the house was gazing at him all along.

It made him suddenly nervous... As if he was watched with a weird look and a fake smile.

"Excuse me... can I use the washroom?" Marken pulled his collar up, "I think I need to have a wash."

Luo Qiu smiled, pointing to it with soft words, "Right over there... I'll prepare a towel for you, sir."

Marken nodded.

He felt unwilling to stay by the Eastern young man any longer... So he lowered his head, walking quickly to the washroom.

"Maggie, come have a wash with Lena," he turned around and said.

When all other people left the living room, Luo Qiu sat down again and tore the black envelope Arex left.

Luo Qiu took out a palm-size black card.

The black card was rotating on Luo Qiu's palm on the axis of one angle... Upon seeing it, Luo Qiu was lost in thought.

Suddenly, Boss Luo's look turned sharp.

The dark black coating fell off the surface, and it turned into a... Gold and Silver Card.

"The second one."

...

...

The police car in front stopped suddenly, so the latter one had to stop too.

The police officer in front pulled Allie out of the back seat.

And cops in the car behind came up to her.

It was a quiet place, and the road was endless. They carefully checked around.

The police officer in front sneered, then turned to look at his colleague, who nodded as well.

They dragged the girl deep into the forest, and tied her up with a tree trunk, ignoring her struggling.

One of them started to take off his trousers and the other one started to disrobe the clothes of Allie... but he stopped halfway, "Wait..."

"What? I've taken off my pants. Do you want to enjoy her first?" The other one said with dissatisfaction.

"No no no... Look at her, don't you think her face was kind of weird?"

From the beginning... To be exact, since they tied her with the tree, the girl stopped struggling.

She just opened her eyes wide, but didn't blink, as if she lost the ability.

"It feels like something wrong with her..." the one stopping his action frowned, "This woman's eyes is giving off an uncomfortable feeling."

The other one taking off his pants blocked Allie's eyes with his pants, while patting her face. Grinning hideously, he said, "Done, let's quickly do her, and clean her body before taking it back! Don't worry, she's just a mental patient, nobody will believe her words."

Then, he got close to Allie, starting to suck her neck... He was getting excited.

He became more excited when touching the forbidden area.

Suddenly, an unprecedented pain could be felt from his ear!

Ah---!

He screamed and couldn't stop it; he painfully covered his right ear--- the whole ear had been bit off, blood flew over half of his face.

"Ah---!!"

The girl spitted out the cloth, soon blood flew into her mouth... She was...

She was chewing the broken ear.

And the handcuff hand been broken free. The girl tore the pants off and a pair of scarlet eyes opened.

Her mouth was opened too.

"Mo... monster!"

They were really frightened, collapsing suddenly on the ground with both legs backpedaling and attempting to head back.

But she rushed at them, both hands ripping into one's chest and tearing it.

The other policeman was too frightened to think it over... He didn't even notice that an old goat skin scroll opening behind the monster girl.

Perhaps he couldn't see it.

Because this wasn't something he was suppose to see.

The sky, turned even darker.

Chapter 317: There is a Monster in Everyone's Heart

A voice told her by her ear---Kill her.

Early in the morning, Allie suddenly felt a chill in the air. She woke up, it turned out that Gloria had opened the dormitory window and cold wind blew in.

Gloria took a piece of clothing and draped in Allie's body, exclaiming incredibly, "Oh my god, you actually stayed up all night!"

Allie firmly grasped the clothes, suddenly asking, "Did you hear a sound?"

"Oh, was there? What kind of sound?" Gloria was stunned.

Allie gaped and shook her head. She unconsciously looked to the mirror beside and found a gaunt face. After that, she looked at Gloria.

She was so bright and enchanting.

"Allie? Are you not feeling well?" Gloria asked with worry, "Tell me if you feel uncomfortable."

"No." Allie shook her head.

"Is there something on your mind?" Gloria pressed Allie's shoulders and bowed her head, "Is it about your boyfriend? Len? Tell me, we are good friends."

"Good friends..." Allie softly repeat it, while looking at Gloria and herself in the mirror.

When they crowded their faces together, why did Gloria's face became such a weird... She knew nothing was wrong with Gloria, but why did her face look so horrible in the mirror?

Like a monster.

"Gloria... What will you do if one day I hurt you? Allie asked suddenly.

Gloria shrugged, replying confidently, "Why would you hurt me?"

"That's because there is a monster living in my heart."

...

...

She was puzzled that which side was true. The reality or the fantasy?

Where was here? Narrow, narrow, narrow, and dusky... She found she was in such a place upon waking up at midnight.

They said that this was the living area belonging to the hospital. Oh, the wall was all carpeted with soft cotton bales. Allie sat up, looking at the clothes she wore, puzzled.

Why did her clothes look like hospital gown?

Oh, this was a mental hospital.

She didn't remember how long she had been living there... When did she come in? She couldn't remember that.

She couldn't even distinguish if something that happened before was a dream, illusion, or a real issue.

Occasionally, the man called the doctor would come to chat with her. He said that there was a monster in everyone's heart, but it was not that terrible. However, if you run from it, it'd turn stronger and stronger.

Finally, one day, it would completely devour yourself.

Was that true? When it turned quiet, Allie looked up to the small iron window, 'Is that true?'

'Oh, where is this place? Gloria? Len... Branham... Where are you?'

In the narrow, narrow, narrow room, Allie curled up at the corner. She saw monsters again and again, who looked like Len, Branham, and Gloria, surrounded herself.

"Go away!"

...

...

There is a monster in everyone's heart.

The shadow of the trees were retreating quickly... It was too dark, she could only see an endless black cloth outside the car.

'Am I in a car?'

'Not in that narrow place?'

Allie was leaning on the car window quietly, feeling that her life was like the fluids in the sewer, too messy... and terrible.

She didn't even know why she was in the car... It should be a police car because the driver was wearing a policeman uniform.

'Is there a monster in everyone's heart?'

'That's really ugly.'

Allie realized what the two cops would do to her, when she was tied on the tree. But...was this reality?

Or was it just a nightmare?

One more time, she couldn't distinguish if she was in a dream or in life---'Is it true? Shouldn't I be in that super cramped room?'

Anyway, the sense of touch seem to be real.

That was really ugly... 'if I cover my eyes, will I feel better?'

'Ah, what a disgusting feeling.'

There was a monster in everyone's heart... An incomparably ugly monster... 'Please swallow me, I don't want to distinguish which one is reality and which one is fake.'

'Let the monster devour me.'

When she was crying in her heart, she couldn't even feel the policeman grouping her.

Hysterically crying.

"A portion of health, sensibility, friendship and love... even a soul, these are all the ways for us to get profits."

She might have heard such words before and it was remembered by her brain... By the way, she met a weird guy, who had a strange conversation with her.

But is that also real... But no matter what, at this moment...

"Get out of my body! Don't touch me!"

There was a monster in everyone's heart, so ugly...

'Please let me become a monster too.'

"After that, I may not have to distinguish what is reality and what is an illusion. Right?"

Like the monster without heart in that story... Without a heart, everyone would become a monster.

'I've tasted the flavor of blood.'

She saw the two policemen, who were totally frightened... 'Oh, this scene seems to be true.'

'But whatever.'

'Because ... I'm already a monster.'

Warm blood was like flowing stream, flowing down to her arms. And she pressed the bloody hand on the goat skin stroll, which was being unfolded gradually.

...

...

"The house owner is really a good guy."

Looking at his wife, who had coaxed her daughter to sleep, Marken walked close by soft steps; he held his wife's shoulder, murmuring, "Thank you."

Mrs. Maggie made a 'hush' gesture, then left the room with her husband. Mrs. Maggie seemed to feel a bit cold, so she clasped her arms and whispered, "Let's hit the road as soon as the sun rises... I feel uncomfortable staying here."

Marken nodded, "Me too. Anyway, it's so odd for a pair of youths to build a house in this kind of place."

"How are your wounds?" Mrs. Maggie touched the wound on the forehead of her husband; she chided him, "You should have shouted when you were attacked. If I heard your voice, you may not be knocked out and thrown into the pit."

Marken shrugged his shoulders, "In that case, I have to think of Lina's safety, don't I? I don't know if she has a partner. What if you got off the car too? How can I leave Lena in the car alone?"

"Yeah." Mrs. Maggie nodded helplessly, "Well, let's not mention it again. You go to sleep, tonight I want to sleep with Lena..."

Mrs. Maggie's look suddenly turned scared and leaned back against the wall, as if seeing something terrifying.

"What happened?"

Marken asked his wife hurriedly.

Mrs. Maggie's arms trembled, pointing at the corridor window, saying in panic, "Just now... something went pass..."

Marken turned his head and looked outside; it was deeply dark outside, "Nothing, are you too exhausted and saw wrongly? Perhaps it's just the shadow of a leaf."

"Maybe." Mrs. Maggie massaged her eyebrows and gently pushed her husband, "Go to sleep, you have to drive the car tomorrow."

Seeing Mrs. Maggie walk into the room, Marken turned to relax

his slightly stiff neck, and planned to go back to his room---next to theirs.

After closing the door, Marken frowned, inhaling some cold air, while walking to the mirror, lifting up his clothes, and pulling down part of his pants.

"This damn woman."

Several inches below his belly, a few dark red scratches were clear there.

Marken bowed his head, fingers gently touched the scratches, and observed their depths; he definitely didn't notice the mirror.

Where a pair of wide, scarlet eyes appeared behind him...

Chapter 318: Beneath the Skin

"... Thank you to my teachers' guidance, and my best friend, Allie, of course! She gave me a lot of advice ... and also thanks ..."

In class, Gloria stood up to the warm applause--- Of course, after the instructor called her name.

The first prize for the curriculum design award had been issued after more than two months of selection.

Allie silently watched Gloria walk to the platform, taking over the honor from her instructor and revealing a smile.

But her mouth was turned downwards.

She held a pen, scratching the chair one time after another; the scratch turned deeper after she repeated the action each time.

Allie suddenly closed her eyes ... it seems like she was alone in another world. And in the class of that world, the teacher said, 'Congratulations, Allie! Come on, dear Allie, I think you will not be stingy in sharing your joy now.'

And she, as expected, she slowly stood up. Under everybody's attention, she walked to the platform, looking at Gloria and smiled, "First of all, I'll thank my friends, who have been with me... "

...

...

Day after day, Allie felt there was another self living in her body.

A selfish, jealous, fractious, and always dissatisfied Allie.

She often told Allie, 'Some friend she is! Do you think Gloria is really a kind girl? She just feels superior comparing with you, because she wins a complete victory in all aspects.'

'That's not true.'

She often told Allie, 'Look, she won your honors, your love, and she even has an inherently affluent background to match her intelligence. You have to fight so hard for something that can be easily done by her. You will only be an ornament for showing off her excellence as long as she exists.'

'No ... that's not true.'

She added, 'Is that not right? Do you think Branham at the beginning was really interested in you? Wake up! He's only fond of Gloria. He talked to you just for getting more information about Gloria. You know this, but still imagine that he likes you, and even ignore the fact that he asked more about Gloria, rather than you.'

'No, it's not like this, not... like this.'

She then poked fun at her, "Why did you go with Len? For comfort? Because Len's family is actually more superior than Branham's? Because Len's academic result is always better than Branham? Because he has many more advantages that Branham doesn't have, except dullness? Because you're eager to prove that you have a better boyfriend than Gloria's? Just because you were in a bad mood, you went to sleep with Len and simply gave yourself up."

'It's not like this!!'

Finally, she sneered, "You are so ugly, Allie. You are really ugly."

"No, no, no!!" And finally, Allie roared, "It's not like that!!!!"

She panted the other herself inside her body seemed to disappear. She couldn't hear those ironic voices anymore, but why...

Why.

'I stabbed a knife into Gloria's stomach?'

Bright red blood dispersed on her blue and white skirt; Allie subconsciously pulled out her knife, looking at Gloria cover her

belly, and gazed at her with miraculous expression.

'It's not like this.'

She looked around blankly, Len and Branham revealed unbelievable gaze simultaneously... and watched their shocking look while rushing to her together.

'No ... it's not like this.'

'No, no, no, NO!'

'It's not like this!!!'

She screamed, a heart wrenching cry.

...

...

'Ah!'

A rapid, horrified and trembling scream---was cried out. At that moment, Marken felt something wrong and subconsciously shifted his focus from the belly wound to the mirror.

Suddenly he turned around, feeling a chill rising from his feet rapidly up to his head; a tingle that soon spread down slowly from the top of his head.

Cheeks, neck, chest, arms.

"It's... it's you!"

Even if her eyes turned scarlet, and mouth opened disturbingly wide while revealing beast-like teeth, the outline was still clear for him to recognize---It was that mental patient, Allie. They ever met at the forest near the road.

Why did it turn to such appearance... it was simply like a demon! No... it was a monster!

"What are you going to do!!" Marken was too frightened; he instinctively retreated, but instantly touched the wall.

There was no way back.

"Don't come over! Don't co..." Marken bit his tongue accidentally.

However, she approached and force her way to the front of Marken. That demon made him stretch out his hands, to squeeze the banshee's neck!

He succeeded in grabbing the banshee's neck and pushed her down! On the ground, Maken wasn't willing to let her go; he sat on her body, still squeezing her neck.

His hair was straggly. Sweat dripped from his face and with eyes opened wide, he said ferociously, "What did you come back for! I am not pressing the matter anymore!! So why are you coming back!! For revenge? But I just acted on impulse! You've knocked me out! What else do you want to do? Isn't it for the best for you to be brought away!! You can peacefully receive treatment in the hospital!! Why are you finding fault with an impulsive person? You mad woman!! Mad woman!! Why do you laugh?!"

Marken felt colder; He lost control of his body and became stiff, as if something was pulled from his body .

Looking at the smile on that horrible face.

"What the hell are you laughing at?"

Creak... Marken heard creaking sound. That was the sound of opening the door, from the door creaking due to the lacked of oiling throughout the years!

He turned his head unconsciously, and saw his wife, Maggie.

"I ... heard something," Mrs. Maggie subconsciously said.

She couldn't see clearly the woman, who was pressed down by her husband, but she could distinguish her by her clothes.

But it made her utterly confused upon watching this scene... plus Marken's words just now.

Impulsive...

'What does he mean?'

Mrs. Maggie's mind was occupied by this problem. So much so that she even ignored instinctively why that patient showed up here, instead of being caught and sent back to the hospital.

"Maggie, listen to me... this woman is a monster!" Marken said quickly, "Come here! Give me a hand!"

"What is... impulsive?"

Unexpectedly, Mrs. Maggie blurted out such a question.

"You probably misheard it! Come here! I cannot control her! She's a monster!!"

"Why did you not press charges! Why?" Mrs. Maggie looked at Marken with an astonished and weird look, "I know your character... you are never happy to suffer losses. Let along passing over something; you'll probably get some financial reimbursement from her family; that makes sense. But you didn't even ask if she has family... That's so weird. What on earth did you do to this girl?"

"Nothing!! Come to help me!!" Marken roared, "This thing is a monster! She'll hurt us! Come help me!!"

"You... you are the monster." Mrs. Maggie endured heartache, "You are the monster, and I saw it! You are the one that wants to kill her! I... I didn't expect my husband to be such a person! You have let me down, Marken!"

The girl was pressed on the ground, while Marken squeezed her neck...Who was the killer do you think?

"Stop! Marken!" Mrs. Maggie eyes reddened, "Don't hurt this child again!"

Marken stared at the expression of his wife, suddenly... he realized why the female monster showed that kind of smile.

That was a jeer!!

"Let her go! You will probably kill her! You're committing a crime! Do you know? Marken!! Wake up!" Mrs. Maggie took a deep breath, "I don't know how this girl came back, but I'm sure the two police officers have not gone far... Marken, I don't want to be a witness to testify against you... Stop, okay? Think about Lena, can you stop?"

"Lena ... Lena ... yes, Lena ... no!!"

He wasn't absent-minded for long; he turned ferocious soon, the girl... monster's jeer seemed to have shown up in his eyes. His true self had been seen through, letting him feel like that he was toyed with.

The good husband's image had been totally destroyed at this moment.

"Listen!" Marken turned around, panting air with wide eyes, "I don't care if you're a lunatic or monster! Do you know you have ruined my family? Do you know that? I won't, I won't let you go... never..."

His darkness seemed to have been magnified to the limit.

Like a torrential and violent vortex, dragging one along to the center!

"You shouldn't return... Ah!!!!" Marken used his full strength!

"Marken! Stop!" Mrs. Maggie could only run to him, grabbing his arms to stop the atrocity!

All of a sudden, Marken stopped. A mouthful of blood spurted out of his mouth.

The arm of the female monster pierced Marken's breast; she waved her redden fingers in the air, like a claw.

Ah---!

Mrs. Maggie cried out in fear and collapsed down the ground.

The monster swung her arms, causing Marken's body fly away. It

dropped down and rolled to the corner.

Only then did she see clearly the current appearance of the girl!

Seeing Marken bleeding in the corner, Mrs. Maggie cried in pain... The female monster was walking towards her step by step.

"Don't..." Mrs. Maggie shook her head helplessly, with her body curled up and begged, "Don't come! No!!"

"Mom, what are you doing?"

The little girl was standing at the doorway.

She hugged her pillow; the clean pajamas looked slightly crumpled after a while of sleeping in bed.

Lena rubbed her eyes, looking at this scene, as if still sleepy.

Suddenly, the female monster turned to the girl.

Lena was shocked while looking at the ferocious and horrible female monster. She held the pillow tightly and was too scared to escape.

"No! No! No!" Mrs. Maggie hastily stood up and hugged the monster's waist, "Don't! Don't hurt my daughter! Don't!"

But she was too weak to stop the female monster's step, who had immense strength.

Just after an arm sweep, Mrs. Maggie had been knocked out and fell to the end of the room.

Finally, the female monster went to Lena and the hand squeezed Lena's neck.

Chapter 319: No One is Worse Off Than Others

The girl walked back and forth in the small room.

The room was so small that the girl had to turn around after three steps and headed for the other side of the 'room'.

She kept repeating such actions.

"How long has she been repeating this?"

Across the glass window on the door, Gloria covered her mouth, turning her head to avoid continuing watching this scene.

"Several weeks. Allie's situation is getting worse, so I have to apply for this kind of room for her."

Gloria's face was still pale, because she hadn't left the hospital for long --- the knife wound had her lay in hospital for a long time.

"Why did this happen?" Gloria sobbed bitterly on Branham's shoulder.

Branham sighed and touched his arm, as if he could still feel a mild piercing pain---The doctor said the knife wound had hurt his bones, so it'd be impossible to be as dexterous as before, "I told you that you shouldn't come again."

Gloria whimpered slightly.

The doctor had seen so much similar situation; he added calmly, "The patient should be under long-term stress. As far as I know, she has a poor family. In addition, from the conversation during this period, I found Miss Allie is seriously jealous, along with being very obedient. She's been stuck in the contradiction between compliance and resistance under self-persuasion."

The doctor shook his head, "You should understand what will happen if tense nerves go over its limit."

"That's my fault... I've never noticed it." Gloria blamed herself, and stared at Allie, "Once she asked me, if one day she hurt me, how would I react... at that time, if I noticed... "

The doctor sighed, "Everyone has some secrets in heart and don't want to tell others. Miss Gloria, it's not good for you if this becomes your guilt. Miss Allie's problem was not formed within one or two days."

"Doctor, can Allie get well?" Len asked as looking at the doctor heavily.

"I can't answer this question." The doctor shook his head, "Although medication and psychotherapy can get the patient's condition under control, it will still depend on the patient herself, if she will get better."

The doctor said indifferently and pointed to his heart. "In my opinion, there's nothing wrong with her brain, but here, she can't let it go."

The three people thoughtfully gazed at the figure in that room.

Gloria stared at her, "I met Allie at the first day I moved and became her neighbor. That day, she wore a dress, and was sitting down, reading outside. She was very quiet and had never changed throughout these years."

Branham pressed Gloria's shoulders for comforting her.

Gloria smiled with a complex look, "At first, she didn't want to be friends with me. Each time I called her from across the wooden bars, she would always run back into her room." One day..."

Gloria thought, "One day, she suddenly went to the wooden bar and asked me if I really wanted to be friends with her. If so, she would share half of her cookie with me. But in the end, I didn't control my mouth."

Branham knew it wasn't self-accusation, but she was recalling the memorable issues in childhood.

"The next day, I took some candy out of my home and shared half to her. Well, we're both innocent during our childhood. No schemes and willing to share things with each other." Gloria said softly, "We kept this for a dozen of years; but it's not as the same as before now."

Looking at Allie, Gloria asked softly, "Branham, what's she thinking about do you think?"

Len thought for a moment, but wasn't sure, "Maybe... the ideal world she wants?"

"Does it include us?"

"Probably..."

Allie suddenly stopped moving, but looked up at the small iron window leading to the outside, as if watching and thinking about something.

...

...

Mrs. Maggie begged powerlessly. She couldn't move, because she was kicked hard and fell heavily to the floor.

She could only look at the horrible thing stretching a pair of hands toward her daughter, while shaking her head bitterly and chokingly.

She didn't know if her daughter was petrified--- because the monster's body totally blocked the sight of her daughter.

When her hands touched Lena's face, Lena stepped back instinctively, but her shoulders were pressed by her hands soon.

Lena looked up at the split eyes and mouth. She couldn't recognize that it was exactly the sister that told the story ending to her.

The little girl asked nervously, "Are you Mr. Monster? But why are you a girl?"

The monster suddenly looked down with widen eyes, almost sticking to Lena's forehead.

"Are you going to eat Lena?" The little girl was shocked, clasping her pillow and almost crying out, "Are you going to eat Lena's heart?"

She let out an equivocal voice from her throat.

Ah-!

"Lena go! Be quick!"

Mrs. Maggie shouted in horror.

She began to hold Lena's cheeks, and opened her mouth, which had bit the two policemen's bodies, and dyed with Marken's blood, turning a bloody red.

Lena closed her eyes at once, and hanged her head, "Can't you eat Lena's heart? Lena can give you half of my heart, Lena doesn't want to lose her whole heart, and let my parents not be able to find Lena. Can you eat half? Can you?"

She opened her eyes slowly, and found Mr. Monster... Ms. Monster didn't eat her.

However, at the moment she opened her eyes, the monster's horrible eyes still gazed at her, and startled her; however, she didn't close her eyes again.

The little girl didn't know what it was exactly.

She just naively thought that this was the Mr. Monster stepping out from the story, who gave his own heart to the girl in the story and lost his heart.

Why did it become a girl?

Lena didn't understand these.

"Mom said Mr. Monster is ugly, but very kind. Mr. Monster will pick a lot of delicious fruits for the little girl. Can't you remember

that?" Little Lena held her pillow tightly, "However, Lena can only give you half...or a little more, but don't take all away! Otherwise Lena will lose my heart and get lost. Is it ok?"

Okay?

Suddenly, she pushed away Lena, then lowered her head and looked at her hands, and even her appearance in the mirror.

Suddenly she stopped moving.

Lena nervously looked at her; suddenly, the weird Ms. Monster moved, walking by her and left step by step.

She went downstairs.

"Lena! Lena!"

Mrs. Maggie crawled over to her daughter slowly, and hugged her frantically.

She touched her daughter's face with trembling hands and kept watching her, "Lena! Are you OK? did you get hurt? Don't worry, mom is here, mom is with you."

"Lena is okay." Lena patted her mother's head and said, "Mom, will that monster come back again? I just saw Mr. Monster cry, so pitiful."

Mrs. Maggie turned back to take a glance subconsciously.

Marken was still lying in the pool of blood at corner; he would probably never move again.

Pitiful?

Who was more pitiful? Mrs. Maggie suddenly thought, 'No one is worse of than others.'

...

...

After going downstairs to the living room, she walked to the terrace outside the living room, and looked at the dark lake.

"Take a seat."

At the terrace, Luo Qiu pointed at the chair next to him and gently said.

Chapter 320: Lake Water Before the Dawn

On the terrace, Luo Qiu, being accompanied by You Ye, had drunk half glass of beer. Sitting there for a while, he watched the cold lake water and clear and bright moon.

A slightly bitter taste was revolving in Luo Qiu's mouth.

He looked at Allie, as if responding to her gaze, when she was dragged out by two policemen.

"Am I looking ugly now?"

Allie asked this mysterious young man again in a voice sounded by a burnt vocal cord, "Do I look ugly now?"

Luo Qiu thought for a moment and answered, "A few months ago, I have met someone even uglier..."

Boss Luo recalled the scene he met the butterfly monster for the first time, "Her skin is covered with pustules, and some were even broken. Trust me, that appearance is far more horrible-looking than yours---Of course in a human's opinion."

"Really?" Allie turned back and avoided looking at Luo Qiu.

She looked at the lake and quietly said, "I can't imagine that, and I'm afraid if I think about it, it will appear in front of me... I don't know which side is true. I saw myself in the mirror but I don't know if the one in the mirror is my true self. However..."

After a moment's silence, Allie whispered, "However, it's really really ugly, beyond my imagination, it's really..."

Allie headed down and looked at her inverted image on the lake, "It's really ugly."

"Can you describe it?" Luo Qiu stood up and walked to Allie, watching the inverted image with her.

Allie pointed at the eyes of the inverted image, "It's my jealousy, you see, it broke away and became hideous. I know that Gloria is

my good friend and would never try to take advantage of me but I cannot help being jealous of her."

Alley then pointed at the horrible mouth, "This is my lie. You see, it is also broken, out of control. Obviously I don't like Len but I never told him and have been enjoying his love and care toward me. I hated Gloria very much but always faked a smile while being with her."

She drew a circle around the inverted image by her finger; and after a while, she whispered, "This is me...a jealous, dishonest... and real self."

After that, Allie didn't speak again.

Luo Qiu accompanied her, standing there for a long time.

Suddenly, Allie opened his mouth and said, "Can I request from you one last thing? I'll pay whatever I have left."

"Of course, we never refuse customers requests." Luo Qiu smiled.

"I'm so terrible." Allie smiled bitterly, the broken lips made the bitter smile look even scarier. "I hurt too many people, even myself... I couldn't go back." But at least ..."

She stopped talking, a soft light revealed in her ferocious and broken eyes, "But at least, the little kid willing to share half of her heart can live on happily."

"You consider yourself as her? Then I understand." Luo Qiu gently nodded.

"Thank you."

Allie turned around and looked at Luo Qiu, her broken eyes were recovering gradually.

When she smiled, it was as if her former appearance reappeared.

Allie closed her eyes and let her body fall freely into the lake, slowly sinking into the dark and bottomless lake.

The lake was still calm but showed a slight trace of pinkish light. After a flash, a lump of light rose up, and finally fell into Luo Qiu's palm.

The little girl, Lena, was still holding her pillow, coming downstairs.

Her face was a bit pale, walked on the floor by little bare feet. Her pajamas looked even more wrinkled. She walked to Luo Qiu and You Ye, pitifully asking, "Big brother, big sister, my mother disappeared, and so did my father. Do you know where they are now?"

Luo Qiu collected the light ball, holding Lena's palm, and saying softly, "Let me take you back to your mom."

"Really?"

Luo Qiu didn't answer. He just held Lena's hand and went out.

...

...

A few kilometers away.

There was an ambulance stopped by the lake road, with a police car--- plus three other common cars in front.

They bumped together, and flesh blood dripped all around. Several men from the ambulance were busy moving the bodies of two policemen out of the police car.

One of the medical staffs shook his head as looking at the two cops, "No breath, he's dead."

Later, they moved a girl wearing prison uniform out of a private car, making her lie low on the ground; and moved out bodies of a couple and a girl from another private car.

The doctor was doing first-aid for the girl with prison uniform and the family of three people.

"Doctor! This man's heart stopped beating!" A nurse said reluctantly.

"Doctor! The girl's heart stopped too!"

"I can sense this lady breathing!" The other nurse said urgently.

But the doctor didn't look joyful, because this little life he was attempting to revive was still in danger... She was badly wounded!

"Don't give up! Your family is still alive! Don't give up!!"

The doctor shouted while doing CPR to the little girl. He pressed her chest while saying, "Listen, girl! Wake up! I know you're strong enough! You need to go to school, making many friends, you still have a whole life, don't stop here. Kid! Breathe, breathe, breathe, breathe..."

...

...

Arex closed his eyes, and showed an extremely enchanting expression next to the road.

Suddenly, a voice came from his back.

"Looks like Mr. Arex has finished eating the dinner, right?"

"Looks like Boss Luo Qiu also made a good business deal, right?"

When he turned back, he saw Luo Qiu.

Boss Luo held a little girl, but Luo Qiu didn't focus on her; instead, he watched the scene of the incident. Arex smiled shyly.

He took off his hat and said in a humble tone, "Trust me, this is just an accident. Allie's car and Mr. Marken's car collided with each other at the fork of the road. And the police car didn't escape from the accident either."

Arex squinted his eyes, "But I called the ambulance at the first instance; however, as you see, these people are all gone."

"That's alright," Luo Qiu said indifferently.

Luo Qiu bowed his head, and patted Lena's shoulder, pointing to the front as whispering, "Go back, your mother is waiting for you."

"Big Brother, where's Mr. Monster?" Little Lena took two steps forward, and suddenly turned back and asked.

Luo Qiu whispered, "There's no monster. Monsters are all things we imagine. Go back, or it will be too late."

Little Lena nodded, and gradually walked close to herself.

...

...

"Breathe.. Breathe! Breathe! Breathe! Breathe... Breathe! Breathe! Oxygen! Nurse! Oxygen!!"

"It's great! Great! We saved her!"

Looking at medical staffs cheering after rescuing a life, Arex put on his hat.

He looked at Luo Qiu, "Well, I have to leave, Boss Luo Qiu."

He gradually went deep into the forest, the figure disappearing into the darkness.

He never stayed anywhere for long, but kept travelling while carrying his large luggage.

Luo Qiu watched Arex leave, shaking his head and murmuring, "You eat too much. Aren't you afraid of being too full?"

...

...

But Arex couldn't hear this sentence.

Because he was arriving at already miles away---he was in a good mood near the dark lake. After all, he got a good free meal on this business trip.

"The successor of the former boss is more interesting." Arex

smiled, but his smile stiffened soon.

Arex subconsciously covered his stomach, showing a hint of painful expression, getting down on one knee; he only recovered after a while.

He looked at the calm lake, smiling wryly, "It should be... more scary. How stingy... painful..."

The Yumekui... Mr. Arex suffered diarrhea.

...

...

"Master, the hot water for the bath is ready."

The servant girl came from the darkness, but she found her master squatting by the roadside.

Luo Qiu picked up some newly-blooming flowers at the roadside. After he picked a lot, Luo Qiu stood up.

He held these flowers and went to the scene of the accident---coming to Allie, who lay quietly.

Her body was totally cold.

No breath, no life, she looked so calm, with a smile on her mouth. Luo Qiu gently folded Allie's hands on her belly, and then put down the flowers in his hand.

"Actually, Miss Allie looks very nice." You Ye said beside Boss Luo.

"Here's a flower for you."

Boss Luo was in a good mood, he gave the remaining flowers to the servant girl.

"I'll find a place to arrange them." She whispered.

"Go back, it's dawn."

...

...

During their childhood.

"This is the cookie my mother baked for me because I was well behaved. It's tasty, do you want to have a taste?"

"Okay!"

"Then I give you half, but you should make friends with me, is it OK?"

"Yes, it's OK!"

"But promise, if I have some problems, you must help me! Of course I'll help you if so. Don't hide it from each other! Because this is what a good friend should do! Would you like to be a good friend with me forever?"

"Ok, my name is Gloria, what about you?"

"Allie, my name is Allie."

Chapter 321: For the New World

In the sea of trees beneath the cliff of the Pechersk Lavra, somebody was hiding within the swaying trees and peering out.

"Pechersk Lavra is really quiet."

Putting down the telescope, Lamias jumped off the trunk, with her black nun robe billowing in the wind.

This pair of powerful but not thick legs stretched in the air but nobody under the tree chose to notice her.

Because no one dared to provoke the nuns.

Lamias bent her legs to reduce the impact of fall. The nun, who belonged to the Black Religious Congregation, was now walking toward the tent stationed here.

She had come here for several days and had been observing the monastery all along.

"Is the magnetic field still the same as usual?"

In recent days, Lamias asked the people in the tent the same question---She became more and more impatient after leaving Romania.

She had solved some private problems while completing the task---although Lamias felt something not right---such as the reason why her pistol had been lost.

However, as a result, she had finished the task of the congregation and Jonathan paid the price. Both were good to her.

But it was really boring here---she simply wanted to seek for something in the monastery but the plan had been delayed by some sudden incident.

The machine for monitoring the changes of the holy-light suddenly detected a powerful ray of holy-light that appeared in the monastery--- It was much higher than the detecting limit of the

machine that the congregation provided her.

"Angel descending."

The nun had been told many times during the training in the religious congregation, that if the numerical value got to such extent, it would have a high possibility of a descent of an angel.

The staff in the tent took off the headset, turned around and looked helplessly, "No sound or movement as yesterday. But through calculation, the intensity of the inner border of the hall has doubled... Ms. Lamias, shouldn't we ask headquarters for support?"

The nun said indifferently, "If you think headquarters can provide with more staff, then go ahead, I'm glad you want to request for that."

"I'm just asking."

He knew that the congregation lacked people recently.

And also heard that a team responsible for excavating relic had been destroyed in Ulan Bator; they added more people, but there was no news about them.

Of course, as a junior staff, these were all the topics of conversation with his partners... Leave the worries of the higher-ups to the higher-ups.

"Wait, Miss Lamias! The numerical value started to decline!"

The staff said with excitement when Lamias was about to leave. She turned around and focused on the change of the numerical changes on the screen.

She felt her gun hiding in the nun robe turning hungry.

...

...

"Put an end to your wrath and be no longer bitter; do not give

way to anger which is a cause of sin."

The only small window brought light to the rough stone room; Anatoly stood in front of the light ray, praying as always.

He felt it was his instinct--- He prayed everyday since he was conscious.

Therefore, even if the holy power in his body had been sealed, and no resonance would happen, he didn't still give up this habit.

The iron gate of the stone chamber was suddenly knocked--- There was an old priest, his godfather, Maugis.

Maugis stood at the iron gate, sighing slightly; but he heard Anatoly's whisper, "My father, why did you sigh?"

Maugis shook his head, "My child, please forgive me, I have tried my best, but you can never be released from here."

Anatoly said calmly, "Father, you've done enough for me. Mr. Sullivan just sealed my holy-power, but did not destroy them. He imprisoned me here but did not expel me. Isn't it enough? God said we should feel grateful. You picked me up, so I have been living for over 20 years."

Maugis frowned, "I raised you up, no one else will know more about you than me. How could you be a heretic? Tell me, Anatoly, my child, can't you really remember what you met?"

Anatoly shook his head.

Maugis nodded reluctantly, "That person went back yesterday and we don't know when he will be coming again, so I'm afraid you have to stay here until next time he arrives."

Anatoly said indifferently, "There's water and food here, that's enough. Those priests in the monasteries are working harder than me."

Maugis wanted to say something, but a huge noise now was suddenly heard outside. Meanwhile, the ground shook slightly.

Both of them frowned subconsciously.

Maugis left the confining area quickly and walked outside. Anatoly couldn't keep calm; he looked at outside with a disturbed mind.

But the sound became more and more frequent... It was the sound of an explosion.

Vaguely, Anatoly even heard weak screams.

Soon afterwards, Maugis hurried back to the door of the stone room. His forehead was hurt, blood barely colored half of his face.

"Father!" Anatoly couldn't remain calm at this time.

But Maugis hurriedly said, "We are attacked... they, they want to grab something inside the hall! Anatoly, leave here quickly."

"No, father! How can I leave you alone! Father, you!!"

Bang.

When the door was opened, Maugis fell to the ground. He held the key in hand, but his chest was colored by blood.

"Forgive me, I cannot open Sullivan's imprisonment for you," Maugis said weakly, "Even the holy light can't work on them... their bullets that are cursed easily cut through our guard..."

"Father, don't say anything! Let me help you stop bleeding!"

"No ... no ... come to my ears, I have something to tell you..."

Anatoly had to bow his head.

Maugis took out something and put into his palm.

"Please... keep the faith in your heart, no matter the time... and the place ... but ..." Maugis's voice turned weaker, "But... if one day you're really confused...and with suspicion in mind...then go, go find...find..."

"Father!!!"

Maugis closed his eyes, before finishing his words.

Anatoly stared at the thing his godfather gave him at the end---a black card.

...

...

The light shields enchanted by golden holy light had been penetrated easily by bullets.

Lamias, holding two guns, easily walked in the thirteenth hall of the abbey. The nun looked at the last person--- the monastery's dean.

Several priests had fallen into a pool of blood beside him.

"Without holy light, you're not even as strong as a veteran." Lamias sneered.

"Cursed weapons... Black Religious Congregation has developed such an abyssal weapon!" The dean of the abbey looked very calm.

He didn't seem to be afraid at all, as his life went to its end.

Lamias spinned her silver gun and smiled, "I added some of Impaling Duke's blood with some other materials and it has such an obvious effect, doesn't it?"

"What's your purpose?"

"What's hiding under your feet, Mr. Dean?"

"Sure enough..." The dean's face changed drastically. "You even want to taint it?"

"For the new world."

Lamias said indifferently, while the cursed bullet was shot out from the silver pistol, striking through the dean's forehead.

After making sure that this old man could never stand up, Lamias took out the communication device, "Call the priest team to come in and erode away the array, take out the holy remains. In

addition, wipe out all the people here and arrange for our men to be stationed here... From now on, Pechersk is our property."

"Miss Lamias, we caught a guy, who seems to be imprisoned in the dungeon. He probably ran out during the chaos."

"Does he have holy power?" Lamias asked indifferently.

"We didn't detect that."

"Hmm..." Lamias thought for a moment, "Only sinners or heresy will be imprisoned. Since he has no holy power, then catch him. Maybe he will be useful later."

"I got it!"

Lamias put down the communication device, taking a glance at the thirteenth hall. She pointed her finger at the corpse on the ground and drew a cross on it.

Lamias smiled and turned around. She collected her pistol, "For the new world? Who will use such a ridiculous reason?"

...

...

The blood on the wall had been washed and dead bodies were taken away and incinerated. The gate was opened again, as if nothing had happened.

As to Lamias, she left this place surrounded by an immense forest via helicopter.

Chapter 322: High Weeds around the Grave

A good-looking face plus a proud figure will always attract second glances.

Especially in crowded places.

Such as an airport.

A person wearing a pair of sunglasses constantly checked the time and threw glances toward the exit repeatedly.

Suddenly, that person's legs started moving, walking towards the exit rapidly.

She must have seen the person she wanted to meet. On the other side, that man must be very fortunate and attractive enough for her to wait for such a long time.

Was he a successful man who only needed to simply carry a briefcase? Or a big-belly guy that kept receiving phone calls? Or a father holding his kid's hand that would walk out slowly?

None of the above.

It turned out to be a slightly thin man carrying a backpack... Or perhaps he should be called a big boy.

She suddenly opened her hands, apparently trying to give the boy a hug--- No matter what relationship between them, it was a thing to be envious off, wasn't it?

Unexpectedly, just when she was about to embrace him, the boy suddenly took a step back and let her hug the air.

So she gaped on the spot, freezing up in the air with both hands opened.

That was too awkward!

It was recklessly wasting the God's gift!! Bastard!!! Some men swore and felt regretful.

...

...

"I told you not to pick me up." Luo Qiu looked at Ren Ziling.

He planned to return to the club after getting off the flight. But since Boss Luo's right eyebrow twitched without reason, he sensed something terrible was waiting for him.

As expected.

Subeditor Ren showed her pitifulness, "I came here secretly under the risk of being fired..."

Boss Luo calmly said, "Then it must be a miracle that you haven't been fired these years."

Ren Ziling pretended as if she didn't hear that, saying in a rueful tone, "Do you know how many tickets I got?"

Boss Luo sighed, "Thanks for the 'hard' work of Uncle Ma."

Ren Ziling almost choked, "Do you know I haven't even taken my lunch?"

Luo Qiu pointed to his own lips, talking indifferently, "Before saying this, can you wipe my mouth first? I don't remember you having such greasy lip gloss."

Subeditor Ren showed him her middle finger, "F*ck! I don't want to live any longer!!!"

"You have worked hard," Boss Luo smiled softly.

The resentment of Subeditor Ren suddenly vanished. Her squinted eyes were hidden under the tea-coloured sunglasses, "What did you say? I didn't hear it."

"I didn't say anything, let's go now." Luo Qiu shook his head, walking by Ren Ziling.

Subeditor Ren was still starved for the greeting between relatives; she rubbed with the hands...'I want to pinch this guy's

ears!'

"Oh, where's You Ye? Why didn't I see her?"

She gave up pinching his ears, but walked quickly to Luo Qiu, looking up and asking.

"She had something to handle, so came back on the previous flight."

"Oh..." Ren Ziling complained, "You should tell me that earlier, I've booked a restaurant and wanted to treat you on arrival! You must not like eating foreign food...Hey, wait! Brat, wait me! Hey... Oh, are you getting taller? Hey...F*ck."

...

...

In Subeditor Ren's car, she rubbed her palms, putting her hands on the steering wheel. She licked her lips, and was about to step on the gas heavily.

"Do you have the habit that wearing sunglasses while driving?" Unexpectedly, Luo Qiu asked suddenly, "It's a cloudy day today."

Ren Ziling suddenly smiled and turned to him, blinking eyes with a V posture, acting cute and saying softly, "Don't you think I'm so beautiful now?"

Luo Qiu shook his head, abruptly hand picked off her sunglasses. Immediately, Ren Ziling's smile froze.

She looked down, like a frustrated dog, "Sorry, boss... I should not have stayed up for three days."

"Drive the car." Luo Qiu heaved a sigh, helping Ren Ziling put on the sunglasses.

"Aren't you angry?" Ren Ziling was surprised.

"Didn't you say you're hungry?" Luo Qiu shook his head, "I want to eat something as well. Since you book the restaurant, then don't

waste time."

"Oh yeah!"

A red MINI-CLUBMAN was driven onto the airport road.

When did they change their roles from the guardian and the person under guardianship? As viewing the landscape, Luo Qiu was lost in thought.

Luo Qiu didn't speak any words, so Ren Ziling turned on the radio.

"... the new today, according to the news reports, a young man fell to death from a building at about 3:30 a.m. today. He's suspected of committing suicide."

Ren Ziling subconsciously turned up the sound.

"The deceased is said to be a high school student in the city. The evidence has precluded the possibility of murder. According to information, the deceased might have an emotional instability due to academic stress..."

Upon hearing this, Ren Ziling suddenly muttered, "One more suicide? Why are so many people committing suicide recently?"

"Recently?" Luo Qiu shifted attention to her.

Ren Ziling nodded, "Yeah, it's the fourth one, right? They are all students...Do students have such a high pressure to study? It's kind of weird..."

"Pay attention of the road..."

"Oh? Wow! F*ck!! Do you know how to drive! Old driver!!"

...

...

Hey~(hey~)

A song called 'Come And Get Your Love' had been being played from the old photograph in the club lobby.

With the rhythm, Tai Yinzi, who wore leggings without the wild curl-up, was enjoying the slow rock while holding a glass of mescal in the front of the bar counter.

Oh right, Tai Yinzi also imitated and hummed even though his pitch was weird.

Unlike Black Soul Envoys, according to the 500-year contract, Tai Yinzi thought he was just a contract worker at most... so he didn't need to work so hard.

Moreover, he had long since given up the thought of recovering his peak with his performance, then beating the servant girl and successfully getting the promotion.

He was living well now.

The boss and the servant girl were not here, so he could do whatever he wanted. That was so great...those days without the boss.

"Hey~(hey~)...Come~And~Get~You~Love...Hey~"

As enjoying the rock, Tai Yinzi slowly moving his body and came to Qin Chuyu--- this woman disappeared but sneaked into the club a while later, when the boss had gone on his travels.

However, as a temporary resident in the club, Tai Yinzi couldn't do anything to Qin Chuyu... Yu Sanniang, even if he was sick of her.

Moreover... he could not beat her at all.

He couldn't beat her, but was still bearing a grudge, 'I can't beat you, but I can disgust you. I know you didn't like such a noisy environment.'

Tai Yinzi saw through Qin Chuyu's thoughts. Training her temperament using the club's mysterious power? No way, he would never let her sit in meditation peacefully.

"Hey~Hey~"

Tai Yinzi amplified his voice around Qin Chuyu---he was pleased with himself, because he knew Qin Chuyu couldn't do anything to him.

At the moment, Qin Qiuyu, who was closing her eyes for rest, suddenly opened her eyes and said indifferently, "Idling about and ignoring your proper occupation, aren't you afraid of being blamed after your boss comes back?"

"Hey ~ slave girl, didn't you hear 'Even emperors cannot reach a high mountain' in five hundred years?" Taiyin said with disdain, "Now master is not here, and neither are the other Black Soul Envoys! I'm the boss here now, understand?"

"The useless you?" Qin Chuyu indifferently glanced.

Just like five hundred years ago, Tai Yinzi couldn't bear the scornful look now.

Tai Yinzi sneered, "Why not? I'm an envoy transformed by the master, a legal member here! But you, are just a renter living here shamelessly, at most... no, you're not even considered as a tenant!"

Qin Chuyu didn't say anything, slowly closing his eyes.

Tai Yinzi willfully tried to disturb Qin Chuyu's mind. Now he got close, bowing his head and smiled evilly, "You're just a lowly person here! Do you know what a lowly person means? To serve people! Slave b*tch, you wear the servant suit, you must obediently serve your grandfather, me! Go get me some feet-washing water!"

"Oh, is that so?"

"Yeah!" That's right." Tai Yinzi nodded, sipping a mouthful of mescal... But he didn't swallow it, because he felt something wrong.

'It wasn't Qin Chuyu who responded to me?' But it was a woman's voice... There should not be other women except that slave b*tch.

'And, the sound is familiar... Ms. Ms. You Ye!" Tai Yinzi turned

around, his body becoming stiff suddenly.

The tea cup even dropped from his hand; however it slowly flew to the hand of the servant girl before falling down to the ground.

You Ye revealed a slight smile, slowly walking to Tai Yinzi, and softly said, "Hold it tightly. Oh, you drank all. How about I add some more for you? Lord... Tai Yinzi."

The gentle tone let Tai Yinzi felt a chill, as if eating a bar of a one-thousand-year ice. "No no no, thanks, I can do it myself..."

Miss Maid smiled faintly, "That's OK. You said that one wearing the f*ckin servant suit is just a lowly person. I didn't grow up in an eastern country, but I know what 'lowly person' mean, and what it should do. 'Lowly person' should be serving others, shouldn't it? Let me go get you some feet-washing water, okay?"

The five-hundred-year-old devil suddenly felt his legs turned limp and feeble, kneeling on the ground, and begging for mercy, "Miss You Ye, please... please forgive me..."

This time, what he sought was not trouble, but death!!!

Tai Yinzi mood changed, as if seeing his own tomb...

In China, it says 'Left eyebrow twitching means one will receive money, and right eyebrow twitching means a disaster will happen.'

Chapter 323: Reasonable Boss Luo

He could clearly hear each sound. Gasps, heartbeats, and even footsteps--- Which all came from himself.

Besides that.

Besides that, he was unable to hear other sounds and finally he came to the iron gate of the roof.

He was a seventeen or eighteen-year-old boy.

His sight seemed to be infinitely reduced and he could only see the things ahead. Everything else around seemed to be blurred.

When he opened the iron door, the wind on the tall building hit him and blew his clothes that were clinging to his body.

He was still panting, with his heart beating fast. However, it was not because he ran up the corridor or due to strenuous exercises.

He was nervous. Nevertheless, he bit his teeth and walked toward the fence of the roof, as if possessed.

His breathing became faster while he was climbing over the fence--- And on the other side was an empty space.

Below was the road, from a height of fifty meters--- However, this building was obviously not the highest in this vicinity.

He climbed over the fence with trembling legs, but the place where he could put his feet was only an eave that was half the width of his feet.

His hands still clung to the fence and his back was tightly attached to the wall. Suddenly, he took a look at the underside of his feet.

His body seemed to be infinitely inclined, and a feeling of vertigo stuck the depth of his soul, making him instinctively close his eyes.

He felt as if he was spinning and could hardly stand.

Suddenly, he gulped several mouthfuls of air and then cried out... He was opening his hands.

But just when he came face to face with death, the scene where his family of three had a meal quickly flashed through his brain.

The young boy suddenly turned around, hastily and clumsily turning over the fence to return to the safe place inside.

He slowly slipped down against the fence and sat on the ground with his face pale and eyes glazed. It was cold.

He curled up.

After a long time, he put out his cell phone from his pocket to write the message, " I... I failed, I can't do it, I'm sorry."

Then, sent it out.

...

"I'm sorry! Miss You Ye! I deserve to die! Though I have practiced Taoism a hundred years and meditated five hundred years in the white jade token, I haven't controlled my emotions, letting hatred dominate myself and did such an ashamed thing... Well, can you put me down? It's a bit awkward."

Normally, Black Souls could turn into black smoke and escape from being trapped. But Tai Yinzi couldn't move at all.

Nobody knew what was restraining him.

"Tai Yinzi, haven't you said you want me to punish you to reflect on yourself?" Miss Maid just lowered her head to carefully wipe the cup on the bar --- This cup was exclusive for Boss Luo's use.

"Yeah..." Tai Yinzi was lost for words and sighed.

He took a glance at Qin Chuyu who was quietly resting in the corner. The saying goes, 'Enemies see red the moment they meet.' Now Tai Yinzi was really red-eyed, thinking of events five hundred years ago.

Damn... Similar things seemed to have happened five hundred years ago.

Qin Chuyu thoughtfully opened her eyes all of a sudden and looked toward the gate of the club. However, Miss Maid had come out of the bar and stood in front of the door.

Of course, Miss Maid had smoothly put a rag into the mouth of Tai Yinzi to stop his words.

Ring---!

The boss of the club had arrived.

Luo Qiu looked at the familiar hall with a small bag in hand, "Miss Qin come back?"

Qin Chuyu lightly said, "The money from selling Qin Fang's estate has been given to Gao Rui's daughter."

"Has it?" Luo Qiu laughed, "Well done."

Qin Chuyu suddenly said, "I haven't told her anything about Gao Rui and Qin Fang."

Luo Qiu nodded and softly said, "Then I will have to thank you on behalf of the professor... Oh, yes, this is for you. "

He gave the bag to Qin Chuyu who was confused; and then he said, "A gift."

Qin Chuyu did nothing, but just nodded, and then closed her eyes again--- The mysterious atmosphere began to liven up here since the boss came back.

Obviously she didn't want to waste such an atmosphere that could temper her.

"She's really a diligent person."

Luo Qiu just took a look at her. He was not an enemy of Qin Chuyu, or even Yu Sanniang five hundred years ago.

Boss Luo simply observed the strange Taoist nun as a spectator---

Though it was difficult to evaluate her works, what was undeniable was her diligence... or it could be called persistence.

"Do you want afternoon tea, master?"

"No, I'll go downstairs."

Boss Luo had many things to sacrifice after he came back from Russia. Miss Maid said nothing and continued her daily cleaning since she knew what her master would do.

Before going downstairs, Luo Qiu suddenly turned around as if he noticed Tai Yinzi, he curiously asked, "Oh, what did Tai Yinzi do?"

'Master, you finally noticed me!' Tai Yinzi goggled his eyes and swayed his body.

You Ye tilted her head, "Perhaps Tai Yinzi has developed some strange hobbies during the time we left."

Luo Qiu was surprised with his mouth opened.

Let's talk about Tai Yinzi.

He was tied up in a special way. A black rope tightly crossed his chest and his hands and feet were tied behind his back, showing a "U" shape.

Oh, he was hanging from the ceiling.

After a while, Boss Luo came out from his stupor of surprise and nodded, "Well... they're really special hobbies."

'Master! Listen to me, it's not like that! Really not like that!"

Tai Yinzi could only whimper because his mouth had been plugged, and his struggling body waved like a swinging pendulum.

Luo Qiu shook his head, "All right, don't worry about me. I think my ability to accepting things isn't that weak. Well... Even if you have those hobbies, I wouldn't despise you. Oh, this is a really good way of binding. have you practiced it for a long time?"

'It's really... really not like that!'

"Take care of the club these days, it might be a little long." Luo Qiu just looked at You Ye.

"I know."

Miss Maid stood still, and watched her master walking to the corridor of the basement.

Tai Yinzi grew his eyes wider before successfully pushing out the rag with his tongue. He spoke just as the boss disappeared, "Let me... explain..."

But Boss Luo disappeared.

Tai Yinzi... felt the deep malice from the black-hearted maid of the club.

Oh no... His illustrious name has been completely destroyed!

Qin Chuyu who was closing her eyes and mediating also felt this and lightly smiled.

Maybe she felt this was interesting.

...

Colorful, pink... When the light ball fell into the altar, Luo Qiu thought of an old question again.

'Where did they go, or what they will bring for the altar?'

He didn't know.

But he sensed this sacrifice gave him a feeling of satisfaction--- All kinds of weird abilities were enhanced.

But now he didn't care much about this, because he could get them after he completed the transaction--- What he cared about was that he had got the second golden and silver card.

"What kind of change will the second card contribute to the altar... Let me see."

The golden and silver card lay quietly in front of Lou Qiu. The altar, once again, slowly rose up, revealing the hidden part of it.

Chapter 324: Border Gate

Liquid-like rolling black smoke was rising from the bottom of the altar.

Luo Qiu, who had experienced this not long ago, was not surprised. He directly went to the altar after all the hidden parts rose.

A card had been embedded into one of seven card slots--- Unlike the first time, the altar seemed to be more active; and the second suspending golden and silver card slowly flew into another card slot.

It wasn't next to the first, but separated by two slots.

Did they have their corresponding positions?

Thinking about this, Luo Qiu looked up at the projection on the altar--- Which hadn't changed since it appeared.

A dead pale sphere... the Earth.

When the second golden and silver card, given by the former boss, was embedded in its slot, the stopped time also passed by.

Because it was just less than a second--- Luo Qiu could accurately know his time.

His existence was no longer relying on metabolisms--- Because his life now depended totally on concrete value.

And this value was time. He had no fixed time, no fixed life. It seemed that some kind of accurate counter was hiding in his body.

So he knew his time(lifespan) more than anyone else.

...

"Nothing?" Luo Qiu frowned at this time.

The second golden and silver card didn't bring him a surprise... The altar didn't have any changes, so Luo Qiu subconsciously

observed the new card.

But he vaguely realized something about the strange paused time. Luo Qiu closed his eyes to recall.

Nothing really happened?

No... A ripple, which started with the altar as the center, had swung open, like the droplets dripping from stalactites into the pool.

Its speed was incalculable, and it extended limitlessly to far distance, as if there was no end.

Luo Qiu had a feeling that maybe he opened... a gear.

...

Luo Qiu took two hours or more in the basement. With no results even after carefully thinking, he had to temporarily give up.

The former boss wouldn't let Arex send the second golden and silver card without any reason... What's more, the former boss may not know that Luo Qiu had gotten the first card by chance.

Maybe the purpose of sending this card was only noticed by him in the hidden part of the altar.

"Is it for arising my curiosity, and letting me collect the rest of the cards?"

He could only get this conclusion.

Of course, he didn't think the former boss was scheming something--- Every club boss had their own mysterious sense--- like a Sixth Sense.

And the sense never made any mistakes since it was born.

Luo Qiu didn't sense any malevolence in this matter. And Alex said the former boss... was dying.

"Master, you came back."

"Yeah. I've stayed there for a while." Luo Qiu responded, but he

saw a different smile on Miss Maid's face.

"Is there something happy that happened?" Luo Qiu curiously asked.

"Master, the border gate is opened, isn't it a happy thing?" You Ye congratulated in a soft voice.

"The border gate?" Luo Qiu was astonished... Who knew what a border gate was.

You Ye was astounded, she touched her lips with a finger, "I don't know... I think master have opened it."

"Take me to see what it is." Luo Qiu frowned.

He thought the border gate might be somewhere else, but unexpectedly it was in the hall of the club.

There were another two black doors in the modest hall, along with the old wooden door for customers.

They were standing on both sides of the hall, with no handles.

Qin Chuyu quietly observing everything was also surprised by the two doors--- Luo Qiu sat before one door, and pushed the door open without saying anything.

"This is..."

The upright black door wasn't attached to the wall; Luo Qiu didn't see a tunnel.

As if accessing another world --- Of course, it was just his feeling.

Because he only saw a black whirlpool through the door frame.

"Master, come with me, please." Miss Maid quietly said at this time.

Soon after, they came to the second floor of the club. You Ye smiled, "Master, the border gate is actually a passage for customers, allowing more convenience to customers so that they can come here at any time."

"Tell me the detail."

You Ye nodded, "Well, it's similar to a network. There are club points in different places all over the world. As long as the customers go near those points, it is possible to become the guests of the club, and can call the door out through that point to directly send themselves to us."

"Transmission?" Luo Qiu was surprised, "Like I can go anywhere I want to go?"

Of course, places that Boss Luo wanted to go instantly was limited to just his own city--- But the distance may have increased.

Luo Qiu vaguely felt he could freely shuttle back and forth among several nearby cities--- After he had sacrificed those souls.

"Of course it isn't a physical transmission." You Ye shook her head, "The customers who went through the border gate can use their spirits or souls to talk with the club. Well, master, now you can light up two 'points'."

"Only two?" Luo Qiu was stunned--- he thought the two points could start all border doors.

"Yes, one door matches one point." You Ye lightly said, "The border gate represents the increase of master's ability, when your ability is stronger, you can light up more points."

Boss Luo subconsciously said, "How many points did the former boss have?"

You Ye shook her head, "I'm not sure, but according to the customers I had met, at least more than three hundred points. But only the boss knows his own amount."

"Three hundred..."

Luo Qiu was surprised by the number, but he knew how long the former had been the boss. He on the other hand...

Less than five months.

Luo Qiu could light up the existing two points or another two new points according to his interests. But once the point was opened, closing them would 'burn' part of the boss's lifespan as the price.

Why was it described as 'burn'?

Because it took a hundred years of lifespan to close one point.

The existence of points was quite merciful.. not.

Boss Luo subconsciously said, "How many points does the former boss have?"

'Three hundred points... Is our hall enough to stuff three hundred doors?' Luo Qiu suddenly thought.

"There are only two border doors, but different points can be overlapped to the gate. So it won't need much space."

"This is probably one of the better news I've heard." Luo Qiu nodded, "But let me think how to open the points."

Miss Maid had no opinion on her master's decision.

Thinking about his remaining lifespan, if Luo Qiu opened one, he could not close for quite a long time.

Even if he could open more points in the future, Luo Qiu just wanted to control the amount... Or he might not even plan to open any.

300 points... what a great number!

But what if customers came in great numbers? Boss Luo would even have no time to even go to the toilet.

Luo Qiu suddenly realized why the former boss cared about nothing after transaction... Because the customers were too many, and he lost the interest in following-up those services.

The more the businesses had, the less time he would have.

Another problem was that You Ye had thought Luo Qiu was the

one who opened this door---Since he could open it, then it might mean he was recognized to have that ability.

But clearly he didn't have that recognition now, that was to say---This was the promotion the second golden and silver card brought.

The club's power didn't need to be promoted; as long as the transaction succeeded, its ability would be endless... Thus, this was more like the lifting of a restriction.

Seven slots in all... Did it mean the whole function of the club would be unlocked if they gathered all the cards?

But Luo Qiu didn't know what other functions did the club have, besides the ones needed to be used to complete transactions?

...

"Well, this can be explained downstairs, why come up to talk about it?" Luo Qiu suddenly asked, puzzled.

Miss Maid gently said with her beautiful blue eyes opened, "Since master is puzzled by these things, then how can I let others see master's puzzled look? It would be embarrassing for Master."

You Ye... was really great.

Boss Luo suddenly wanted to say something, but the strange urge was watered down in an instant.

At last, he just smiled slightly.

Chapter 325: Studious Butterfly Monster

"Uncle Mouse, this is your medicine, remember to take it four times a day, and..."

The butterfly monster who had been working for a long time in Long Xiruo's pet hospital now was telling the details to the 'patient', "... And, and what? "

"... It doesn't matter, I know it anyway." Uncle Demon Mouse rapidly waved his hand.

"No, this is my job. I must do it well."

Why?

Uncle Demon Mouse glanced at this new and popular receptionist butterfly monster, who kept asking himself why.

'There already a math book on your desk, why can't you remember the words for patients?'

"Right! At last, remember to clean up before you go to bed every day. Dr. Long said the reason for your recurring skin disease is because you are too dirty and didn't take baths."

This butterfly was really cute. If it were not to get his son's asthma medicine this time, he would have flirted with her to recall the memory of youth.

"Dad, your tail has risen up."

"Get out here!" Uncle Demon Mouse pushed his son and awkwardly left.

He didn't want to break this purity which was almost extinct in these creatures, he was just thinking about it. It was hard to stop a middle-aged mouse monster from being dissolute.

"She's really popular, not like the old freeloader in the office."

After sending Uncle Demon Mouse away, Luo Dance suddenly

heard such sharp words.

Yes. Sister Long called Miss Su Zijun 'a freeloader'.

"Sister Zijun, Don't let Sister Long hear that." Butterfly monster reminded--- Even though she knew it was useless.

Long Xiruo and Su Zijun were totally incompatible, they couldn't get through a day without arguing.

Su Zijun gave a cold snort without attempting to conceal her views, "I'm not afraid, she can try to kill me if she can."

The butterfly monster wasn't surprised, she just sat down to enjoy the delicious milk. After she licked the remained milk on her lips, she took out a book to read.

"What's this?" Su Zijun took the book from the butterfly monster and casually glanced, lightly saying, "Don't waste your time on this human's book, you need to cultivate. You are too skinny, when will you become fat if you don't cultivate?"

"Fat?" Luo Dance was astonished.

She didn't know why she described as 'fat'.

Su Zijun quietly said, "I mean, more powerful."

The butterfly monster shook her feet under the table and blinked, "But my power is enough. Sister Long is here, so it's very safe. Besides, human's books are very interesting and I still don't understand many of them."

Su Zijun lightly said, "We have attained spirituality, our wisdom is much higher than human beings. You still can't understand their works? That's too bad."

Butterfly monster didn't care this; she wasn't an irritable and argued person. She still remembered what the bun boss and the landlady had taught her when she stepped into society.

For the good and pleasure of others.

"Yes, I actually don't understand. Because I just transformed recently, not like Sister Su and Sister Long." Luo Dance showed an innocent smile, "Oh! Sister Su, you have a lot of experience, your knowledge must be very rich! "

"Sort of." Su Zijun hummed.

The butterfly monster's eyes turned brightened. She hurriedly opened a page of the derivative book which she borrowed from a diseased child and piteously said, "Sister Su, can you tell me how to solve this problem? I couldn't work it out all day!"

Su Zijun glanced at this problem, turning her eyes up and down, and then stared at the butterfly monster.

She slowly lay on the floor... with her hands on her belly, sleeping like a little princess.

"Sister Su? Sister Su? Are you sleeping! It's not good to sleep on the floor!"

To Luo Dance, It was very common for Su Zijun who was of half Hanba descent to sleep all of a sudden.

"Ignore this shameless woman." Long Xiruo walked out of the office--- probably she wanted to smoke.

She went to Su Zijun, kicked her and sneered, "Pretending to sleep... Brat, this freeloader hasn't even been to kindergarten, and can't write her name, how can she teach you!"

"Ah?"

The butterfly monster was surprised when she heard this.

Long Xiruo shrugged and suddenly said, "What problems do you have today? Tell me."

Sister Long had taught her multiplication tables two weeks ago, so butterfly monster now quickly said, "Sister Long, the given function is f (x) =ax3-3x2+1, if f (x) exists x0, and x0 is greater than 0, then what is the range value of A? "

Long Xiruo calmly took a drag on her cigarette, and exhaled the smoke, "Brat, I think, no matter man or demon, they are just a freeloader if they don't work hard. This problem is not difficult to solve. But are you trying your best?"

Luo Dance unconsciously shook her head, "I just thought for a while... OK, sister Long, I will think twice, if I really can't solve it, I will ask you."

"Well, your attitude is good."

Long Xiruo walked to the pet center with the cigarette in her mouth... 'Who knew what the X and A was! Didn't she just learn multiplication two weeks ago?'

"Humans are really bored. Are four fundamental rules not enough?" Long Xiruo whispered at the door.

But the learning ability of little butterfly monster was beyond her imagination, she remembered two days ago this brat said she wanted to attend the College Entrance Exam.

It's not difficult to arrange the butterfly monster into a school and register for her. After all, some monsters have had some positions in some workplaces.

The problem was...

'I really don't know what the hell X and A is!'

Long Xiruo suddenly got an idea. She quickly threw down the cigarette, stamping it out, and then rushed to the reception to find something.

"Sister Long, what are you looking for?"

"I found it." Long Xiruo found a leaflet and took it to Luo Dance, "Go to the cram school! This College Entrance Exam school opened recently and is having a discount now!"

"But, but I have to work." Luo Dance thought for a while and shook her head, "Besides, the tuition fee is very expensive."

"It's OK, I will pay for you." Long Xiruo swung her arms, "To complete your studies!"

"Really?" The butterfly monster suddenly danced with joy.

Long Xiruo kindly touched her head... Well, now she didn't have to think what X and A was.

"Humph, is she so kind? This old hag just knows the multiplication. And she was taught by the person who found the pithy formula, do you really think she used to study in school?"

Su Zijun who was sleeping on the floor suddenly turned her body and spoke as if sleep talking.

Long Xiruo... Long Xiruo, "Well, I'll go to collect the medicine received yesterday. Ah ha ha..."

Leaving quickly.

...

In the evening, he lowered his head in his room, and his mother sat in front of him.

While his mother was holding a test paper.

"Gu Jiajie, why did you get 4 points less than the last test? Do you know how many students surpassed you?"

"Just four points, I was careless..." He wanted to say something.

But the mother strictly said, "Just four points? Gu Jiajie, what kind of attitude is this? Don't you know the importance of one point? What will you feel if you are only four points below the admission line? Aren't you feeling sad? Four points mean you will have to re-study one more year. Would you like to waste one more year on it?"

He could only shake his head.

The mother sighed, "Jiajie, mom doesn't want to scold you. Do you know how tired I and your dad are? But we don't say it after

coming home. We save money to send you to the cram school, because we hope you have more advantages than others. But are you getting lazy recently?"

"I..." He lowered his head and did not dare to see his mother's eyes.

The mother saw this, sighed again and shook head, "Think about it. Well, take a bath and go to bed early. Don't forget to memorize the English words tomorrow morning. Don't waste the best time of the day."

"I know." He nodded.

"Well, dear. We only have one kid. We want you to be successful, don't blame your mom's strictness. It's all for you." His mother gently patted his shoulder and softly said.

When the door was closed and he was alone in the room, he suddenly opened the drawer to take the hidden cell phone.

Thinking for a few moments, he quickly wrote a short message, "Teacher, are you available tomorrow evening? I want to try again."

Chapter 326: Cram School

Subeditor Ren came to the police station with two boxes of cake.

Ma Houde was attentively playing Minesweeper in the office. It was time for him to get the highest score in history.

He had played more than ten years, but he never got to the last mine during these years. Officer Ma felt God was helping him now.

He wiped the sweat on his palm before he clicked the last mine, "Come on! My prehistorical powers! It's time to witness the miracle! "

He took a deep breath to fight for the win. However, at the moment where he waited for the honor, the office door popped open.

"Old Ma! Afternoon tea!"

This nightmare voice suddenly interrupted Officer Ma, which caused his finger to unconsciously slipped... BOW!

"Ren Ziling! I hate you!"

...

"This cake is pretty good." Ma Houde took a bite, but still looked guarded at the troublesome woman, "How many tickets are there in this month? Honestly, if it's more than ten, I'm not doing it!"

"Just ten."

"..." Ma Houde massaged his eyebrows, sighing, and picking up the second cake.

It was free anyway and he had to do the work... Better to eat more and take profits rather than giving them to outsiders, "Has little Luo Qiu come back?"

"Yes! He came back yesterday... Oh, this is a gift for you from him."

Looking at the ashtray, Officer Ma joyfully lifted it to look up and down, "Perfect! Luo Qiu knows my favorite!"

Soon after.

Ma Houde came close with his body bent over the desk and asked, "You say little Luo Qiu has a girlfriend, what's she like?"

"Ma Houde, when did you become so gossipy?" Ren Ziling smiled, "Not busy recently? Haven't you said you are working on creating a civilized city and became dog-tired?"

Ma Houde just replied, "That's over, the city leaders are already very kind, still coming to the office instead of lying at home."

"Are you really free recently?" Ren Ziling suddenly asked.

"I have no information for you." Ma Houde knew clearly what the woman thought, "Recently everywhere is peaceful! No strange cases, except thefts. If you're interested in, go get it from them."

"You said suicides happened where several people died?"

"But as you said, it's suicide right?" Ma Houde still fiddled with the ashtray, "Forensic expert Old Qin also agreed with it. It's rather coincidental that all of them are good students in different schools without any personal animosity. But..."

"But what?" Ren Ziling's eyes were brightened.

Ma Houde turned his eyes, "Can you turn off your recorder? Have I allowed you to record?"

Subeditor Ren smiled awkwardly.

Ma Houde took a puff on his cigarette, "But all of them are from one cram school which opened recently. This cram school hasn't revealed anything amiss, it has a license and experienced retired teachers."

Ren Ziling frowned, "But isn't it strange that the students are all from the cram school?"

"Yes. It is." Ma Houde nodded, "The question is that there are all suicides. The surveillance camera has even recorded one of them initially walking up to the roof. Forensic experts and evidence department have the same conclusion. This case is done, and relatives of the dead have brought the body back. I can do nothing. What's more, how will the cram school get profit if students all commit suicide?"

Officer Ma shrugged, "I can only say that students have too much pressure. Many students commit suicide each day in the country. Ordinary people may not know that, but you should know it."

"Give me the address of the cram school." Ren Ziling suddenly spread her hands.

"What do you want to do? It's done, don't make it worse."

"Get more prior information for my grandson! Maybe he might have to sit for the College Entrance Exam in the future." Ren Ziling had her eyes widely opened.

"Grand, grandson??" Ma Houde was gaped to slap the table and jump up, "Little Luo Qiu is f*cking great! Wow! Having a child before marriage! As expected of Brother Luo's son!"

"What are you talking about?! I say prior, prior!" Ren Ziling sighed and muttered, "But I wish he had such good energy."

"Don't scare me..."

...

Looking at Ren Ziling contentedly leaving the office with the address, Black Soul No. 18 felt some pressure... Was it good to listen as they discuss the new boss here?

When was the end of this task?

Black Soul No.18 sighed and began to float up... This woman drove so fast that she would be gone if one's attention slips for a moment.

"Black Soul No.18, please stop."

"Ah, Miss You Ye!"

Black Soul No.18 hurriedly turned around and saw the servant girl who was catching a big bag of vegetables, " Why are you here? Miss You Ye."

"18, prepare to meet the new master." You Ye lightly ordered.

Black Soul No.18 was stunned, "But don't I need to protect Miss Ren?"

Miss Maid lightly said, "The new master has opened the border gate, and I can't hide you anymore. Besides, with the ability of the new owner, we don't need you to do this anymore."

"Have opened the border gate?" Black Soul No.18 happily said, "No wonder I have had an instinctive feeling to stay away from Miss Ren since yesterday."

To the scattered black souls envoys all over the world, the opening of border gate really gave great convenience for their works--- If the points were enough, every Black Soul Envoy would have their own "site" to live and need not all stay in one place to compete against one another.

As for her feeling to stay away, maybe it was because of the will of the boss--- This unintentional will was very obvious to black souls.

"Well, the new master hasn't officially opened his point." You Ye lightly said, "If Master doesn't want to, we don't mention it."

"I know." Black Soul No.18 nodded with helplessness.

He knew Miss Maid was reminding him not to let the new master put the point in her former area.

Since Miss Maid was born three hundred years ago, those arrogant Black Soul Envoys were all dead.

"Have a rest these days." You Ye nodded, "I will go back to

prepare dinner for the master."

"Take care, Miss You Ye."

...

The club.

Luo Qiu habitually drank a mouth of the black tea. Then, he found the taste was different, so he unconsciously looked up.

It was Qin Chuyu, not You Ye.

"Your servant girl went to the market, she told me to give you a refill." Qin Chuyu said calmly.

Maybe there was nothing to be dissatisfied about.

"Can you get used to living here?" Luo Qiu put the cup down and quietly asked.

Qin Chuyu said, "To me, everywhere is the same. But I can recover faster here."

Luo Qiu curiously asked, "Tai Yinzi said, the skill in the white jade token can be gained by a few people and was even lost in your generation. Only you succeed in the last five hundred years."

"What do you want to say?" Qin Chuyu indifferently said.

Luo Qiu smiled, "I'm just curious if there is someone like you... succeeding and living forever. "

"Don't you know everything?" Qin Chuyu lightly said, "Why do you ask me?"

Boss Luo just laughed but didn't answer---He couldn't say because it was free to get information from you.

"Except me, only two people succeed. One was my teacher, the other is the founder." Qin Chuyu suddenly said, "I am also looking for them."

Luo Qiu thought for a while, and suddenly said, "Why don't you ask us to find them?"

"That's unnecessary." Qin Chuyu returned to mediate at the corner of the hall, and she indifferently said, "This is also a part of cultivating."

At last, she closed her eyes to meditate in her own world.

Luo Qiu suddenly felt her meditation appearance was very familiar.

Right... He remembered the statue which his first golden and silver card was hidden.

Maybe he also forgot himself and objects.

Boss Luo shook his head and continued looking the world map... The monks' world was complex.

Then it's better to think about the place to set the point.

...

"... No. 24, Gaojing Road... Yes, right here."

Finding the destination after she checked the address, Ren Ziling stopped the car. She looked around, and found it was full of office buildings around. The commercial street was two kilometers away.

This quiet place full of office buildings seemed to be more suitable for the cram schools.

"The boss of this cram school is very attentive."

Ren Ziling just took a glance and then she was about to go up to the floor of the cram school.

Before the lift was closed, a hurried voice came out, "Wait, please wait!"

Ren Ziling pressed the opening button and saw a pretty clean girl ran in, who seemed eighteen or nineteen years old.

Well, with a box of whole milk.

Was she also coming for cram school?

Chapter 327: Which Deity You Are

"Which floor are you going?"

Ren Ziling decided to investigate this little girl.

The little girl was stunned for a moment, then she hurriedly brought out a folded flyer, "Which... Ah! Found it, eleventh floor, please!"

"Eleventh floor..." Ren Ziling looked at the little girl, "Do you want to enroll in the cram school?"

"Yes!" The little girl showed a very bright smile, "Sister Long recommended it to me."

Who knew what Sister Long was... But Ren Ziling thought the little girl may not have stepped into society.

A rare girl, giving out information about herself so easily.

"Auntie, are you also going there?" The little girl suddenly asked with her head tilted.

What!... Auntie?

Ren Ziling approached the little girl silently, making the girl unconsciously stepped back--- Until her body completely attached to the lift.

"What's, what's the matter?" The little girl was a little flurried.

The spell which Sister Long cast would not make her easily recognized by other people so she could do everything safely outside.

"Look at me, yes! Look at my face." Ren Ziling squinted, "Well. That's right. Tell me, do I look at an 'Auntie'?"

"Wrinkle, wrinkles... Dark circles and pimples." The little girl who was protecting her whole milk with one hand, saying in a cold sweat and swallowing saliva.

Ren Ziling stepped back as if being shocked; she turned about, fishing out a mirror and gazed at herself carefully.

My God! She didn't have a regular schedule these days when Luo Qiu went abroad--- Working overtime and eating instant noodles. Though she knew she had dark circles, but when did the wrinkles come out? Damn... even pimples!

'But why could the little girl clearly see these? I didn't notice them before I go out... Just two shallow...'

"Ah... Elder sister, are you Ok?" The little girl felt strange and asked.

"Nothing, I'm just... feeling a little sad." Ren Ziling looked at the lift lights, as if looking at the lonely world on the peak.

"Guo Siniang?" The little girl was surprised and innocently blurted out, "Sister Long has said, who have read the book of Guo Siniang are old."

"I don't want to see you again!"

When the lift opened, Ren Ziling rushed out and left with grief.

...

But soon Ren Ziling saw the little girl again--- At the reception of the cram school.

"Please fill in this form first. This is yours..." The receptionist gave the form to the little girl, and then looked at Ren Ziling, "Miss, are you also coming to register?"

"Yes, any problem?" Subeditor Ren coldly said, and then she glanced at the little girl nearby.

The little girl felt the murderous look, so she lowered her head, and wondered if this Auntie had recognized her identity.

"No, no." The receptionist was stunned and then politely said, "No problem, we also have a special class for the adult's College Entrance Exam."

"Can I know about your teachers and your teaching conditions first?" Ren Ziling asked.

The receptionist smiled, "Yes, of course."

She looked at her colleague nearby and said, "Miss Liu, take this lady to visit our classrooms."

Ren Ziling left with another receptionist.

When the murderous eyes were gone, the little girl lightly sighed and drank the whole milk to steady her nerves, "I'm done!"

"Well... Luo Dance, really a good name." The receptionist looked at the clear girl with a smile, and couldn't help admiring the youth.

"Really?" The butterfly monster laughed and said, "It's given by a nice boss."

The receptionist didn't ask more, but carefully looked at her form.

Soon she frowned and said, "Well, Miss, can you take a seat over there?"

"Oh, OK!"

Seeing this smart little girl go away, the receptionist made a call to her leader, "Manager, there is a customer, her educational background is home-schooled, is that OK?"

"Home-schooled? Give her a paper for a test first."

"OK." The receptionist nodded, then she waved her hand toward Luo Dance, "Ms. Luo, please follow me, you need to have a test."

"Well."

...

Ren Ziling walked around, but didn't find anything wrong.

Just as Ma Houde said, most of the teachers here were retired teachers--- And it was inappropriate to meet the boss of the cram school now.

Subeditor Ren who was unwilling to identify herself now lost interest. She went back to the reception, but she didn't find the little girl.

"Is there anything else I can do for you, Miss?"

"Do you have any materials or pamphlets? I want to take them home." Ren Ziling said.

The receptionist nodded, "Of course, wait a minute."

Ren Ziling idly leaned on the desk, and suddenly saw the form, "Luo Dance? What a weird name! Have her father watched too many costume dramas? 18 years old?"

Ren Ziling suddenly squinted eyes, licking her lips, and laughing viciously like a naughty child; she quietly picked up a pen, "You deserve it!"

She turned "1" into "7", then the little girl became 78 years old.

Subeditor Ren was always wild about mischief.

...

"OK, we'll tell you the test result later." The receptionist looked at Luo Dance... The little girl did the tests very fast, finishing three tests within one and a half hours.

"Oh, please check your information. If there's no problem, please wait for our notice." The receptionist looked at the form, "Well, you seem to have wrote something wrong here?"

"Ah?"

"78." The receptionist laughed, "78 years old."

The butterfly monster gaped. It was impossible. Because she had checked several times to avoid exposing herself.

But... 78 was her real age. Although she became a monster for only a short time, it was really her demon age.

The butterfly monster sniffed the form... She smelt the odor of

that elder sister.

'I thought so! She saw me through!'

'What should I do?'

The butterfly monster quickly corrected it and left the cram school, but before going out, she seemed to meet someone...

It was a boy around 18, as if with something on his mind.

"Oh, I'm sorry!"

Luo Dance quickly apologized and went to a place without people to make a call, "Help! Sister Long, someone has recognized me... Yes, a woman... I don't know, no demon aura... Uh, her eyes are terrible... Really! She knows my age! 78 years old... What should I do?"

"A woman? Recognizing you in one glance?" Long Xiruo frowned, an experienced old demon could recognize the background of the small one, but accurately knowing the age, it sounded incredible.

In normal conditions, she couldn't even do that, "What else did she say?"

The butterfly monster thought for a while and said, "She said, 'I don't want to see you again...'"

Long Xiruo nodded, "I see, come back first."

After hanging up the phone, Long Xiruo squinted her eyes, "How dare you threaten my girl! I'd like to see which deity you are."

Chapter 328: The Fifth Suicide

Just as he just entered the classroom, he heard some whispers.

He quickly took his seat. In front of him were students from different schools with different uniforms.

Just like him, they didn't stay for evening classes. Compared to attending evening class, their parents would rather send them here.

These retired teachers had more experience--- Parents thought so.

They were talking about the latest events concerning the jumps---because they heard all were peers in the same cram school.

There were five classes now with 15-20 students for each. And the sixth class was about to be arranged.

It had the best conditions and teachers... even first-hand papers. Many parents were attracted to this place even though the tuition fee was high.

"OK, let's get ready for class. Tonight we are going to analyze this year's test paper from the Shandong province. Concentrate and don't be distracted. Remember, the College Entrance Exam is a single-log bridge and there are so many students competing with you... "

The temper of this retired old man did not seem to diminished. Gu Jiajie started to concentrate when he saw other students being so serious.

This old man was very famous as a 'Bad Guy' among those teachers of the cram school.

But at this moment his cell phone suddenly vibrated. Gu Jiajie carefully took a glance at the old teacher on the platform and then turned to his cell phone.

A short message.

"Nine o'clock, the same place."

...

"I'm back."

Luo Qiu, who was cleaning the room, saw Ren Ziling tiredly walk in as the door opened.

Subeditor Ren showed an ugly smile when she saw the clean living room. She sighed, slumped on the sofa and waved her hands, "I planned to clean up before you come back, but... I forgot."

Luo Qiu who was used to her indolence said nothing but gave a cup of warm water to Ren Ziling.

"Thank you..." Ren Ziling murmured, but then she suddenly sat up and said, "Boy, sit here."

She patted the seat next to her.

"No."

"..." Ren Ziling was stunned, she angrily held the arm of Boss Luo in an instant, "Damn! Sit down and look at me!"

"What's the matter?"

"Look at me." Ren Ziling patted her face, "Carefully look at my face! Boy, answer my question honestly! "

But before Subeditor Ren asked the question.

Luo Qiu lightly said, "Dark circles, two wrinkles and pimples. Maybe these are what you want to ask me. It's not a huge problem, just don't stay up and don't eat instant noodles. Oh, drink more warm water and not beverages."

Ren Ziling was totally shocked and she piteously said, "So, I really look like an 'Auntie'?"

Luo Qiu opened the TV and said, "What happened today?"

"Today a little girl had called me 'Auntie'! Oh, My God! I'm just twenty-nine years old!"

"Yes, you are an auntie."

"Brat! Are you really my boy? Kicking me when I am down!" Ren Ziling sadly said, "This Luo Family likes to bully me!"

"Luo Family?" Luo Qiu was stunned.

"The surname of the little girl is also Luo!" Ren Ziling hummed, "Maybe five hundred years ago you were relatives... She has nothing, except being younger, better skin and lovelier. Does she have more advantages?"

Luo Qiu suddenly asked when he heard this, "What's her name?"

"Luo..." Ren Ziling frowned and thought for a while, "Oh, Luo Dance. Her dad must have watched too many costume dramas!"

"..."

Was that small butterfly still in this city?

Luo Qiu shook his head and said, "We couldn't be relatives five hundred years ago."

"I'm just saying, why are you so serious?" Ren Ziling knocked his head, "That's all. I'm going to take a shower and go to sleep! Oh, No! After today I must keep early hours! "

"Have you eaten?" Luo Qiu lightly asked.

"No! For losing weight!"

Luo Qiu laughed when he saw Ren Ziling rushed into the bathroom, then he began to put what the woman brought home in order.

"Cram School?"

A pamphlet fell off.

Luo Qiu opened it, and his eyes glimmered after he carefully read it. Then he raised his hands to throw it to the middle of the living

room.

The pamphlet began to open and then some translucent scenes came out. Those were events that happened before.

Boss Luo quietly looked at these scenes and he unconsciously smiled when he saw Subeditor Ren naughtily added something more to Luo Dance's register form.

"Auntie... Yes, she is."

He shook his head, waving his hand to make the scenes disappeared. Then Luo Qiu stood up to finish cleaning. After that, he turned off the light and entered his room; only then did he think about the little butterfly.

The little butterfly was studious; she even enrolled in a cram school.

He quietly went to sleep with his clothes on.

...

Early in the morning, a lot of people crowded around the neighborhood.

At this time Officer Ma who was eating a hamburger pushed in and ordered, "Disperse the crowds. Don't destroy the scene. Has forensic expert Old Qin arrived? And you, see if there is troublesome journ... "

Ma Houde stopped and guiltily looked around. A young policeman nearby quickly said, "Officer Ma, your sister-in-law is not here."

Ma Houde awkwardly cleared his throat and said in a deep voice, "Expel those annoying journalists! Don't stand still! Go!"

"Yes!"

Ma Houde now confidently walked into the cordoned scene--- He hadn't freely said this sentence in a long time.

That was really cooler than having a bowl of water ice.

"Officer Ma." The policeman at the scene now quickly raised his hand in salute.

Ma Houde nodded, and then ordered, "Report the situation."

The policeman said, "The deceased fell down from a high place, but the place needs to be verified. A female cleaner of this neighborhood found him. He lives in this building, twelfth floor, male, eighteen years old, his name is Gu Jiajie, a graduating student of the No.3 High School in this city."

"Another student?" Ma Houde was stunned. He deeply frowned and glanced at the scene, seeing a couple wearing pajamas bitterly crying by the stone bench.

"Who are they?"

"Oh, parents of the dead." The policeman opened his notebook, "The man is Gu Feng, and the woman is Shen Meihuan."

Looking at this grieving couple, Ma Houde deeply frowned... If this was also a suicide, it must be extremely weird!

Chapter 329: Boss Luo and the Little Butterfly

Ma Houde passed some tissues to Shen Meihuan, and then he looked at Gu Feng who was apparently calm, "Hello, Mr. Gu, I am Ma Houde. Would you mind if I asked you some questions?"

"Of course not." Gu Feng took a deep breath and barely answered.

Ma Houde nodded, "When was the last time you saw Gu Jiajie?"

Gu Feng thought for a moment, and hoarsely said, "Last night, about half past eleven. I chatted with him before I went to bed, but..."

"Does you son have any enemies or acted abnormally recently?" Ma Houde ignored his expression and continued.

Gu Feng shook his head, "My son is very sensible. He never causes troubles and is very filial... Recently, there's nothing unusual."

"Did you give a cell phone to your son?" Ma Houde went on.

"Yes, I have." Gu Feng said, "The latest-version mobile phone. It was a summer vacation gift for his good results last semester. I went to buy it with him!"

"Well... Mr. Gu, we are not sure about the cause of death of your son." Ma Houde slowly said, "But I want to take your son's cell phone back and check your son's room. What's more, forensics may dissect the body of your son, I hope you can cooperate."

"What? Dissect my son's body?" Shen Merihuan sadly cried, "My son is gone, how can you do this?"

Ma Houde said, "Miss, don't you want to know why your son died?"

Shen Mehuan had no idea, but could only cry on her husband's

chest. Ma Houde shook his head, knowing there was nothing useful to get from the couple.

He irritably walked away and lit up a cigarette, waiting for the witness--- And at this time a figure came into his sight.

A slightly thin figure with a hat was moving away from the crowd. Ma Houde subconsciously wanted to catch him up, but a police officer's voice stopped him.

"Officer Ma, the witness is coming!"

"Oh... OK, one second."

The figure disappeared at the moment and in front of Ma House, there appeared lots of onlookers. Officer Ma dissatisfiedly said, "You! I told you to disperse the onlookers, what did you do!"

...

"Two steamed buns, one having here and the other is for taking away."

"All right!"

The boss of the bun house who was making dough briefly answered but he immediately smiled when he looked up, "Luo Qiu! It's you, it has been a while! Please come in and take a seat!"

"Go ahead."

This Mr. Chen had taken over the bun house for some time since his parents left. Luo Qiu smiled when he saw Mr. Chen's practiced gesture and went into the bun house.

There were more customers than before.

"I haven't seen you for a long time, why did you come back today?" The son put a towel on his shoulder, wiping the sweat, and sitting in front of Luo Qiu.

"I just came back to clean the old house," said Luo Qiu, "How are you doing recently?"

"Well!" The son said with smile, "Same old same old. But more comfortable than before."

The son made a cup of tea and slowly said, "People are reluctant to accept a new life but if they try, the new life is not bad."

He looked at this old neighborhood and laughed, "I've understood many things recently. I think there must be some reason for my dad's insistence."

The eyes of the son gradually became tender. The buns were full of human kindness, so was his smile.

"It tastes good." Luo Qiu broke open a fresh bun and had a taste, before praising it.

The son smiled, "Great! I was afraid you wouldn't like it. You know? You look like a old scary man when you are not laughing, and sometimes you speak out appalling words, which are very serious!"

"..." Luo Qiu exhaled a breath and said nothing.

At this time, a customer came and whispered something in front of the bun house. Then the son glanced over, "The little girl came again."

Luo Qiu turned his head and found a woman with a mask and a hat, "A little girl?"

"Young voice." The son nodded and said, "Should be a little girl. In the last two months, she has bought lots of buns almost every two days."

The son shrugged, "But she speaks little. Every time, she justs pays the money and goes away. Oh, she left, but seems to be in a hurry this time."

Yes, the little girl paid the money and left in a hurry with her head lowered. No one knew what she looked like.

"Boss, I'll come back to get the buns." Luo Qiu suddenly stood up

and said.

"Oh, OK!"

...

In an alley of the old town, the little girl who carried a big bag of buns now hid in the corner and cautiously looked back.

She was relieved, so she pat her chest and turn around. Then she took down her mask to smell the buns, smiling faintly.

"Smells good?"

"Yes!" The little girl answered without thinking, but soon she thought... 'Who asked this question'?

She suddenly turned over again and saw a mysterious man. She was so frightened that she couldn't help giving a soft cry.

"Do I look that scary?" Luo Qiu looked at the little girl--- The butterfly monster, Luo Dance.

"No, no." The butterfly monster lowered her head, not daring to look at Boss Luo.

Luo Qiu laughed, "When did you change your food? You never ate buns before."

Luo Dance looked up, and blinked her eyes, "Not my food, it is for Little Black and the others."

"Little Black?"

"Yes!"

...

The so-called "Little Black and others" were a group of stray cats.

In an abandoned old house of this old town, the butterfly monster crouched down on the ground, breaking the buns and feed the homeless cats.

Luo Qiu suddenly felt comfortable when he saw the butterfly's

smile as the cat licked her finger.

"Give me a bun." He crouched down and softly said.

They two fed the cats together.

Boss Luo felt it was interesting that last time she was the one he fed, and this time, cats were the one fed.

Chapter 330: Investigation

"This is Little Black, this is Little White, this is Flower, and this is Cotton Candy! This is Honey! This is Milk! And this is... "

Listening to the little butterfly reeled off the names of the cats, Boss Luo was amused.

The preceding names were nothing much, but the following... Didn't they expose something?

"They seem to like you very much!" Luo Dance blinked and looked at those stray cats she had fed for some time, feeling that the cats were closer to the club boss than herself.

"Have you often been to the bun house for boosting his business?" Luo Qiu picked up a cat and asked.

"His business did not seem good..." The little butterfly said depressingly, but soon she cheered up, "But recently the business is getting better!"

"Are you working recently?"

This small butterfly monster wouldn't casually use her demon power to get money, but then just how did she gather it?

"Yes!" The small butterfly nodded, "I met a kind sister some time ago. She took me in and let me work there... But I can't tell you her name if she doesn't agree."

"It's all right." Luo Qiu laughed. At that moment he heard a stomach grumbling.

The butterfly monster touched her belly, then laughed awkwardly and lowered her head.

"Drink it."

The butterfly monster couldn't control herself, blinking her eyes upon seeing the bottle of honey in Luo Qiu's hand.

"I bought it just now." Luo Qiu opened it. "The same brand as last time, I think you can drink it."

It reminded the butterfly of the thing last time---she bit open the bottle and gulped honey due to starvation. Her face then turned red.

But she couldn't resist the tempting smell of honey!

The butterfly monster held it directly, swallowing it in a very short amount of time. In a while, she licked lips contentedly, "Sister Long asked me not to drink much honey, saying 'Too much is the same as deficiency. So I'm just drinking milk recently."

"Sister Long?" Boss Luo couldn't help laughing.

The butterfly monster quickly covered her mouth when she realized she had let it slip. So she piteously said, "You haven't heard a word, OK?"

"I probably know who is Sister Long." Luo Qiu lightly shook his head, "It doesn't mater."

"Ah?" the little butterfly just nodded.

"OK, that's it." Luo Qiu said. Since he had known the current situation of the little butterfly, there was no need to disrupt her life.

"Ah! Wait a minute, the money! "

"No need."

Looking at Luo Qiu slowly leave the abandoned yard, the little butterfly suddenly shouted, "Boss... Are we...Are we going to meet again?"

She didn't know why she asked this.

But obviously she got the answer.

"Don't you know where I am?" Luo Qiu lightly said, "If you want to meet me, come at any time."

After Luo Qiu disappeared, the little butterfly lowered her head to look at the empty bottle. She thought for a while, tightened the bottle cap, and then put it in her bag.

Luo Dance crouched down to touch the stray cats and whispered, "This boss is actually a good guy."

Suddenly her cell phone rang.

"Excuse me, is that Miss Luo? This is Chao Yang Cram School. Your have passed the application. Please come to pay the tuition fee if that's convenient. And then you can take the materials to start the class."

"Oh, OK!"

It seemed that... There would be good things after she met the boss.

The little butterfly laughed and the wind became quiet.

...

Two days later.

Shen Meihuan sat alone in her son's room, saying and eating nothing all day.

Her husband Gu Feng came in with a bowl of porridge, and lightly said, "Take some food."

"I... I can't. " Shen Meihuan took her son's photo and looked at it all day.

Dried or wet tears were all laid on the glass of the photo frame.

Gu Feng sighed, sat down to hug his wife and quietly closed his eyes, "Jiajie also wouldn't have the heart to see you like this."

"He wouldn't have the heart?" Shen Meihuan suddenly stopped crying, "Wouldn't have the heart... How can he leave me... Tell me! You tell me... Did I do anything wrong?"

Her husband didn't know what to say, but just sighed.

Shen Meihuan cried, "Gu Feng, have we given too much pressure to our son... Were we really wrong?"

"I don't know..." Gu Feng sorrowfully said, "Maybe I'm not a good father either. We never knew Jiajie's real thoughts."

"I was the one that forced Jiajie to die... It's me, it's me!" Shen Meihuan suddenly stood up and strongly pounded her chest, sadly saying, "I have killed him! I shouldn't have forced him... I shouldn't be so strict... I thought it was good for him, it's me! It's me!!"

Gu Feng hurriedly hugged his wife when seeing her lost her mind to strike her head against the wall. He shouted, "Calm down! Is this useful? You want to leave me alone?"

Shen Meihuan stopped in an instant. She covered her face, weakly sat down and cried, "Gu Feng...How should we live on in the future..."

"How should we live on... I don't know. " Gu Feng deeply sighed.

There were only he and his wife living in this family now. How should they live on in the long future without their son?

...

"It's suicide."

Officer Ma was stunned. He looked at the autopsy report from Old Qin and frowned, "Old Qin, has it been confirmed?"

Old Qin quietly said, "Living guys would lie, but the bodies wouldn't. Unless you think I have made mistakes."

"I don't mean that..." Ma Houde smiled, and then sternly added, "But this is the fifth suicide, don't you think it's really f*cking weird?"

Old Qin was silent for a moment and suddenly said, "I must go back, my work is done. A judicial doctor can only confirm the physical situation of a man... And as for the mental health of the

dead, we can't draw a conclusion if the conditions are insufficient."

"Mental health?" Ma Houde was astonished.

Old Qin lightly said, "Though it's not fatal, there are many different wounds on the deceased, some are from sharp weapons. It is impossible if this child is just an ordinary student."

"You mean..." Ma Houde nodded, "Domestic violence?"

"That is your job."

Ma Houde deeply frowned when he saw this solemn guy leave his office.

Then Ma Houde whispered, "Damn it!"

Of course, the most damming thing were the five dead children included Gu JiaJie; they were all students in Chao Yang Cram School.

Ma Houde smoked one and one cigarette, and cigarette ash was full of the ashtray. Then he resolutely picked up the phone, "Hello, Old Liu!"

"Ma Houde! Pay attention to your manner talking to your superior!"

"Forget that!" Ma Houde quickly said, "Director, I want to open an investigation into a multiple-suicide case!"

"Do you have any evidence?"

"The fifth life! What evidence do you want?!"

"... All right."

Chapter 331: Resurrection

Ma Houde rang the doorbell and Gu Feng opened it.

Obviously Gu Feng felt a bit surprise when he saw Officer Ma. "Officer Ma, why are you here?"

"Oh, nothing important, just for some small questions, is that OK?" Ma Houde smiled.

Gu Feng nodded. After they sat down, he said, "My wife just fell asleep. Please keep the voice down."

Ma Houde nodded, "How is your wife?"

Gu Feng bitterly smiled, "Not very well. Hasn't eaten or slept these days. Now she's sleeping due to exhaustion."

"I'm sorry for your loss."

Gu Feng massaged his eyebrows and wearily said, "Officer Ma, what do you want to ask? And when can we take my son's body back?"

Ma Houde abruptly said, "Mr. Gu seems to urgently want Gu Jiajie's body back?"

Gu Feng was stunned, and frowned, "Officer Ma, what do you mean? How can I see my son lying in that cold place?"

"We have got the autopsy report." Ma Houde calmly said, "And according to the evidence we have collected, the result points to suicide."

Gu Feng sighed and said nothing.

Ma Houde continued, "But... We have found lots of old and new wounds on your son's body. Some are bruises, some are caused by weapons, does Mr. Gu know that?"

Gu Feng was surprised, "What? Why there are wounds on his body?"

"That's why I come here. Mr. Gu." Ma Houde said lightly, "Your son haven't lived in school. Why haven't you known about that at all?"

Gu Feng shook his head and said, "I really don't know that. Perhaps he fought with others, but hasn't told us... It seems that my son actually hid many things from us. Why did he commit suicide? We... may never know what he wants."

Ma Houde lightly said, "Mr. Gu can keep calm in such a situation, you are really strong."

Gu Feng signed, "Life goes on. My wife is weak now, if I'm not strong, this family will be over."

Ma Houde suddenly sneered, "This family is over... but Mr. Gu still has another one eh?"

Gu Feng was astonished, "Officer Ma, what do you mean?"

Ma Houde suppressed his disdain and said in a low voice to not wake up the mother, "You have a mistress. And you have a three-year-old son... don't you?"

"You..." Gu Feng gazed at him and angrily said, "You..."

Ma Houde said, "Mr. Gu, the citizens' information system is very complete. It's easy for us to know you are the father of that son. The birth certificate has the father's records."

"Keep, keep your voice down. My wife doesn't know about it." Gu Feng nervously and guiltily glanced at the door, "Officer Ma, it's nothing to be surprised about. And it is not a big deal for a man's unexpected mistake."

Ma Houde sneered, "Gu Jiajie is not your own son. He is your wife's child. And those years you haven't had a baby, so you found a mistress and had a son, right?"

"Officer Ma!" Gu Feng was offended and said, "This is my personal affair, will you even interfere in this?"

"No, this is a civil case." Ma Houde lightly said, "And, maybe... a criminal one."

"I don't know what you are talking about." Gu Feng grunted.

Ma Houde now whispered, "Gu Feng, I suspect you for assaulting Gu Jiajie and resulting in his unstable mental state and suicide. So you must come back with me for the investigation."

"You..." Gu Feng suddenly stood up, and angrily said, "You're defaming me!"

Ma Houde stonily said, "Mr. Gu Feng, identification technology is very advanced, if we find a knife which coincide with the wounds here, we will be sure there has been domestic violence. Of course, if you need the search warrant, I'll give you one soon."

"Don't..." Gu Feng was flurried in a sudden, "Officer Ma... What, what do you want to do?"

"I just want the truth..." Ma Houde stared at him with his scary interrogated eyes, "Real truth."

Gu Feng lowered down his head with cold sweat, "I... I admit I have hit him, but I really didn't know he would kill himself! Are you suspecting me?"

"Tell me, why did you hit him?"

Gu Feng sighed, "Officer Ma, you know he is not my son. Sometimes I can't control myself because of the pressure form work. But I promise, I haven't hit him too much... I have also blamed myself, and have bought a lot of things for him."

"Not too much? You even used knife!" Ma Houde grimly laughed.

Gu Feng was scared, "It's just an accident, I didn't think he would go against me... But fortunately, it's just minor wound..."

"Just minor wound?" Ma Houde furiously said, "You have hurt a child with knife! And you say it's just minor wounds! Isn't he your son? You scum!"

"Officer Ma, I can sue you about what you've just said." Gu Feng squinted his eyes.

"As you like!" Ma Houde sneered, "I have got complains every day! Mr. Gu Feng, you have admitted your assault to your son, now please go with me! We suspect your long-time violence gave rise to your son's suicide."

Suddenly, the cup hit the floor with a smash... Gu Feng turned around and saw Shen Meihuan numbly standing at the door.

"Mei, meihuan..." Gu Feng suddenly said in horror.

Shen Meihuan asked with hesitation, "Is that true?"

Gu Feng quickly said, "Meihuan, listen to me! It's not like that! Don't believe the police!"

"I have heard everything..." Shen Meihuan rushed over to him, "I've heard everything! You are an animal! What you did to my son! You son of a b*tch! Give back my son!!"

Gu Feng strongly push her away, furiously looking at his injured arm and angrily said, "Crazy! I'm his father, Can't I hit him? I supported you all these years. I have given everything you want. If it weren't because of me, you'd be a countrywoman! But you even haven't had a baby for me! Did you complete your responsibility as a wife?!"

Ma Houde didn't want to watch this 'family drama', he grabbed Gu Feng's arm and said, "Mr. Gu, Please go to the police station with me."

"Don't pull me!" Gu Feng glared, "Humph, I'll go myself! Mind your own business!"

...

Shen Meihuan sat still for a long time, as if one out of her mind.

Suddenly, she heard the noise outside, so she rushed to open the door, "Jiajie, you came back..."

Actually there was nobody there!

"Jiajie, where are you... Where are you going?"

Shen Meihuan went out and walked down the stairs. Looking at the neighborhood, she thought her son was actually somewhere and just hadn't come back.

Then she slowly walked alone on the street by bare feet.

As she walked, she came to a very quiet, cool but weird place... And she saw a man who wearing a clown mask.

"What do you want, customer? Anything is possible."

Shen Meihuan who had lost her mind now subconsciously said, "Son... Give my dead son back..."

"Customer, the cost of the resurrection is very high. Do you really want it?" The man quietly asked, "And, even resurrection couldn't bring the real son back to you."

"No matter what, I'll give whatever I have, so long as my dead son can come back!"

"As you wish," the man lightly said.

...

"Jiajie! Jiajie! "

Shen Meihuan suddenly woke up.

And she found herself was still in the living room... It seemed to be just a dream.

Shen Meihuan forced a smile, maybe this was just her illusion due to missing someone too much.

She walked toward her son's room, and cried, feeling hopeless about the future.

But the moment she opened the door, she was shocked.

She saw her son sitting on the bed, yes, sitting there, with his

eyes opened...

He blinked!

He... was alive!

"This is... true!"

Shen Meihuan rushed to his son and hardly clasped him. But then she found the body was cold.

He couldn't talk.

Chapter 332: A Formal Visit

"Even a resurrection couldn't bring your real son to you."

Shen Meihuan now understood the meaning of this word.

He could walk, but he had no heartbeat. His muscles were soft, but his body was cold.

He had some reaction, but he couldn't talk... He just instinctively acted without thinking.

The living dead... This horrible idea suddenly came out in Shen Meihuan's brain.

But no matter what.

No matter what.

"You are my son." Shen Meihuan held his son's face and softly said, "I gave birth to you, no matter what you look like, you are my child..."

The son's eyes suddenly blinked as if he understood it--- Perhaps this was just the functional response.

But Shen Meihuan felt her son had spoken to her and he just wasn't used to this state.

"Yes, you must be..." Shen Meihuan gently said, "You must be hurt and confused when you fell down... It must be so! Don't be afraid, boy, mom is here!"

"Are you hungry?"

"Look at yourself, so dirty."

"Do you want water?"

It seemed that this son was a worrying kid. Shen Meihuan laid her son in bed, and gently touched his head, "Sleep, sleep..."

Suddenly, Shen Meihuan heard some voices... The door was opened!

Her husband, Gu Feng, came back.

Shen Meihuan quickly sat up, tightly held her son and nervously said, "Don't be afraid, mom is here... I won't let him hit you again, I won't... won't..."

...

After he closed the door, changed his shoes, and finally sat down in the living room for a while, Gu Feng shouted, "I'm back."

It's difficult to describe how irritable his mood was...

Gu Feng had got out of the police station through his connections. His lawyer also told him it was not difficult to win the lawsuit, which made him feel relieved.

But he had to handle the relationship with his wife--- He was only a common man when he married Shen Meihuan.

Even though she remarried, she brought him lots of luck. In recent years, he even started to run a small factory, so their living conditions became better and, naturally, work got busier.

The key point was that Shen Merihuan owned some shares of this factory.

"Meihuan, are you here? Meihuan?"

Gu Feng pinched his forehead and wearily said, "Let's have a talk, OK? I admit I struck Jiajie, I was wrong. But I really haven't thought he would...You know, every child might be hit by their parents. I also have been hit by my dad when I was a child. I think we all have mistakes. You haven't taken good care of your son, have you? Meihuan, Meihuan, Are you there..."

Gu Feng suddenly felt a sharp pain on the back of his head. His brain was buzzing and dizzy, then he lost consciousness.

He directly collapsed down on the sofa. Shen Meihuan who was holding a rolling pin stood behind him, "I, I will never let a beast like you hit my son."

Then Shen Meihuan seemed to wake up from her dream; she threw away the rolling pin. She didn't do the most extreme thing since she knew Gu Feng was merely unconcious.

After that, she suddenly rushed into the room to pick up her things, and left here with her son.

She couldn't make it widely known that her son had been resurrected. So, she thought she should hide her son first... for the moment!

...

"Officer Ma, is it alright to let Gu Feng go?" Asked the young police officer.

Ma Houde stared at him in a bad mood, "What do you think? I was just scaring him, not arresting him. We could do nothing, even though we know it's domestic violence. This is a criminal case, but how could the dead victim stand up to report it?"

"Damn it!" The young officer punched his right fist on his left palm.

Ma Houde frowned, "Moreover, even if Gu Jiajie really has committed suicide because of domestic violence, one thing still confuses me."

"You mean the cram school?"

"Five students have jumped off buildings to commit suicide and all of them are students of this cram school..." Ma Houde nodded and said, "We didn't notice that from the first victim or the second...But then the third, the fourth... and now the fifth."

At that time, another police came in with a file, "Officer Ma, the technology department has restored the deleted massages in Gu Jiajie's cell phone. One massage is sent from a registered chat program before he died. We have asked the operator, but got nothing."

Ma Houde looked at the massage, "Nine o'clock... The same place? Teacher?"

Ma Houde thoughtfully stared at this police and suddenly asked, "Do you remember mathematics, physics and chemistry knowledge from high school?"

"What?" The young police officer suddenly had a bad premonition.

"Hey, you go to class."

"What? Officer Ma, am I... the right guy?"

"Then do you think I'm the right guy?" Ma Houde rolled up his eyes.

...

Miss Maid had taken out a globe from the storage room.

Now the club boss was spinning the globe--- These dense red dots on the globe could be only seen by Luo Qiu himself.

As long as he got close to the critical door and stayed for a while, he would clearly know how many points there were. However, You Ye merely knew it through the customers she had met.

He slowly moved the globe, without any implication of stopping.

"Master, Shen Meihuan has taken her son away, and she has knocked her husband out before she left."

"The society can't accept a living dead." Luo Qiu quietly said, "It's natural for her to hide her son... And this is predictable."

Luo Qiu could not help thinking of the transaction.

The woman's desire was so strong that the transaction was done without any consultation.

He shook his head and stopped the globe with a smack.

Nevertheless, at that moment, a black smoke came in with the wind which suddenly blew the club door open.

The smoke finally formed a human figure in front of Luo Qiu and a hoarse and gloomy female voice was heard.

"Black Soul No.18 greets Master."

"Are you the Black Soul Messenger You Ye spoke off?" Luo Qiu nodded and looked at this old staff up and down.

Black Soul No. 18 took off her cap and showed an impressive scary appearance.

Old face, hook nose and gray messy hair... Like an old witch in the fairy tale.

"Yes, I am." Black Soul No.18 answered with a gloomy smile.

Boss Luo was not shocked by her because he had met many souls in different shapes recently. He just nodded, "Glad to meet you, too. Continue doing your work like before."

Black Soul No. 18 respectfully nodded. She looked around and found another strange woman here besides Miss Maid... She should not be a Black Soul Messenger.

"Miss Qin will live here for the time being."

"Understood." She intended to greet the woman but kept her thoughts to herself when she saw the woman ignoring her. Next, she curiously looked at the other guy.

This guy had been hung on the ceiling and trapped in a special position.

"This is Tai Yinzi. He has no number." Luo Qiu said, "Well... As you can see, he has some special hobbies."

Black Soul No. 18 nodded and noticed it... Looking at this guy, she realized what this guy's special hobbies were.

Tai Yinzi now slightly raised his head, plaintively taking a glance at Miss Maid's jade-like face.

'Really... Not like that...'

Tai Yinzi who gave up the thought of being a black soul hero now just felt his life full of stains.

Black souls in different regions had few chances to communicate with others. Therefore, Black Soul No.18 didn't want to pay attention to him. She just walked forward and flipped her palm, showing several white cards.

"Master, those are what I have got from the potential customers."

She had prepared this welcome gift especially for the new master. But it was delayed because of the tasks given by You Ye.

Now was the time to flatter the new master--- After all, the new point hadn't been selected.

A servant should not offer suggestions to the mater but it should be alright to show herself being conscientious and responsible in work, right?

Chapter 333: An Impudent Person

Luo Qiu just placed the information from Black Soul No.18 on the desk.

Black Soul No. 18 didn't reveal her disappointment, but quietly awaited for orders--- She did not dare to have any plans before clearly understanding her master's intention.

All the members were loyal to the boss, but the ways of loyalty were different between Black Soul No. 18 and Miss Maid.

Though it hadn't been formally stated, the hierarchy of the club was rigid...The club boss was certainly the most superior, as to the subordinates... It was hard to say.

"Any other questions?" Luo Qiu quietly asked.

"No, no." Black Soul No. 18 subconsciously replied and looked confusedly at the new master, "But, master, what I should do now..."

"Your work is done." Luo Qiu quietly said, "I will arrange tasks for you at the right time. And You Ye will record your performance. Well... "

He looked at Black Soul No.18 up and down again and smiled, "Go back to your former site or rest here for a while, it's up to you."

"This..." Black Soul No. 18 was drastically confused... Wasn't this too lenient?

"Master means you can do whatever you like." Miss Maid now stonily said, "Black Soul No.18, after all those years, have you forgotten that you can act on your own?"

"I don't mean that." Black Soul No.18 hurriedly lowered her head and said, "Then, I will travel around and keep my eyes open. Once I have have found an appropriate potential customer, I will take that person to you."

After that, Black Soul No. 18 turned around and left. However, she retreated backwards while facing the boss, slowly moving behind until she was out of the door.

Looking at this, Luo Qiu thought for a moment and suddenly said, "You Ye, are all the Black Soul Envoys like this?"

"Before transformation, Black Soul No.18 was a Middle Ages' witch." Miss Maid softly explained, "And she still keeps some old habits."

Luo Qiu gave a soft smile and stretched himself, "Well... If it was the Middle Ages, I'm afraid I should be the most unproductive master. "

"The former boss said he took a hundred year to open the border gate." Miss Maid lightly said, "But Master, you took less than five months."

"Maybe... I'm lucky." Luo Qiu shook his head and grabbed the materials of the potential customers, going upstairs.

Miss Maid continued to do her daily work. Qin Chuyu still selflessly mediated.

"Me! Me! Who can put me down?"

Oh, Tai Yinzi was shaking his body hard here and hoping someone to rescue him.

...

In the end... He went there himself.

'Am I too kind to these guys?' Ma Houde squinted to look at the big signboard of the cram school. He tossed away his cigarette butt and stamped it out, taking a deep breath, and dramatically entered the building.

Officer Ma now wore a big yellow trench coat and a bronze-colored hat, imitating a good mate of his.

"There're adult courses here, right? I... "Ma Houde furtively

glanced at his back and turned around,".... I have seen it on the signboard."

"Sir, you..." The receptionist surprisingly looked at this man, and then she smiled, "You want to enroll in the adult tutoring class, right?"

"Shh! Be quiet." Ma Houde gave the gesture of silence.

"Please relax, sir." The receptionist still smiled, "It's great to have the College Entrance Examination at your age. I admire you! You must be a great man!"

"Really?" Hearing the flattering statements, Ma Houde cleared his throat, slightly tucked in his beer belly, and straightened his back, "Yes, a lot of people have said this."

"Of course!"

Officer Ma directly paid the tuition fee, after the receptionist's flattery. Before he understood the situation, he was already in the classroom.

Damn it...

Ma Houde looked at those guys around him. They all were twenty or thirty years old... several were at his age.

Officer Ma quickly skimmed through the handouts... What the hell did he see?

X-axis? Y-axis? Z-axis?

Officer Ma was confused by the old teacher's teaching and suddenly he felt someone poked him in the back.

"Who?"

Ma Houde said in a gruff voice and impatiently looked back, it turned out a woman with a headscarf and sunglasses; he gave a start, "You are..."

The woman slightly lowered her glasses and blinked her eyes at

him.

Ma Houde was so surprised that he almost jumped up and dropped his book on the ground, "Ziling... Zi..."

But the woman quickly covered his mouth, and showed him a 'hush' gesture, whispering, "Close your mouth! Be quiet!"

Ma Houde opened wide his eyes and nodded; then the woman let go of her hand--- But why was Ren Ziling here?

He turned to face the old teacher, leaned his straight body back and covered his mouth with the book, "When did you come here? I don't notice you."

"Of course, earlier than you. You haven't noticed me. Is it because you were attracted by the young receptionist and sat here without any hesitation?"

"I... I'm observing! Investigation! You know? Don't speak carelessly... Oh, why are you here?"

"Then why are you here?"

"To be honest... Sister, have you found something?"

Ma Houde sighed. It was unexpected that this person, a tumor of the press circles was sitting behind him. But this job seemed to match her character.

Ma Houde clearly knew the reason.

"I've been here for two days, but found nothing. My god! The tuition fee here is so high!" Ren Ziling shook her head, "I'm going to request for my tuition fees to be reimbursed by the informers! Or I'll starve to death! Are you willing to see my son die with me? I'm the only supporter of the family, Brother Ma."

"I have never seen an impudent person like you!"

The old teacher on the platform now clapped his ruler and sternly said, "The beard man in yellow trench coat, be quiet! Doesn't a man know about discipline? "

Officer Ma... Officer Ma was now reminded of his dark and humiliating student history decades ago.

...

"Don't smoke too much."

Although classes were over, Ma and Ren Ziling didn't leave. They came to the rooftop of this building.

Ma Houde persuaded her, but it was useless. His craving for tobacco also came out, so he simply lit a cigarette.

"Exchange of information, OK?" Ren Ziling suddenly said, "You first."

Ma Houde rolled his eyes and said, "From the cell phone of the fifth dead, we have found he wanted to meet a teacher. I suspect the teacher is of this cram school."

"What a coincidence!" Ren Ziling was astonished, "I flirted with two men and found out there is a mysterious teacher."

"Flirted?"

"Don't care about the details." Ren Ziling blinked, "Don't you think I'm still very attractive?"

"..."

"Sister Long, that is the big sister I have met that day."

On the opposite rooftop, Long Xiruo squinted her eyes with a cigarette in her mouth.

Chapter 334: Meeting Long Again

"The rumors about the 'teacher' is?" Ma Houde frowned at this time.

Ren Ziling said, "I have heard that there is a great teacher in this cram school. He can improve students' scores, no matter how bad the student is."

Ren Ziling looked down at the street under the building, "It is said that many self-abandoned students have dramatically increased their scores because of this teacher."

Ma Houde was surprised, "Scores should be increased since they come to this cram school."

"No, those who are not talented in learning by nature are just forced to come here by parents. They can't learn well." Ren Ziling thought for a while, "But I'm not clear about this rumor."

"Well..." Ma Houde nodded, and he suddenly said, "I think I should investigate the scores of the dead."

"Then I'll investigate the teachers of this cram school." Ren Ziling nodded.

"Keep in touch." Ma Houde agreed.

But Ren Ziling suddenly pulled out a stack of books from her bag and put them on Ma Houde's hand. This puzzled Officer Ma, "What are these?"

"Homework!" Ren Ziling certainly said, "Help me do my homework! I will continue with the class!"

"Wait, why me?"

"You think I should do it?"

This sentence seemed to have been heard somewhere before.

"All right! I have to go back. It's too late! My boss will nag! He is

actually very noisy!"

...

"You go back first, I want to know who the woman is."

Seeing the two people leave the opposite rooftop, Long Xiruo lightly said this to Luo Dance. The butterfly monster hurriedly nodded and gently flew away.

Long Xiruo then looked away and whispered, "What's the matter with this cram school?"

She shook her head and easily flew down to a small alley out of this tall building. Soon after, Long Xiruo saw a red car driving out.

Long Xiruo quietly jumped on the top of this car without thinking...

Pedestrians and drivers couldn't notice her... because it was easy for her to distort people's sight.

"This woman... drives so fast."

Long Xiruo took a glance at the passing vehicles, slowly crouched down and clung to the car roof. But soon she showed a puzzled expression.

The butterfly monster didn't lie to her--- The woman in the car was the one who had threatened and saw through Luo Dance.

But... this woman seemed only to be a human.

"She has some really faint aura, but it just means she's healthy." Long Xiruo was deeply puzzled.

The aura of this woman was not from practice, but from something rubbing off her, like wearing human jade for a long time.

"Let's try and see what she is."

She believed instinctive reactions certainly couldn't fool her eyes--- So Long Xiruo slightly tapped the car with her finger.

Meanwhile, Ren Ziling braked the car when she saw the red light. It was not appropriate to rush over this crowded road.

Abiding by the traffic regulations, Subeditor Ren smiled. She pulled out her phone and wanted to give a call in the f*cking 120 seconds!

But soon she felt something wrong... The brakes seemed to not function--- The car didn't stop but directly darted across the crossroads!

...

After leaving home, Shen Meihuan didn't know where to go with her son. She had thought of going to a new place to take good care of the son.

But she worried the son would become a cold body someday--- She knew that mysterious place must be in somewhere of this city.

'If this happened, would that place help her again?' Shen Meihuan couldn't help thinking of the weird contract.

But she didn't regret it.

Taking a deep breath, Shen Meihuan went to a hotel--- She hated seeing her husband Gu Feng, so she could only live here for the moment.

Just when she opened the door, she saw a woman in a black dress going out.

And a man receptionist of this hotel warmly and affably said to that woman, "Miss Black Water, are you going out for dinner?"

Shen Meihuan didn't care about this too much. She directly went up to her room.

But the conversation went on. The woman in black dress suddenly asked, "When did she check in?"

"Ah? At five or six this afternoon." The man thought for a moment, "What's the matter? Miss Black Water, do you know

her?"

"No, I don't."

The woman lightly answered. She suddenly looked up at the ceiling of the hotel hall, muttering a word in her heart, "There is a faint smell of the dead on her body."

There were many situations where one could be infected with a dead smell. She couldn't clearly distinguish it now...It seems this place was not a good place for staying longer.

When Black Water was considering to live here or not, Shen Meihuan hastily run down and tightly grabbed the man receptionist's arm, "Boss, have you seen my son?"

"Your son?" The man was stunned and rolled his eyes, "We just have met each other this afternoon, how can I know your son?"

"I mean the boy who came with me this afternoon!" Shen Meihuan eagerly said.

The man gaped, but he said, "He is your son! I thought... Oh, nothing. I have seen him go out. He said nothing when I asked him where he was going."

"Thank you." Shen Meihuan relaxed her hand and rushed out of the hotel.

The man was totally confused and then he found that Black Water had vanished.

...

Fiddling the information of the potential customers, Boss Luo didn't immediately read them.

The information cards were slowly moving in his palm. Suddenly, Luo Qiu put them down; he stood up and waved his hand, then a heavy book suddenly appeared on the sofa.

Luo Qiu couldn't help thinking of the standard of the former boss in choosing the points of border gate--- Which seem to be

traceable.

So there must be points that the former boss hadn't managed to open--- But why did he do this?

Luo Qiu attempted to find out some clues from the innumerable transaction records.

But when he turned to a page, he stopped.

Before this page was opened, Boss Luo suddenly raised his head, and disappeared from the club in an instant.

A strong unsettling feeling made him do that.

And the next moment, Luo Qiu stood on a pedestrian overpass, watching a red car drive through.

Luo Qiu clearly saw a woman standing on the roof of the car.

"Long Xiruo..."

Chapter 335: Conflict

"Calm down..."

Ren Ziling calmed herself down.

Understanding that brake failure was a serious but not fatal occurrence, Ren Ziling now just needed to keep calm.

With her rich driving experience, she pressed the warning light button and changed lanes.

Though her palm was sweating, she still carefully looked at the road's situation.

"Don't be nervous, Ren Ziling! The car is slowing down... Very well, that's it, slow down... "

The car was smoothly slowing down in the deceleration lane.

Her calmness surprised Long Xiruo, but that's not what she wanted to see.

Long Xiruo lightly tapped the car again, "If you were an ordinary person, I wouldn't hurt you... But if you weren't, show me something."

Suddenly a roar burst out of the exhaust pipe.

Ren Ziling alarmingly looked at the speedometer running at high speed, an immediate sense of danger was clearly approaching her.

"Sh*t..."

The light was red and there was a long line of cars waiting in front!

Ren Ziling quickly untied her seat belt and tried to open the door--- But she didn't succeed.

Her breath and heartbeat now almost stopped, she slowly closed her eyes.

Unable to escape or stop, she could only await for the worse to

happen.

She subconsciously hit the brakes of the car to struggle with death even though she knew it was useless.

All of a sudden... the car stopped!

A sudden rush of force made Ren Ziling fall forward! She opened her eyes wide, with her hands pushing against the steering wheel to avoid the inertia.

When the car finally stopped at the tail of the front car, Ren Ziling collapsed in the seat, panting hard.

It seemed to have... returned to normal?

After a while, Ren Ziling recovered from the danger. When the honks behind blared, Subeditor Ren hurriedly started the engine.

But she didn't dare to drive fast. She just stopped at a temporary parking lot after going through the light.

Ren Ziling weakly opened the door and got off to breath fresh air. She felt like she was reborn.

She was trembling a little, obviously from fright.

Leaning on the door of the car, Ren Ziling hastily lit a cigarette to calm herself.

While Long Xiruo had disappeared.

...

"Really just an ordinary person."

Looking at the reaction of Ren Ziling in the distance--- She believed her judgment.

But how could she recognize Luo Dance? Long Xiruo shook her head, thinking at least she wasn't hurt her, though she was slightly frightened.

However, she still had to remove those people that fought against monsters.

"Give her a gift to relieve her fear?"

Long Xiruo shrugged--- She was used to doing things like that after more than a century.

But just when she was going to leave, she stopped--- Because there was someone behind her!

She even didn't feel his presence until she clearly saw him.

Long Xiruo narrowed her eyes, completely turning around, "Aren't you the club boss? What brings you here?"

Luo Qiu just quietly looked at her and said nothing.

Long Xiruo thoughtfully took a glance at the temporary parking lot.

"Does she have some relationship with your club?" Long Xiruo skillfully smoked a cigarette and lightly said, "Is she your customer?"

Luo Qiu also said nothing, neither approaching nor leaving. He just stood still.

Long Xiruo subconsciously frowned, she couldn't figure out what's on his mind--- This was the second time they met each other.

Oh yes, the last time, they had some unpleasant events.

Now the club boss who suddenly appeared was gradually giving off an aggressive atmosphere.

Unfriendly... Dangerous... Extremely dangerous.

"OK, I haven't done anything to her." Long Xiruo lightly said, "I'm just investigating. And as you can see, I haven't hurt her at all, have I?"

"Of course, she will be fine." Luo Qiu finally said, "I also know you don't really mean that."

His soft words shocked Long Xiruo. But he went on, "If anything

ever happened to her, Long Xiruo would disappear in the world... I promise."

Extremely dangerous... Like facing an abyss.

The uneasy feeling reached its apex and Long Xiruo instinctively moved.

She didn't move forward, instead she moved back!

"She's... Not your customer." Long Xiruo paused and tentatively said, "Then who is she?"

Boss Luo took a step closer to Long Xiruo, the space that separated them suddenly shrunk.

"I heard that you're the last dragon..." Luo Qiu indifferently said, "I know lots of stories when I was a child, for one, Conquering the Dragon King... Do you know it?"

The eyes of Long Xiruo suddenly flashed with fire.

"Go back now, do not say anything."

The indignant Long Xiruo who was prepared to fight suddenly heard these shocking words.

No, the spiritual conflict had happened earlier!

She instinctively knew it was better to keep far away from this guy, but a dragon's pride and self-respect didn't allow her to do so.

"I'm not your customer. We have no relationship." Long Xiruo sneered, "Since you know my original intention, then you must know I have to remove dangers. The life of the monsters and demons in this city are tough. I don't want to see them hide, constantly avoiding the sunlight."

"You are not the enemy." Luo Qiu shook his head, "Nothing is wrong on your part. And she really should learn from her crazy driving... Aren't you going back? I may not be able to control myself. No... I can't control myself now."

Luo Qiu stretched out his hand.

And Long Xiruo's body became uncontrollable, as if being pushed by something. When she realized what was happening, her neck was already in Luo Qiu's hand.

He even easily lifted her up.

Chapter 336: Hedgehog

These days, one could surprisingly see Ren Ziling being taken home at dusk by a young man.

Gradually, they were linked together by the people in the neighborhood of this town... And this gossip could be heard everywhere when going through the street.

Luo Qiu also saw they two beneath the old house downstairs... Laughing and talking.

Who was he?

A vaguely uneasiness or irritability came to him... Was it really like what the neighborhood said?

She was still age, how could she only devote her mind to a young child?

And furthermore, one who wasn't a biological child?

But who was that young man? Though Luo Qiu believed himself to be a rational man, somehow a sudden impulsiveness started to grow.

And this impulse was a devil hiding in his heart, nourished for few months ever since his father died.

Then... He saw that young man again because he deliberately asked for a leave of absence from school and came home earlier.

As it was nearing the Colleague Entrance Exam, the teacher was also tolerant of him; maybe because he knew the boy had just lost his father.

Luo Qiu hid in his room. He felt guilty when he silently saw them through the slit of the curtains.

It wasn't a luxury car. However, Luo Qiu thought this twenty-five or twenty-six-year-old man who could drive this car may not be poor.

Then, Ren Ziling weakly got off the car... Luo Qiu didn't know what they were talking about.

But he knew they didn't speak much--- The man nodded and drove away.

Luo Qiu saw Ren Ziling leaning against the wall downstairs and lighting a cigarette... This was the first time he saw her smoking.

She suddenly crouched down and covered her eyes with hands. He knew she was crying... This was also the first time he saw her crying for so long.

She just crouched down and cried alone.

What kind of helpless and pain had she suffered? Luo Qiu didn't know... He just thought maybe those rumors were reasonable.

He looked at her for almost ten minutes... Ren Ziling stood up, quickly washed her face with the mineral water, patted her face, and then she went up.

Luo Qiu heard her footsteps, then the knocking sound and her regular questions...

But he just sat in the dark room and gave no response. So she thought he had gone to bed.

She really brought him back, but she still felt him to be cold.

...

"Really! I saw that woman enter a hotel! With a young man!"

"Which woman?"

"Which woman? That widow! I said before she couldn't resist the temptation!"

"Wait... Did someone just pass by?"

"Who?"

"The son of Old Luo. Am I wrong?"

...

Luo Qiu thought he shouldn't come... But he still arrived.

It seemed that something drove him here. He felt that it was a feeling that he couldn't control... But he really saw that man's car park at the hotel.

All the hotels in this old town were not tall, all the hotels in the old town were like this... Maybe it should be called a bistro. Luo Qiu suddenly felt he was ridiculous. What could or should he do here?

Leave or not? He hesitated... Maybe it was better for both sides to keep silent.

Perhaps, he could live on his own... So be it.

But he saw the man walk in the hall, and he quietly followed the man, who directly entered a room of the second floor instead of going to the reception... Something really compelled him.

He silently followed the man. However, he didn't see him enter the floors which were prepared for the guests of the hotel. Instead, he went to the private dining room on the second floor.

In the room... It seemed to be very noisy.

He even heard Ren Ziling's voice. Then he took a deep breath and quietly opened the door.

The voice was loud.

"No way! I will never give up the custody of Luo Qiu!"

"What custody, is he your own son?"

The voice came from a middle-aged man. Luo Qiu knew he was a cousin of his father.

Those people inside were all his family members... Who moved to this city because his father had worked and settled here.

"In fact, we're closer to him! We have the same blood! And you

are a stepmother! Will you be so kind and take care of him in your young age?"

How bitter the words were.

" I've said many times! Don't come to me again! I won't give up the custody!"

How... How many times had she faced these people?

"Humph! You are just greedy for money! Greedy for the property of my poor cousin."

Ren Ziling ruthlessly threw the documents on the table in a sudden, vigorously saying, "These! Are all the property of my husband, the pension, the estate license, and the legacy! I've appointed my layer to give all of these to Luo Qiu!"

"I'm the lawyer of Qingyuan Law Firm, and this is my card." The man said, "Miss Ren has signed relevant legal documents. If you have any question, I'll be glad to be at your service. Or you can take the copies for confirmation."

Lawyer... This man, was a lawyer...

"What can you give him? Well! I'm not his real mother, but I've been living with him for a few years. And you? Do you know what he likes? Do you know his birthday? Have you even made a call to great him? You just want the property not his custody!"

"You want nothing, then what can you give him?"

An angry voice.

"I!"

Ren Ziling pointed at herself and loudly swore, "Can give him a home!"

Why she was so strong... Because she knew she must face these abuses to protect Luo Qiu.

If she wasn't strong enough, how she would live on with him?

...

Luo Qiu quietly closed the door, and no one knew he had been there.

But that day he crazily gave a woman a hard slap in the face... The one near the store.

...

...

Crack -!

A loud slap from his slender fingers on the tender face, obviously made the delicate face become red in a moment.

Who knows how much strength was used. However, he had, in an instant, left a red imprint of a palm on the delicate face.

Long Xiruo's brain suddenly went blank.

She had never been slapped after she became an adult. When was the last time? Thousand of years ago? Or when she's a child?

She just felt pain when she was held by the neck. But now a humiliation spontaneously arose.

Long Xiruo slowly lowered her head, but her eyes were still calm and solid.

"You... have you decided to start a war here?"

Her great fury didn't hold Luo Qiu back.

"I just want you to know something."

Luo Qiu suddenly released Long Xiruo on the ground; then he said, "We're not reincarnations of evil. Nor have we been forced to disappear by those lunatics in the west, we are just... and will always be living in this world."

All of a sudden, a strange old door appeared behind the club boss.

It was opened slightly, and revealed something from it.

Long Xiruo couldn't help stepping back in a cold sweat, without fury, she was trembling.

She seemed to hear the wailing sounds and saw the deathly stillness of a gloomy barren land.

She was the true dragon guardian of this land... but merely this land.

But out of there...

He was right... In this non-magical era... No one could compete with him.

Rumbling---!

The horrifying door closed. Her head went blank again, forgetting the pain and the humiliation.

It was so heavy...and unbearable.

The cold wind which blew through the traffic had sobered her to some extent.

She and the club boss were still here in this city, nothing had changed.

"Sorry, I seldom hit others. But sometimes I'm really too impulsive."

She heard such a light sound... An explanation, not an apology.

"Did I hurt you?"

Luo Qiu came closer to Long Xiruo, slightly touching her face and the imprint slowly faded.

Long Xiruo subconsciously stepped back with fear.

"Master!"

At this moment, Miss Maid abruptly appeared behind Luo Qiu.

Long Xiruo clearly saw her angry blue eyes and the black flame on her hand--- she was getting ready for a battle.

"Lunatic."

Long Xiruo abruptly said this and disappeared from the roof nearby.

She swallowed the humiliation and didn't want to fight... Pride was useless in front of the door.

...

"Master, just now..."

Seeing Long Xiruo leave, Miss Maid hid the black flame and came to Luo Qiu.

Luo Qiu exhaled and silently looked at You Ye, "Kind people are easily bullied. However, a lunatic will be somewhat frightening. It's all right. I just warned her... You go back first."

You Ye nodded, taking a glance at Ren Ziling not far away, and knew what had happened.

...

...

She still felt scared... If the car hadn't stopped in time, would she have been lying a hospital?

Ren Ziling looked up at the building she lived.

She took out her mirror and touched up her makeup to hide her listlessness.

Luo Qiu's sharp eyes were really inherited from his police father.

She wanted to go up after smoking, but she crouched down and her eyes filled with tears... A lonely feeling came to her.

But she couldn't let others know her weakness.

"One minute, Ren Zi Ling, just one minute cry, all right." She said to herself.

"What are you doing here?"

Just a minute, Ren Ziling heard a familiar voice... Luo Qiu's voice.

Ren Ziling surprisingly looked at him with an embarrassed appearance.

"Painful..."

The burning cigarette sobered her, and she hurriedly stood up and rubbed her eyes, "The sand got in my eyes. What are you doing? Why are you downstairs with the light on?"

Luo Qiu showed the shopping bag, "Buying daily necessaries. I can't expect you to buy these."

Ren Ziling smiled.

"Have you eaten anything?"

"No... No time to..." Ren Ziling shook her head.

"Go home, I will make some glutinous rice balls for you." Luo Qiu said.

Seeing Luo Qiu directly walking upstairs, Ren Ziling quickly followed him. And she naughtily pushed his back, "Hurry up! I'm hungry! Boy!"

"Throw your cigarette pack away before going home," said Luo Qiu.

Subeditor Ren piteously said, "All right!"

Ren Ziling was reluctant to throw it. But now Luo Qiu suddenly turned around at the doorway, lightly saying, "Including those in your wardrobe."

"... All right." Subeditor Ren resignedly nodded her head.

"Then... Welcome home."

Ren Ziling looked up, seeing Luo Qiu entering her home.

Then, she couldn't help herself. After crying for a minute, her eyes turned red again.

...

...

Shen Meihuan was anxiously looking for her son in the street... Where could he go? Did he gain some consciousness?

Many doubts came to her mind. She worried about what could have happened to him.

She regretted that she had gone out for shopping.

Many hours later she still didn't find her son. This drove her almost insane.

"He just came back, please don't take him away again..." she prayed.

Maybe her prayer was heard, she found her son later.

He stood in front of an amusement center and was quietly looking at the signboard.

Chapter 337: Compassion

Shen Meihuan was surprised and didn't dare approach. She looked at the old signboard and knew what her son was thinking.

This place had about 20-30 years of history, only existing in the older folks memories now.

With the development of the city, new entertainment and theme parks had replaced it.

The light was gloomy, and its sign was mottled.

This was the first place she played with her son ever since they came to this city. Their memories were now rekindled...

"Do you remember this place?" She lightly came to her son.

But she got no answer. Her son just stood here, thoughtfully looking at the mottled signboard.

Shen Meihuan impulsively grabbed her son's arm and walked into the arcade. Maybe he would recall his memory there and return to normal.

She was really eager, causing her to quicken her pace.

Many broken machines made the place seem more deserted. Only an energetic old man was skillfully playing the Shot Clock.

The sleepy clerk received the money and gave the coins to her without any feeling.

The quietness and the bad attitude made Shen Meihuan feel lucky--- Nobody would notice her strange son.

Shen Meihuan brought her son to a turtle game to try to regain his memory.

"Do you remember the first time you play it? Well, it's a bit different. But at that time, you played here and didn't want to go home."

Still, her son didn't give her any response.

She grabbed the hammer to give it to her son, but it fell onto the ground. Shen Meihuan picked it up but the same thing happened again.

Falling and dropping... Again and again, but Shen Meihuan was still persistent and very patient.

Her impatient temper caused by the downhill business did not seem to exist at the moment. Now, repeating this boring action again and again; an action that would annoy other to no end if done by them, she still felt no dissatisfaction.

When her son finally held the hammer, Shen Meihuan was genuinely delighted. Then she taught him step by step how to play the game... Touching her son's hand regained her lost happiness.

She was reminded of his childhood. At that time, she went out of her way to teach him how to walk, how to speak... Every progress of his would let her be happy for a long time.

At this moment, Shen Meihuan suddenly felt that was the happiest time of her life.

Great ambitions for wealth and expectation for her son had let her ignore the purest happiness in the world.

The day he came to this world and the day he slightly touched her hand, how could she forget?

Shen Meihuan suddenly stood still, and her son also stopped playing with the hammer on hand.

She reproached herself and said in a choked voice, "I shouldn't have focused on the business, I shouldn't have forced you to study..."

The thought pained her. She was getting a lump in her throat.

Silently crying.

Suddenly the hammer struck on the head of a plastic turtle--- It

was her son who did that.

He just struck the turtles over and over again but without any other reactions... However, it was the first glimmer of hope for Shen Meihuan. She surprisingly looked at her son.

...

"Two bottles of Cola, ten dollars."

"Here you are."

One hour had passed... And the arcade was about to close.

Shen Meihuan quickly walked toward her son... With eyes focused on him, a sort of satisfaction filled her heart.

Why hadn't she had this feeling in recent years?

But soon she stopped--- A woman in a black dress was approaching her.

Shen Meihuan was stunned by the woman she had seen before. But why she came here?

She lowered her head to studiously avoid the woman, but she heard her calling.

"Why don't you bury him?"

Shen Meihuan suddenly stopped and hurriedly turned around--- They've met only once, but why the woman knew that... And what else did she know?

"Who... Who are you?" Shen Meihuan said with alert, "Why are you following me?"

"That's not important."

The woman shook her head, "I don't know why he became like that. But do you think you're doing something good? Souls should be at peace. What do you think?"

"You know nothing!" Shen Meihuan frantically said.

The woman sighed, "I also have children. They're my life. I totally understand you."

"Understand... Then don't stop me!"

"But you must know, he's just a dead body... You will get sick after long."

The woman continued, "Listen, he may become a zombie... That's not what you want."

Shen Meihuan warily looked at her, "I don't understand you and what you are saying! Please go away! I have lost him before, I can't lose him now! You said you understood me!"

"Why are humans so stubborn?"

She laughed at herself, "I'm not qualified to reproach you... Sometimes I'm also stubborn. Well, I live upstairs. If necessary, please come to me. But I hope that time never comes."

"Who... Who are you?"

"Black Water. I'm Black Water." She softly answered.

She hated humans, but she had compassion... as a mother.

Chapter 338: The Vanishing Cancer Cells

It was almost twelve o'clock at midnight.

But the pet hospital was still opened with the lights on. The butterfly monster in a white uniform was waiting for Sister Long at the desk. However, there was no news.

Luo Dance idly laid herself on the table and played with the empty honey bottle.

She even tied a blue ribbon on it... she just felt happy when doing that.

After a while, the butterfly monster looked up at Su Zijun, "Sister Su, You don't think something has happened to Sister Long, do you?"

Su Zijun yawned while slightly patting her mouth, "In my view, no one could hurt this troublesome woman in this era. Don't worry. A troublesome person never dies easily."

What should Luo Dance say?

The automatic door suddenly opened and... Long Xiruo listlessly came in.

When Su Zijun saw that, she stood up, stretched herself and said to Luo Dance, "Well, speak of the devil, here she is! Isn't it as I said? OK, I'm sleepy. I'm going to bed. I wouldn't have stayed up till this time if you hadn't asked me to accompany with you."

Luo Dance was speechless.

'You're the one that sat here and wait, not because of me... Besides, don't you always sleep during the daytime?'

The butterfly monster felt a sense of grievance.

Nevertheless, this was nothing now that Sister Long had come back. But she was surprised--- Why didn't they quarrel with each other this time?

Long Xiruo just silently walked in and completely ignored this provocation.

Seeing this, Su Zijun loudly said, "Old woman, your pants fell!"

"Ah? What did you say?" Long Xiruo turned around as if in a trance.

"Damn it... This old woman surely has been addled." Su Zijun strangely looked at her, frowning, "What happened?"

"Nothing, I just want to sleep." Long Xiruo shook her head, "Do you think everyone will be as energetic as you at night?"

Tut-tut!

The quarrel seemed to be getting serious, so the butterfly monster tried to reconcile them, "Sister Long, you're tired, let me get you some hot water. Sister Su, I'll give the blood popsicles, OK? ...Don't quarrel..."

Before Su Zijun's urge to battle increased even more, Long Xiruo suddenly said, "Dance, I have to go out for a few days."

"Oh, are you going to collect herbs?"

"No, I'm going on a long trip." Long Xiruo slowly said, "If patients come, you fill prescriptions according to my notes. Medicines in the storage are enough."

"OK, I understand!"

Long Xiruo nodded and said, "Oh, and don't go to the cram school until I come back."

It was a pity to hear that but the butterfly monster still nodded without asking the reason.

Then Long Xiruo directly went out, instead of going to sleep.

The butterfly monster saw Sister Long subconsciously touch her neck... She sensed Sister Long was scared.

Was it an illusion?

...

...

In the office, a group of policemen were discussing the task given by Officer Ma--- Two tests of the Colleague Entrance Exam.

Nobody knew what Officer Ma experienced... It couldn't be for his son, who had gone abroad two years ago.

The young police didn't dare to tell the truth, that it was the cram school homework of your hero---Officer Ma.

Of course, with the help of these loyal subordinates, Officer Ma had been enjoying his tea time leisurely--- As there were no more clues about any cases, he could relax completely.

"Officer Ma! Chief Qin is coming!"

The tea almost scalded his tongue. Officer Ma rushed to his seat, grabbing a pen, and seriously started reading a file.

"No need to pretend. The tea and the boiled water betrayed you."

Chief Qin sat down.

Ma Houde smiled, "Chief Qin, how about you investigate the case with us? Don't waste your keen observation skills."

"Forensic experts are helping you out." Chief Qin stonily said, "If judicial doctors join in your investigation, then what will you do?!"

"I'm just saying..." Ma Houde coughed and sternly said, "Why are you looking for me so early?"

"We have informed Gu Jiajie's family, but nobody came to take the body."

"Nobody?" Ma Houde was astonished, "His mother couldn't do that. I will go ask about this."

Chief Qin nodded, and suddenly said, "There's another weird thing."

"What's it?"

Chief Qin lightly said, "Do you remember the scene where Gu Jiajie died?"

Ma Houde nodded, "Still vivid in my mind. How can I forget the horrifying scene?"

"At first we've found some brain cells at Gu Jiajie's head and examined them. Now we just obtained the report." Chief Qin looked at Ma Houde, "The report shows his cells had mutated. Maybe he has brain cancer."

"You mean he died of cancer and not falling from the building?" Ma Houde gaped.

"He really died falling down," Chief Qin said expressionlessly.

"So you mean... He killed himself because of the cancer?" Ma Houde surprisingly said, "No, we and even his family didn't know that. But if so, how could he hide this from others?"

"I'm just giving you information, not judgment." Chief Qin shook his head, "What's more, we can't find these mutated cells on his body after he died."

Ma Houde shook his head, "I don't understand."

Chief Qin explained, "I've done an examination last night but cancer cells are gone."

Ma Houde frowned, "Does it mean he didn't get the illness at all?"

Chief Qin looked at the idiot Ma Houde, "Then where do you think these cells came from?"

"Oh, I see! The corpse is fake!"

"Stupid."

"..." Ma Houde unpleasantly asked, "But how did these cells suddenly vanish? The cancer can't cure itself!"

"That's why I came here." Chief Qin lightly said, "There is only one possibility. That is we are missing some information. It is

impossible for me to have done a wrong examination."

"That's weird." Ma Houde frowned.

At that time his phone rang... After answering the call, Ma Houde frowned seriously, "The report center said Shen Meihuan went missing after she knocked Gu Feng out, but didn't take away the key, return to the company or received any phone calls. So Gu Feng has reported the case..."

Chapter 339: Famous Detective Luo Qiu

Ren Ziling and Ma Houde met on the rooftop of the cram school again to exchange information.

Ma Houde merely said that Shen Meihuan went missing after she knocked Gu Feng out.

"Rumor has it that the man has a mistress and he is violent. If I were Shen Meihuan, I would kill him!" Ren Ziling derisively said, "Maybe she just doesn't want to see him."

"It better be." Ma Houde shrugged, "But someone has reported, so we must have an investigation...What a waste of energy on such family affairs."

Ren Ziling couldn't help laughing, "Well, do you want big cases everyday? How ambitious you are!"

"Come on! This case is a real thorn in my side now."

Ma Houde sighed, "I have volunteered to do the investigation, but there are no clues after a such long time... What a troublesome matter! I need substantial evidence or the case will be closed."

"I haven't found out who the famous teacher is."

Ren Ziling reluctantly said, "The rumor came out from nowhere. And no one knows who he is. It's difficult to find him out among those teachers...Oh, it's late. I must catch a bus to go back. "

"Where's your car?"

Ren Ziling said, "Under repair, there's something wrong with it."

"Then let me drive you home. And I want to visit Luo Qiu." Said Ma Houde.

"Very well."

...

Officer Ma and his warm hug surprised Luo Qiu.

"Please enjoy yourself, I'll make you a cup of tea." Luo Qiu greeted him with smile.

Ma Houde sat down and sighed, "Wow, what a good felling to meet an old friend!"

He felt comfortable and relaxed beneath the warm light of Luo Qiu's living room.

"Is Uncle Ma under great pressure recently?"

"Why do you say that?" Ma Houde sat straight, curiously asking.

Luo Qiu said, "Your expression and your sigh tells me that."

Ma Houde smiled, "You're actually as observant as your father!"

"Yes!" Ren Ziling nodded and sat on the edge of the sofa with a pillow, "I can't agree with you any more. He even knows what I have eaten with his sharp eyes."

"That is just because you prefer heavy flavors," Luo Qiu lightly said.

Ren Ziling rolled her eyes and pretended to hit him.

Ma Houde gave a hearty laugh.

The trio enjoyed the happy time.

Ma Houde exhaled and suddenly looked at Luo Qiu, "Luo Qiu, I have something to ask you."

"Listening."

Ma Houde thought for a moment, "I have a case now. And I need your advice for some clues."

Ren Ziling was sipping the hot cocoa given by Boss Luo and pretending not to know anything.

"... and that's how it is." Ma Houde said, "We don't know who is the so-called 'teacher' and how to find him out."

Luo Qiu thought for a while and suddenly asked, "Are the five

students in different classes?"

"Yes, they are in different classes."

Luo Qiu went on, "Do you have the timetable of these classes?"

Ma Haude hurriedly carried out one from his briefcase---Naturally he had the timetable.

"And information about the dead?" Luo Qiu asked.

Ma Houde nodded with hesitation, taking out a U disk.

Luo Qiu seriously read the personal data of the dead and the timetable of the cram school without any expression, marking the timetable and building an Excel file to input something.

Ma Houde and Ren Ziling were totally confused.

"What's he doing?" Officer Ma asked with his head lowered.

"Who knows... To be honest, I usually don't know what he's thinking," Ren Ziling whispered.

"OK, come here." Luo Qiu suddenly raised his head.

Ma Houde and Ren Ziling walked to his back. Luo Qiu showed the sheet to them and said, "I list the five students' courses. Look at the colored boxes."

Ren Ziling nodded and pointed at the courses of the first dead. "Why is his Chinese teacher different from the second and the fourth?"

Ma Houde also noticed that, "Yes... And the politics teacher only has taught the third...Does that have anything to do with this? "

Luo Qiu sternly said, "Haven't you realized it? No teacher has taught these five students at the same time."

"Because different students have different courses!" Ren Ziling immediately said.

Luo Qiu nodded, "Great. So if we assume the 'teacher' in rumor killed the five students, then the answer should be clear."

"Oh... You reminded me."

Ma Houde said, "The 'teacher' must know all the students. However, as far as I know, these teachers just leave after class... How did he come in contact with these five students?"

"Perhaps the 'teacher' deliberately separated them in different classes just to reduce the panic...But he must know all these students, right?" Luo Qiu took it lightly.

It's really weird that students had jumped off the building one after another.

"Yes... But if no teacher contacted with the five students at the same time, then who would be the 'teacher'?" Ma Houde was walking into a dead end.

He shook his head again, "We also can't say for sure that the 'teacher' is related to these suicides."

"What's the rumor?" Luo Qiu suddenly asked.

"The teacher can improve students' scores, no matter how bad the student is," Ma Houde said and began to read the information of the dead. "Sure enough, their scores are higher--- After joining the cram school!"

"Back to the beginning!" Ren Ziling reluctantly said, "No teacher contacted these five students at the same time."

"A dead end!" Ma Houde sighed.

But Luo Qiu suddenly said, "Is there really no one that can get all the students' information in such a big cram school? Even their staff? "

"Oh, yes!" Ma Houde nodded, "Like the operators, and the administrators! "

Subconsciously looking at Ren Ziling, he blurted out, "Dear sister-in-law, we may be wrong from the beginning."

"Yeah... Maybe not these teachers." Ren Ziling nodded, "And now

the scope of our investigation has narrowed!"

"What a great help!" Ma Houde laughed and strongly patted Luo Qiu's back, "You are really worthy of the son of Brother Luo! "

Luo Qiu... Luo Qiu thought the older and more experienced generations like his father may not necessarily use the modern Excel.

Ma Houde hurriedly packed up and said, "I got a clue! I must act at once! That's all for today! Luo Qiu! Good boy! It's a great help! Unfortunately, I don't have a daughter for you to marry!"

"..."

Boss Luo shook his head.

After sending Ma Houde out, Ren Ziling crept through the living room, stealing a glance at Luo Qiu and sticking out her tongue at him.

"Stop."

Luo Qiu suddenly said this.

Ren Ziling said with cold sweat, "Oh. Just put them there, I'll clear up later!"

"I don't mean that. And I don't expect you to do housework." Luo Qiu indifferently said, "Did Uncle Ma say 'we' just now?"

"Really? You must misheard... Okay... I'm participating as well... "

Subeditor Ren had no choice but to confess.

...

"... I just went to class and inquired something on the way." Ren Ziling had never sat so upright like that before, even when she was a student.

"Take a bath and go to bed early." Said Luo Qiu.

Ren Ziling was surprised, "Aren't you angry?"

Luo Qiu quietly said, "Is that any use? I'm not in the mood... Do what you want to do, don't care about me. It's not good for you to hold yourself back. "

Ren Ziling was totally stunned! She got the support instead of a scolding.

After a long stare, subeditor Ren came to the back of Luo Qiu to massage his shoulders, "You're so sensible and so cute! This is a reward for you! Do you want me relax your head?"

"...Just relax yourself."

Ren Ziling bit her teeth and vigorously hit Luo Qiu's head.

...

...

The office buildings here were all dark in the evening, but there was a faint light coming out of a computer screen of the cram school.

Someone was sitting in front of the computer, narrowing his eyes with a cold smile.

Chapter 340: I'm Zhu Li, Please Call me Lizi

"Officer Ma, these are the information of the cram school staff."

Even though they were not as smart as Luo Qiu, they seemed to be efficient in collecting information.

The young policeman looked at Officer Ma who was wearing an unusual smile.

"Officer Ma?"

"Yeah... I'm listening." Ma Houde coughed, "Please go ahead."

"There are seventeen employees in this tutorial school, including the boss and those teachers."

"Well... Talk about the staff... and the boss."

"The boss is Dai Youcai, forty-seven years old. He started his business after he resigned from an education department and invested in this cram school this year." The young policeman clearly said, "But he hardly comes to this school unless there's a meeting. His personal assistant is also the manager that takes care of the school."

All the detailed information of the manager, the accountant, even the receptionists were put in front of Ma Houde.

He soon knew who would be investigated.

He quickly marked the names and said, "Students committed suicide one month ago, but there was nothing wrong with the cram school before summer vacation. "

He showed the names and ordered, "Investigate whether these guys have any contact with the students... In addition, stick with the boss and his assistant."

"Yes, sir!"

The young policeman stood to attention.

"By the way, has Shen Meihuan been found?" Ma Houde suddenly asked.

"Not yet, we've called Gu Feng this morning, and there's no news about her."

"It's been three days." Ma Houde nodded, "Over forty-eight hours... Ask more brothers to look for her."

"Yes!"

After a while.

Noticing this policeman don't leave, Ma Houde couldn't help but frown, "Is there anything else?"

"Officer Ma, do we need to do your homework today?"The young policeman ventured to say.

Officer Ma... Suddenly snarled and said, "Get back to work!"

"Yes, yes..."

...

...

Dai Youcai, who was past his prime time, was still ambitious. However, it was impossible for him to be promoted, because after ten years of hard work, he was still just a small director.

Obviously he was not a lucky dog who could succeed overnight in the department. He took another "bright" way by breaking old rules and seizing the opportunities. In only a few years, he had doubled his income.

The driver stopped the car at the tutorial school. Dai Youcai decently got off, proudly looking up at his achievements in this building.

"Mr. Dai, you are here!"

Two receptionists quickly stood up and greeted. Dai Youcai nodded and lightly asked, "Is Xu Zhao here?"

"Manager Xu is in the office." One receptionist said, "'I'll inform him. Mr. Dai."

"No need. I'm going straight there." He waved his hand.

Before he left, he looked at another receptionist and pointed at his own chest. The receptionist was a little stunned and looked down... her name tag was slanted.

"Pay attention to it."

"Yes! Mr. Dai. I will. "

Then Dai Youcai walked into the office with his hands behind his back. The receptionist exhaled and worriedly said, "Miss Zhao, the boss must have a bad impression on me."

"The boss is very kind. Don't think about it." Miss Zhao smiled.

"Well." Miss Liu shook her head and took a glance at the way Dai Youcai had left, saying, "His eyes are really scary!"

"Well, that's enough, someone is coming." Miss Zhao pointed to the door.

A little sweet girl in casual clothes was looking around at the door with snacks in hands. After a while, she came to the reception.

"Miss, what can I do for you?" Miss Zhao showed a professional smile.

The girl said, "When can I enroll in the class?"

"During our office hours." Miss Zhao took out a form and said, "Miss, you can fill in this information sheet first."

After the girl returned the completed form, Miss Zhao looked at her with a smile, "Miss Zhu Li, right?"

"Yes." The girl smiled and said, "Please call me Lizi."

"OK." Miss Zhao softly said, "This form is all right. Please pay the tuition fee and take your student ID card when you come next time."

"OK."

Lizi nodded and ate the last octopus ball, leaving.

...

The door of the office was opened only when Dai Youcai was about to knock it and a strange woman walked out in a hurry.

Dai Youcai walked into the office with a frown.

Xu Zhao in a suit now quickly stood up, "Boss, you came!"

Dai Youcai suddenly sneered, "Fooling around with women? Is that what you are doing here?"

"Boss... We, we were just discussing something. "

"Come on." Dai Youcai sneered again, "You can cheat anyone else but not me. You're here only because your father promoted me before."

Xu Zhao nodded, daring not to say nothing.

When Dai Youcai sat down, Xu Zhao quickly gave him a glass of water and stood beside him, "Why did you come here today? Is there a meeting? "

"A manager doesn't even know if there's a meeting?" Dai Youcai murderously glared at him.

Xu Zhao awkwardly lowered his head.

Dai Youcai signed, "I invited some teachers for dinner today and I want to remind you that the students suicide case is still under investigation."

Xu Zhao was astonished, "Why is the police investigating a suicide case?"

"Don't you know all the dead are students of our cram school?" snorted Dai Youcai.

Xu Zhao was horrified, "But... Boss, is someone playing a trick on you? After all... "

Piercing eyes of Dou Youcai made his words die on his lips.

Chapter 341: Palpitation

While sitting on a bench in Riverside Park, Shen Meihuan was speaking of the past to her son.

Long ago, she always took her boy here for a stroll as well as to enjoy the night scene of this city after supper. Of course, Gu Feng accompanied her during those times.

Ironically, those days were the happiest moments of this step-family. Although she was unwilling to remember anything about Gu Feng anymore.

Shen Meihuan wore a sunbonnet in order to hide her appearance. However, the wind today was exceptionally strong so her hat was blown away.

"Wait for me". She stood up and said.

Her son, who was sitting straight on the bench, nodded. He still didn't say anything, but at least he had a reaction. It was a good sign that he could understand what she meant, wasn't it?

Not long after Shen Meihuan left, a man--- the club boss sat on the bench. It seemed that no one noticed him.

"What are you thinking now?" He spoke, as if to himself, while looking at the river in front.

Of course, the boy sitting here wouldn't reply to him, and the club boss didn't ask anymore.

Luo Qiu tried to feel the boy's thoughts through what he was looking at. Even if he knew better than anyone else that this boy was far from a real person.

It had been a long time since the boy had fallen down from a tall building and sent to the morgue.

He was saved as per Shen Meihuan's expectations. However, what she could afford was at most allowing him to regain his

physical functions, and perhaps a faint sense of consciousness.

"Any obsessiveness? Will you hate your mother?"

Luo Qiu stopped observing and looked at the boy. He saw boy's eyelids flickering slightly and wondered if this was an answer to his question.

Luo Qiu nodded, and stood up. It was time to leave.

Shen Meihuan was coming back with her hat. And Luo Qiu, was merely here to see the boy who should have been dead.

Shen Meihuan didn't see or realized that anyone had been here with her son. She scurried over and tugged at the boy's hand to leave after looking at the sky.

Luo Qiu gazed silently at the receding figures of the mother and child. With hands behind his back, He suddenly looked into the other corner, where there was also a set of eyes, silently watching them.

With a mask and hat, and a pair of sunglasses, it was hard to see his appearance clearly. But for sure, he had started to take action and followed Shen Meihuan.

HIs head was low, looking very suspicious. What was he thinking about?

Knowing that the suspicious-looking man had left, the club's boss turned back and disappeared into the crowd... Did anyone know he had been here?

The answer was, NO.

...

...

Lizi put a pencil between her nose and upper lip, balancing well and keeping it from falling down. This was the only thing she could do in this boring class.

Otherwise, she thought she would fall asleep at her desk. After all, staying here couldn't be more attractive than eating a fantastic meal.

Actually, if it hadn't been for the mission assigned by Sister Ren, Lizi had never imagined that she would attend a class one day---the last time she had a class was the 31st year of Showa.

"Sixty years passed?"

Lizi sighed. Time sure flew.

Listening to the lectures in class was really tedious for her, but she was more interested in the root cause behind this mission.

Sister Ren's plan, negotiated by Ma Houde and herself, was simple.

Though they narrowed the range of the "mysterious teacher", it would be an awkward situation if the teacher took no further actions. Of course, Ma Houde didn't intend to give up the investigation among the targeted suspects; on the contrary, he planned to draw a snake out of its hole.

Because the five deceased were all high school students, the "teacher" would not be interested in the adult tutorial class, which Madam Ren and he attended.

So they needed someone who could pretend to be a student.

Sister Ren thought Lizi was the most suitable person as she had a baby face. And she looked so young that people wouldn't believe she was 23 years old as her ID card indicated.

And if she would be in a danger?

After thinking it over and combing over the info discovered by Ma Houde, Sister Ren speculated that this mysterious killer kept in touch with students via cell phones rather than face to face communication. So it can be explained why nobody knew what the mysterious teacher looked like.

Then if anyone sent strange text messages to Lizi, she would inform the police at first instance. What would happen next was the interaction between the police and "mysterious teacher".

Of course, Ren also ordered two plainclothes policemen to protect Lizi as much as possible.

"It's alright if there is no protection."

Lizi thought in mind. She didn't think that ordinary people could hurt her. Of course, she was not going to reject any protection by the police.

"As expected, working with Sister Ren is really fun."

Lizi was beginning to be curious about this "mysterious teacher". 'Who was he and was he delicious?'

Lizi had forged her personal information after combing through the dead's background and profiles. However, nothing happened until the end of the third day.

"It's so boring..." Lizi held her cheek and yawned. Later, she secretly nibbled on a snack in the toilet with the doors closed.

Two other girls had also entered the toilet. She just listened to their topics without much attention, like clothes, handbags and so on.

She found that the students in this school seemed to have a lot of pocket money from the girls' conversation. Girls here used designer bags, wore nice jewelry. And boys here often discussed some expensive products during the break.

"$4500! It's a little bit expensive. I can't afford it. I am going to be penniless!"

"Well, how about looking help from Teacher Xu?"

The topic went in a strange direction. Lizi felt subtly that something was wrong in their conversation. Mr. Xu was the manager of this tutorial school, rumored to have messy

relationships with girls, who was named Xu Zhao.

And he was the only one whose surname was Xu in this cram school.

But why would the girls seek help from Xu Zhao when they didn't have enough money?

Some inappropriate transactions occurs in Lizi's mind.

"Was it possible that he developed relationships with even students?"

Thinking of this, Lizi was disgusted and looked back on the days when the man passed by the hall in his suit and tie. How beastly.

Maybe this is not the first time for the girls to contact that bad guy as they had said to borrow money again.

Perverse people.

Lizi shook her head and lost the interest to their conversation. At the moment, the girl who was going to be penniless said, "Eh... Aren't you afraid?"

"You mean... about the people who jumped from buildings and died? The other girl's voice dropped a little.

"Yeah... didn't they also participated?"

"Probably not..."

"I don't want to do it anyway. The more I think about it, the deeper I regret..."

They wanted to talk more, but stopped talking when someone came in the toilet. Lizi heard the footsteps and the door closed. Nevertheless, she couldn't hear the voices of girls anymore.

Lizi scowled, putting the snack into the mouth quickly, and then dialed, "Hello, Sister Ren, there is some progress here. It's about..."

...

Black Water came back to the hotel with a large bag of snacks.

This was not the first time the hotel owner had seen the thin woman with heavy bags.

And she had no trouble in carrying them.

Usually, Black Water would not stay at the reception. But today she walked straight to the front desk in the hotel. The uncle felt overwhelmed.

She asked," Have the mother and son on the third floor checking out?"

"Oh, yes, the room was just returned today... Miss Black Water, do you want to contact that lady?" The uncle tried to strike up a conversation as much as he can.

Black Water just nodded and then went upstairs... No wonder she felt the smell of the dead became much lighter here.

It seemed that Shen Meihuan was not going to talk to her.

Black Water opened the door, and the piglet, which was the greediest one among the little monsters, rushed to her bags... Black Water smiled and began giving out food to the monsters.

Looking at the innocent looks of these little monsters, Black Water wondered if one day, would any one of the little kids leave her. Would she also do what Shen Meihuan has done?

Black Water suddenly roused herself...She had followed Shen Meihuan for short period to make sure that the woman was just an ordinary person.

Ordinary people couldn't have the ability to make the dead look like a real human... People living in the Western area of the Hunan Province were good at refining corpses. However, with their limited abilities, it was impossible for them to make Shen Meihuan's boy alive again.

"Was it..."

She subconsciously thought of the mysterious shop and the boss

she met only once.

The mysterious shop could provide everything you want. If Shen Meihuan bought something to save her son, then it was reasonable that her son could be resurrected.

"Sister Black Water, won't you eat anything?" said Lingling.

The little rabbit with round and red eyes walked to Black Water, and asked, "What are you thinking about, Sister Black Water?"

Black Water looked down, stroking Lingling's head, and whispered, "I'm thinking, no matter what happened, I won't let any of you get hurt. I will never let you go."

'And never go to that mysterious shop.'

Chapter 342: The Way Black Souls Work

Ding Dongsheng felt upset just like the dark, cloudy sky suggested.

He sighed and fell into a trance while sitting on the stairs behind the classroom. Of course, he was not alone here.

As this was a popular place among students where they could avoid the surveillance of teachers.

Another two boys were smoking and gossiping after sneaking out of class during school time.

One of them was stunned for a moment when he saw Ding Dongsheng sitting downstairs.

"Do you know him?" the other one asked.

"Top in class," he said with a shrug.

"A good boy should be in class, right?" the other one said derisively.

"Maybe he is in a low mood. Because a girl, who committed suicided last month was a good friend of his."

"Oh, death of a girlfriend?"

"No wonder he is so sad. I saw the news on TV. It reported that another boy jumped from a building several days ago. His school was very near from ours."

"Stop. Maybe we should think about where we are going after class?" The boy skipped the topic.

Ding Dongsheng left when the boys were in discussion.

He believed that Rongrong was threatened by somebody. No one knew whether he said to himself or to the boys.

...

...

He came to the back of the library instead of going to the classroom as he just wanted to find a place without disturbance.

He stopped after a trot, and then hit the tree trunk along the road.

As a senior student, Ding Dongsheng had begun class one month after summer vacation.

But only a month passed by, nobody else remembered Qiao Rongrong except him in the whole class.

He remembered everything about the girl.

"We should have been preparing for college together, but you..."

"But why did you leave me?" Ding Dongsheng looked at the dark, rainy day with his whole body leaning against the tree.

They fell in love with each other gradually when they learned, discussed and even argued.

But things changed. He wasn't even aware when she became indifferent and alienated to him.

'Because of that man?'

Ding Dongsheng had more than once saw her coming out from a man's car near her house.

"I don't want to go to college now. Forget me, we are from different worlds."

Rongrong left the last words to him since summer holiday began. He felt that he lost everything and buried himself at home for one week. Unexpectedly, that was their last meeting.

She committed suicide later.

He would never forget Xu Zhao, the man who changed Qiao Rongrong. The police told him that Rongrong fell down from the building herself. But he was reluctant to accept it.

'Xu Zhao was a key person in Rongrong's death.'

"Will you get revenge?"

A husky, sharp voice was saying to him. It was more like the voice from his deep heart.

Unbeknownst to him, something inky in his shadow was moving out and changing into another indistinct reflection.

That was the voice of Black Soul No.18.

...

...

"Why can't I hear such voices in the washroom?"

Ren Ziling was staring at Lizi despondently. Lizi was really a lucky dog. No wonder for someone who rarely played cards, she was always the final winner.

"Sister Ren, can you stop looking at me?" Lizi said.

Ren Ziling shrugged her shoulders. They were at a cafe near the cram school after class.

"According to what you said, Xu Zhao is a womanizer. Did the girls mention anything about the dead?" said by Ren Ziling.

Lizi nodded and said, "It sounded like they had accomplished something together. And judging from their conversation, maybe more students are involved in. What would it be?"

"Well..." Ren Ziling thought for a moment and then said, "Excellent. Lizi, you have helped me out this time. I need to inform Ma Houde as there might be dangerous deals behind it. The police can follow the clues and finally catch the culprit."

"Sister Ren, it's not like you. You would have tried to dig out the truth yourself if this happened before."

Ren Ziling took a drag on her cigarette and said, "Things have changed. Our duty is to expose the truth. But the further investigation should be done by the police. "

Lizi wouldn't believe her excuse. She winked and pressed, " Because of Luo Qiu?"

Ren Ziling took it for granted and said, "As a part of a family, we shouldn't bring danger to ourselves for both us and our families."

Although Luo Qiu told her that she could do anything she likes without scruples, but she couldn't.

It was so important that someone in your family could welcome you back with open arms.

In this case, she was satisfied that she could still help by conducting some investigations. She didn't forget her initial determination to take a back seat.

"Families..." Lizi put one spoon of ice cream into her mouth. Families? What would a family be?

Of course, she didn't know.

Lizi didn't have a family since she was conscious.

"Eh? Is that Xu Zhao?" Ren Ziling looked at the man behind Lizi's back.

Lizi turned her head at Xu Zhao.

The man was walking out from the cafe with a woman in his arms. If not mistaken, the woman was also a staff of this cram school.

Ren Ziling said disdainfully, "This guys taste is really wide. From students to married women. I remember this woman has a husband."

"Not surprisingly, he is a philander."

Suddenly, the two of them stopped their discussion due to shock. This was because a man with a hat and a mask had rushed toward Xu Zhao.

Xu Zhao was knocked on the ground before he realized it.

"What's wrong with you!" Xu Zhao was purple with anger.

The man who hit him was carrying a knife in his hands. And the knife now was by Xu Zhao's cheek!

"Calm down, bro." Xu Zhao was shivering. His anger vanished

The woman with him also screamed!

The guests who were sitting in the open area of the cafe stood up in a panic. Some of them were busy taking pictures, some thought this was a scene for a movie, and some were even going to call the police. However, no one was going to help Xu Zhao.

"Scumbag! Why did you kill Rongrong?" The man shouted.

"Who is Rongrong? I really don't know whom you are talking about. Dude, are you serious?"

"Qiao Rongrong, don't you remember?" his voice roared and sounded repressive.

"I do, I know her! But I didn't murder her. The police have confirmed that she committed suicide." Xu Zhao was frightened with cold sweat.

"Shut up!" The man got more frantic. "You dated her every day. How could you have another relationship with this woman so soon!"

"Oh, take it easy! Her death has nothing to do with me. She was willing to date me."

"What did you do to her?!"The masked man pulled up the knife as if he wanted to kill Xu Zhao directly.

"Wait, let me tell you." Xu Zhao shouted.

The masked man was stunned and stopped his actions. But right then, Xu Zhao grabbed the knife from the man's hands quickly and punched his face as fast as he could.

Xu Zhao's strike made the masked man's dizzy. At the same time,

Xu Zhao subdued the masked man and pinned him to the ground.

The situation was reversed now.

"Little boy!" Xu Zhao spat at the man and pinned him, so that he was unable to move. Xu Zhao looked down at him and said, "You dare touch me? Xiaomei, call the police, right now!"

He said to the woman who screamed.

The masked man was struggling frantically but it was to no avail as he was so thin and could not disengage himself from Xu Zhao.

"I have told you, Rongrong's death had nothing to do with me at all!" Xu Zhao sneered and said to the masked man, "But I know her better than you. Are you her boyfriend, or unrequited love? You didn't touch her, did you? She was a really skittish and avaricious b*tch!"

"Release me!!!"The masked man struck his limbs like a wild animal. "It's you! It must be you! You seduced her, you changed her!! It's you!!!"

"The cops are coming! I don't want to talk to you any more! But I'll see who you are! I'll remember you and I won't forgive you! You best be careful!"

A cup hit Xu Zhao's back ruthlessly just as he was trying to tear off the man's mask.

He screamed... the cup was just like a stone.

"Bastard, who attacked me! " Xu Zhao looked around angrily. In the meanwhile, the masked man had broken away.

The masked man didn't look back, and then rushed out of the crowd.

Xu Zhao was livid with rage. It was not realistic for him to chase the masked man at this point, not to mention finding out the one who attacked him as there were too many people watching here!

...

...

"Oh my God, the masked man was really brave!"

"So were you, Sister Ren. Well shot. It was very cool of you to throw that cup towards Xu Zhao."

They immediately followed up the masked man when he was escaping from the crowd. Unexpectedly, the masked man got on a cab on the road and left.

"I don't think we can catch up with him today. Sister Ren, where is your car?" Lizi seemed pretty disappointed.

"Don't mention it!" Ren Ziling shook her head. "I thought we could get some information from this masked man... I remembered Qiao Rongrong, who is one of the dead students. But who is this masked boy?"

The two women discussed fruitlessly and left with questions.

...

...

'Almost... almost got him...'

Ding Dongsheng regretted his hesitation at that time, and the words 'If I had not hesitated' kept repeating in his mind.

He walked down the street after throwing the hat and mask in a nearby trash can.

Ding Dongsheng clenched his fists without noticing that his knuckles had gone totally white.

Xu Zhao's words constantly occurred in his mind. Thinking of that, he felt even worse. He didn't want to believe any of Xu Zhao's words.

It was really ridiculous and total b*llshit!

'It was his temptation that changed Rongrong... It must be... He abandoned Rongrong and then Rongrong killed herself. It must be

like this...'

'Xu Zhao! I will never forgive you...I'm not going to give up!'

"But what can you do? After all, you didn't succeed. You can do nothing."

The shrill voice began to ring around his ear. He subconsciously looked at the glass of the shop's cabinet with his reflection on it.

He seemed to see his reflection was sneering as well as looking at himself disdainfully.

"You're just a student. You can't do anything. Xu Zhao is an adult in society. He knows people from all walks. In addition, you have no evidence, so it is not impossible to get revenge... You are a useless man."

"I am not!!!"

Ding Dongsheng began to growl at his reflection, "I am not! I am not! I am not!!"

He even went crazy to beat... his own reflection in the glass of the cabinet.

"I'm not..."

"Do you want protection? I know a place that can help you. However, you need to pay for it..."

Chapter 343: Bronze Sheet and People in the Rain

Clouds had stayed a whole day in the sky, and it had started raining since 9 o'clock in the evening.

A moderate rain.

Luo Qiu opened the door of the club. When it rained, there were very few pedestrians on the road and it would naturally become deserted. This was a good time to look at the city.

And it was a convenient time for him to go home.

He planned to walk home due to the moderate rain---but Boss Luo soon perished the thought.

A 17-year-old boy was standing outside the club, in the rain.

The rain washed away the noise of the street, but couldn't wipe the smell of a black soul on that boy. Luo Qiu could clearly distinguish the origin of the smell.

He knew that it was from Black Soul No.18.

'Such a hard-working envoy.' Luo Qiu thought.

Luo Qiu stepped back into the club hall, because he realized the boy would come in... after seeing the club gate.

"Prepare a cup of ginger tea."

Luo Qiu ordered Miss Maid gently.

...

"... when I was in class that day, I wrote some words on an eraser and intended to pass it on to her, but I accidentally dropped it on the ground. The teacher carelessly stepped on it with her high-heeled shoes and almost fell. Both she and I knew what was going on and laughed in secret."

He was telling his story with the girl, like it happened yesterday.

Ding Dongsheng and Qiao Rongrong.

A cup of hot ginger tea did not seem to disperse the coldness of the rain but the memory could bring him warmth.

Luo Qiu was used to listening to others' stories.

He even forgot about the time for going home, as the guest needed a good audience.

Every single trifle could give Ding Dongsheng an aftertaste... Only until he finished pouring out all his memories, did he fall into silence.

"Anymore?" Ding Dongsheng grasped his hair and closed eyes tightly, "There should be... let me think, there really should be!"

Snap.

His hands slammed on the table at the same time, and look turned bleak and desolate. "There should be lots of memories! We should have had a lot of memories! It was all that man's fault! Rongrong left me and the world because of his appearance! I want this man to feel the consequences of his evil! He needs to pay for what he has done! I don't want him to live well!!"

He gazed at the club boss.

Ding Dongsheng wasn't afraid of anything... He wouldn't be afraid because hatred clouded his eyes and anger hid his sensibility.

"You know you cannot change your decision after it has been spoken," Luo Qiu said indifferently, "So you must think about it thoroughly before raising your request."

"Do you think its necessary?" Ding Dongsheng asked back.

Luo Qiu said after a moment of silence, "As far as I know, the police in this city have already begun to investigate the cram school. Xu Zhao, who you hate, eventually will not be able to

escape from the law. In other words, the punishment you want will happen sooner or later. Customer, are you sure you want to make such a request?"

"I can't wait." Ding Dongsheng said in a low voice, "Do you know how much time the police need to investigate? One month? Two months? Or half a year? But I can't wait for even one day!! I cannot do anything to him! Furthermore, even if he's caught, the punishment will just be staying in jail! But my Rongrong is gone! I can't forgive him at all!"

Luo Qiu looked directly at this Ding Dongsheng's eyes. He seemed to be seen through but didn't avoid the gaze.

"I understand." Luo Qiu nodded, "But Customer, what will you pay for it?"

Ding Dongsheng deeply breathed, and fished out a box from his clothes.

It was a palm-sized box.

At the moment the box opened, a sheet of bronze was presented in front of Luo Qiu, Ding Dongsheng said, "This is something passed down from my family and is very valuable! Is it enough?"

The words on it looked gloomy---Luo Qiu hadn't received such a treasure as the transaction fee for a long time.

His palm stroke through the sheet bronze, and nodded, "Yes, tell me your request, and I will evaluate if it's beyond the price of this piece of bronze."

Ding Dongsheng blurted out with no thought, "I want Xu Zhao's name to be utterly discredited, and wish to die!"

"Deal."

...

Ding Dongsheng ran wildly on the street in the rain. He showed an unusual smile... excited and as if he saw hope.

Very pathetic.

"Master is not interested in it?" You Ye asked while cleaning up the tea set. She didn't see a smile from Luo Qiu after he took off his mask.

"It's not that. I used to be interested in antiques," Luo Qiu said softly.

But he shook his head later, "That piece of bronze is interesting. But what's more, that treasure is used for such a purpose by the descendant."

Luo Qiu played around with the clown mask, "It makes me recall a piece of news before. An ordinary family's child used up all his grandmother's annuity and even went to rob."

The servant girl said, "Master, do you mean 'beauties beget disasters'?"

Luo Qiu just smiled.

He opened his hands and the account book in the first floor of the basement appeared directly in his hands. The pages turned automatically.

He was reading some information about the potential customer Black Soul No. 18 chose.

"It seems that Mrs. Witch attracts potential customers here with hatred."

Several minutes later, Luo Qiu sent the account book back.

"Black Souls No.18 is pretty good in this respect." You Ye nodded. "All along, Black Soul No.18's customers are steadily in the top 3 of all envoys'. Hatred is indeed a good thing to stimulate the desire of potential customers."

"I've noticed of that."

Luo Qiu smiled---Black Soul No. 18 found another potential customer after a few days he met her.

He didn't even need to attract Ding Dongsheng by sending out black cards.

"You Ye will analyze all the information about Xu Zhao before Master wakes up tomorrow," the servant girl said.

What she could do didn't need to be done through the altar--- The new boss differed from the old boss in his operating procedures.

The former one was so busy that he had to resort to the altar in getting intelligence.

As for the new boss... he had lots of spare time.

"No." Luo Qiu waved his hand, "Let him do it."

With his words, Luo Qiu snapped his fingers, then a figure showed up from the ceiling---Tai Yinzi, who had been hung on the ceiling--- from the day Luo Qiu came back from Russia, till today.

After the customer left, he shouldn't be hidden any longer... Luo Qiu obviously wouldn't treat it as if Tai Yinzi had some peculiar hobby.

The black rope was broken, and Tai Yinzi knelt down to appreciate his master's kindness--- it was the way for an ancient person to thank somebody.

"Tai Yinzi, the police is starting to investigate the incident of the cram school, but there is no substantial progress. Go help them." Luo Qiu said, "Since the customer requests speed, then let us have Xu Zhao be utterly discredited!"

"Master! Old Taoist won't let you down!!"

Tai Yinzi made up his mind not to screw it up... 'Who knows how long I will be hung next time?'

...

In the rain, Ding Dongsheng stopped, hiding under the roof and weeping secretly.

On the other side, Shen Meihuan and her son were watching TV in the apartment they rented.

He wore a gauze mask and a hat, following them to the block of flat, watching their apartment under the building.

...

Luo Qiu opened an umbrella and walked in the rain.

After midnight, it turned into a rainstorm.

A pouring rain.

Chapter 344: Building an Equal and Peaceful World

The temperature of the city dropped drastically because of the heavy rain throughout the whole night.

A new typhoon arrived along with it.

This coastal city saw more typhoons this year compared to former years.

There were many similar cases, floods happened in many places around this country.

Those were all because the natural environment getting worse... but ordinary people wouldn't care about such issues and who should be blamed.

They only thought of their own lives, such as which way they should go through the very next morning or when the sewers were almost blocked in many streets.

Nevertheless, Ma Houde's colleagues weren't late for work despite the traffic---because they hadn't left the police station at all.

Working overtime.

The whole night, all the people in the department were dispatched to investigate Xu Zhao's background. As for the reason, it was because of the clues Officer Ma received from Subeditor Ren.

"Xu Zhao, according to his monthly tax revenue, belongs to the high-income group. The annual income should be around 1 million." A young police officer was reporting to Officer Ma, "But we found out that he is a playboy interested in drinking, gambling and ladies. He enters Beauty Heaven at least five times a month, as well as some other entertainment venues... It is estimated that his monthly consumption is at least 100,000 Yuan. In addition to the

house he lives, there are two sets of commercial apartments in use. He needs to repay 46,700 for the monthly loan. Besides, he bought a Mercedes-Benz car last month, 800,000 Yuan..."

"Well, something must be wrong with this guy's financials, but that is not our responsibility..." Ma Houde shook his head, "But from the discrepancy between his income and consumption, I'm sure he has other gray income..."

But by right, a cram school principal should not have some ways to get 'extra money'.

"Oh, we also found out that Xu Zhao rented a penthouse villa in Jihao International in his name. The security guards inside said many cars were parked there before, but recently, about one week, that villa hasn't been lighted up."

He paused, and then continued concluding, "We suspect that Xu Zhao is doing something there, but suddenly stopped recently... It matches the time we started to investigate the tutorial school. Officer Ma, do you think someone leaked out our information?"

Ma Houde frowned, "Do you think somebody in the department did it?"

The young policeman shook his head, and Ma Houde knocked the table for seconds, "The wall has ears. The big boss of the cram school is Dai Youcai, who has good relationships with many high officials and officers."

Ma Houde didn't continue his sentence---Saying, for example, the leader in his team was a talkative guy after drinking several glasses of beers.

"There must be something hiding in that villa of Jihao International, order two guys to have a 24-hour surveillance." Ma Houde lowered his voice.

Impatience was a serious mistake in investigations... Before getting evidence, you had to patiently wait for the other party's

mistake.

But Officer Ma's couldn't have possibly predicted that... there was little time for him to wait!

When the young policeman was about to assign the tasks, another officer walked into the department room.

"Officer Ma, a man called Xu Zhao is here to confess for his crime!"

...

Across the glass in the interrogation room, Ma Houde sized Xu Zhao up and down.

'Is he out of his mind?'

He was shaking his head while crossing his legs... It was not the appearance of drug users, but similar to an old guy listening to traditional operas.

In fact, through equipment, they figured out that he was really doing that.

"Ich-Will."

"What?" Ma Houde looked at the young policeman curiously.

He pointed at Xu Zhao, shrugging his shoulders, "Ich-Will, he's humming the song of a heavy metal band."

Ma Houde gaped, and then shook his head, walking into the room, throwing the notebook on the table, and sitting down opposite to Xu Zhao.

"Are you Xu Zhao? You came to confess?" Ma Houde said seriously, "Why?"

"Oh, hello, Officer Ma!" Xu Zhao straightened his body, and cleared his throat, "Oh, old Taoist..."

"Old Taoist?"

"Oh, no, I mean, I came here because I committed crimes."

Ma Houde rolled his eyes, and turned his notebook to record, "Tell me, what crimes did you commit?"

"Bribery, organizational prostitution and fornication with underage girls."

"Bribery...and what?" Officer Ma raised his head, worrying if he misheard it.

"Organizational prostitution and fornication with underage girls." 'Xu Zhao' said, "Officer, it that clear?"

"Yeah."

Ma Houde was totally shocked... 'Is there something wrong with his brain?'

"Xu Zhao, you need to take this seriously, because every word of you will be recorded and presented in court."

"Officer, I totally understand!"

'Xu Zhao' nodded, "I swear what I tell you next are all what I have done. Officer, I'm guilty and condemned by my heart, so I will tell you all my crimes, exposing those evil things hiding in the dark, building an equal and peaceful world..."

"Stop, stop, stop!" Ma Houde waved his hand, "Are you going to make a speech? Making fun of the police?"

"No, I dare not to trick you!" 'Xu Zhao' waved his hands.

Ma Houde glared at this guy, before heaving a sigh, "Tell me, what did you do."

"Yes." 'Xu Zhao' breathed a sigh of relief, continuing saying, "First of all, we try to seduce students of the cram school with money and grades. As long as students agree, then we won't worry about lacking customers. You know, the supply of girl students falls short of demand!"

Upon hearing Xu Zhao's word, Ma Houde felt incredulous at the students' behaviors.

"Wait, it makes sense to seduce them with money and valuables, but what do you mean grades?" Ma Houde frowned.

Xu Zhao grinned, "Because some of our guests are principals of some key schools, it's very easy to get the paper and questions from them. It's a cost-efficient deal for those girl students!"

"Humph!" Ma Houde enraged, "They are not grown-ups and are still immature! You..."

"Officer! I know what you want to say, I'm not human, I'm an animal! So I came to confess, isn't that good?"

Ma Houde didn't release his anger... He never saw any criminal revealing his crimes obediently like this person.

Officer Ma deeply breathed, calming down and asking, "Then how can you prove that you really committed the crimes?"

'Xu Zhao' fished out a key, "Officer, it's the key to my house. There is a laptop in my wardrobe with all the evidence you want. Oh right, the password is 77888555!"

Ma Houde grasped the key with doubts, standing up after thinking a while, "Wait here, we'll go to check!"

After that, Officer Ma pushed open the door and left.

'He's really obedient...what the hell!'

...

...

Half a day passed.

When Ma Houde came back to him, he showed a long face while sitting in front of Xu Zhao.

Xu Zhao asked quickly, "Sir, did you get it?"

Ma Houde sneered, "Yes! Very clear. As you said, we did find out that laptop with plenty of photos about victims... You're quite a good guy, taking photos after screwing with underage girls. Do you

wish to die?"

"Alas, don't focus on the details!" Xu Zhao asked nervously, "Sir, will I be utterly discredited?"

"Discredited?" Ma Houde sneered, "Not enough! Now that we got all the evidence! At least 3 years, the most serious one is the death penalty!"

'Xu Zhao' heaved a long sigh, saying in a relaxed tone, "Then, I feel relieved!"

After saying, Xu Zhao suddenly looked down, slumping onto the table and stopped moving.

Ma Houde was stunned, pulling him up, but found that this guy was just sleeping...

Chapter 345: To Be Continued

"Escaped?"

In a café by the police station, Ren Ziling looked at Officer Ma in surprised.

Ma Houde reluctantly said, "We went to Dai Youcai's home that day, but he was gone. His wife and children didn't know where he was going, they just said that he rushed out hurriedly. We suspect he got wind of what was happening, so he fled at the first instance."

Ren Ziling frowned. "Did Xu Zhao confess about the suicide of the students?"

Ma Houde shook his head and said, "No. He just explained the embarrassing things he did about the cram school. Then he fainted; when he woke up..."

"When he woke up?"

Ma Houde nodded and said seriously, "When he woke up, this guy seems to have forgotten what he did and expressed surprise. He even said that we treated him unjustly until we showed him the things we found in his home and the video of interrogation, he still didn't believe the guy in the video was himself."

"He confessed, fainted, and forgot after waking up... that weird?" Ren Ziing opened her mouth, how could such issue happen?

If it wasn't told by her old friend Ma Houde, she would think that she was reading a ridiculous novel.

"Forget the weird behavior of Xu Zhao; anyway, he can't escape from the station. What we found in his home will have him jailed his whole life." Ma Houde frowned, "The key thing is, there are a few points that showed he was not involved in the suicide of several students. The reason was because he was out of this city when two of the students died."

"Old Ma, do you think that this guy tried to threaten these students with the things on his hand, so they couldn't bear the pressure, fearing others will discover about these scandals, thus committed suicide?"

"If so, then how would you explain the continuous suicide of 5 students? That's too many."

"Yeah..." Ren Ziling nodded, and shook her head again, "But, I never expected that Dai Youcai and Xu Zhao to emerge from the water during the investigation of the suicide of those students. You made a great contribution! Don't forget to treat me after getting the bonus!"

Ma Houde sighed, "No way! I'm totally confused about the person that purchased such services from Dai Youcai. It's not a simple organizational prostitution, there must be some more trades behind... I suspect Dai Youcai is only a chess piece of someone who controls everything from behind. Maybe... there is something more profitable at the back."

Ren Ziling whispered, "What kind of people will buy these services?"

Ma Houde glanced at Ren Ziling, saying emotionlessly, "I can tell you the details of the case, but not the people at back, because we're forbidden to leak these. Otherwise... do you think Dai Youcai could run so fast?"

"OK." Ren Ziling nodded.

If Ma Houde was told not to reveal anything, then Ren Ziling knew how serious it was.

She sighed, "But if that case has nothing to do with Dai Youcai and Xu Zhao... then who is the culprit? Oh by the way, was it verified that Xu Zhao tempted those 5 kids to enter the prostitution trade?"

"Except Gu Jiajie." Ma Houde watched the time, "I have to go seal

off the cram school... maybe we can get some more evidence like last time."

Ren Ziling shrugged shoulders, "Go ahead, I'll pay the bill. I hope you have some good news and bring them to justice."

Ma Houde smiled bitterly, "We don't know how their parents feel after knowing their kids did this."

Ren Ziling stayed silent.

It was not a topic for them to discuss further.

...

...

Under the iron window, Xu Zhao was still terrified. With his bloodshot eyes and dark circles, he had not slept these days.

He couldn't imagine how he could go to the police station and tell them those!

He just remembered the night before he came back. He drunk, went home to sleep, and when he woke up, he found he was already in the interrogation room.

Why did he confess?

The evidence was just in case Dai Youcai betrayed him... and the chip was to negotiate with him.

As for those photos of underage girls... he admitted that it was his hobby. But instead of saying it was his hobby, it should be more precise in saying it was actually his innermost demon.

However...

"It shouldn't be... shouldn't be..."

Xu Zhao kept asking himself in the interrogation room... was it because he suddenly felt guilty and couldn't bear the suffering, so he came to confess?

Those words he said in the video were total b*llshit!

If so, he wouldn't be feeling so painful and frightened now--- From now on, he had to live in jail for his remaining life.

The rest of his life?

Xu Zhao gazed at outside, it was like a dream... He didn't understand why he confessed.

"Why?"

Xu Zhao's head hit the wall, repeating this sentence, 'How could this be.'

...

"He screwed up his life."

At the seat of the club hall, Ding Dongsheng said this with a sneer, then moved his sight to him.

"You don't want to watch any longer?" Boss Luo asked.

"It's not necessary," Ding Dongsheng said indifferently.

A screen near him showed the frames of Xu Zhao in the interrogation room. After his order, Luo Qiu waved his hand, and the screen disappeared.

Luo Qiu said, "The evidence will be enough to detain him for the whole life. So, your request has been completed. And Xu Zhao has to suffer his remaining life in jail, which is much worse than death to him... Customer, are you satisfied with this kind of misery?"

Ding Dongsheng didn't say a word but placed the box with the bronze sheet on the table, leaving with a sentence, "It's yours now."

Luo Qiu glanced at it. He didn't touch but just said, "Thank you for your patronage."

"Don't say it so nicely." Ding Dongsheng snorted, "You're no different from Xu Zhao. You can do anything for your own benefit."

"We're doing business and I won't deny it," Luo Qiu responded.

"It's good that you admitted it." Ding Dongsheng sneered, "Then tell me, why didn't you tell me that Rongrong's death had nothing to do with Xu Zhao?"

"First." Luo Qiu raised his head, explaining slowly, "Everything here is a paid service, and we don't have the obligation to tell customers the things they didn't know."

"Second, I told you before, that the police were already onto Xu Zhao's trail."

Luo Qiu paused his words, watching Ding Dongsheng's embarrassed face, and saying softly, "At last, is it so important for Rongrong's death to have no direct relation with Xu Zhao?"

"What did you say?" Ding Dongsheng got irritated. Both his hands pressed down on the table, his eyes glaring at Boss Luo.

"You laughed happily just now..." Luo Qiu said softly, "The moment you saw Xu Zhao's pain, you laughed happily didn't you? Did you recall some of the memories you told me? Even if it is just one?"

"I..." Ding Dongsheng stepped back, revealing a slightly nervous look while looking at the quiet boss, with a hint of fear, "...I don't know what you're talking about!"

He retreated until the doorway of the club; then turned, pushed open the door and left the club without turning back.

...

The servant girl held the turning door.

She threw a gaze to her master, saying, "What a cheap and ugly soul."

"We won't always see the best food materials in the market, will we?"

Luo Qiu said thoughtlessly, and opened the box to pick up the

bronze sheet. He looked at it, "This one is worth it to provide him with our service."

Chapter 346: Alone

Tai Yinzi quietly stood in the club's lobby, watching the club owner playing with the bronze sheet. He didn't make any noise.

Luo Qiu stopped playing with it after 10 minutes.

"Tai Yinzi, you did well with efficiency this time, although it was crude."

Tai Yinzi acted humbly then... This was the first time he received appreciation from his boss since he became one of the Black Soul Envoys.

He looked delighted.

Since he came to the club, he was even suppressed by that slave b*tch Qin Chuyu.

Now the recognition from Boss Luo made him remember of the days he was praised by his sect master 500 hundred years ago.

'What the hell... why does a Taoist with 60 years cultivating experience still have vanity?'

'More praise please!'

"Master! I've thought a lot these days and recognized that I still have lots of weaknesses. From now on, Old Taoist will work harder for the club, to pay back Master's trust and expectations on me!"

"Oh... Good." Luo Qiu glanced at this old ghost.

He had no expectations from the beginning... and Tai Yinzi was just the material for Luo Qiu to research the procedure of the transformation of Black Soul Envoys.

"OK, I'm looking forward to your results." Boss Luo nodded.

Tai Yinzi took a deep breath and made a deep bow to the servant girl, saying respectfully, "Thank you for the teachings. Tai Yinzi will remember it!"

You Ye felt a little surprised, and opened her mouth; but soon it turned to a smile. Then she nodded.

"Master, Old Taoist is going to seek for potential customers right now! And will make you satisfied!"

"Go ahead." Luo Qiu waved his hand.

Tai Yinzi transformed into a black wind and blew out of the club. After that, Qin Chuyu slowly opened her eyes, saying indifferently, "A traitorous guy will never succeed."

After, this Taoist cultivator closed her eyes again.

Luo Qiu didn't take much attention to her words... because it was not important for the club to know if Tai Yinzi was a traitor.

Whether he betrayed them or not, Luo Qiu could easily know, if he wanted.

"Don't cook dinner this evening." Luo Qiu gave the bronze sheet to You Ye, ordering her to put it at the basement's first floor, then said, "I have to welcome a guest."

...

...

It turned out the customer was Lizi.

Ren Ziling said she would treat Lizi a meal.

For thanking Lizi's help.

Ren Ziling raised the wine glass at the dinner table, "Let's toast for revealing the disgusting matters of the cram school and root out a cancer in society!"

Luo Qiu hadn't seen Ren Ziling's laugh like this for a long time.

The last time he saw her laugh like this was several years ago.

At that time, she showed delightfulness each time when his father arrested a prisoner.

"Yeah, sure." Lizi nodded. Even with pan-fried sliced fish in her mouth, she could still speak fluently, "But it's a pity that we didn't find out the reason of the students' deaths by jumping from the building."

Ren Ziling also felt it to be regrettable, "Yeah, the cram school had been shut down, but the mysterious teacher will go into hiding just for this period."

"Officer Ma is still investigating this issue right? Those evil-doers will never escape from justice." Lizi comforted her.

"Right." Ren Ziling calmed down her mood, "Let's skip this topic on this happy evening. Let's talk about something good! Brat, do you still remember Lui Yinyu?"

"The girl of the Lui Village?" Luo Qiu gaped.

"Yes!" Ren Ziling smiled, "She emailed me today, saying that she'll come to the school around here starting next week!"

"Really?" Luo Qiu nodded, smiling, "That's good."

"Yes, hopefully she will have a new life!" Ren Ziling shook the wine glass, "She is going to your school! I promised to treat her to a dinner upon arriving. By the way, you won't refuse to show her around your school, will you?"

Luo Qiu... Boss Luo had already dropped out of school.

But he didn't tell them---Of course, he didn't plan too now either. Luo Qiu nodded and agreed... he knew that girl wouldn't tell them.

"Why did you agree so quickly?" Ren Ziling gaped, "I thought you'll feel bothered and refuse it, so I had prepared a lot of words for you."

"Well... I refuse."

"...F*ck!! Can you save my face in front of the guest?!!"

"Eat some food." Luo Qiu didn't answer but passed some food to Ren Ziling.

"Thank you!" Ren Ziling raised her eyebrows with satisfaction.

Was this what family meant?

Lizi watched and listened to their conversation, and felt something she couldn't sense spreading from the table.

It made her feel a bit lost.

"Lizi, don't be shy. Why did you stop eating your favorite food? Not to your liking?" Ren Ziling asked her.

Lizi waved her hand, "No! Sister Ren, the food Luo Qiu cooked is pretty good, I seldom have had such tasty food these years... I'm just unwilling to eat it all at this time."

"What kind of taste?" Ren Ziling gave a start.

Lizi held up her bowl, and showed a yearning gaze, saying, "There is a warm taste."

"Er..." Ren Ziling was stunned and quickly had a taste. After a while of chewing, she asked back, "Is it because of the chili?"

Lizi laughed out loud.

"Stop being weird." Ren Ziling shook her head, "Take more and you can come for dinner any time. Don't be shy, take it as your own home."

Lizi nodded slightly.

But she knew that she wouldn't always come here.

"Where is your hometown?" Luo Qiu suddenly asked Lizi.

Lizi answered after thinking, "It's a very cold place and constantly snowing."

Ren Ziling was shocked, "Lizi, I remember your hometown is Hainan on your resume?"

"That's only my household register." Lizi shook her head, and blinked eyes, "But it's not where I grew up... I'll tell you that later."

"Where? Don't be so mysterious."

Lizi said softly, "Mystery will make you remember me."

"What the hell? It sounds like you may disappear at any time." Ren Ziling shook her head, "OK, stop talking, let's eat."

Lizi answered with an okay.

...

...

The dinner took a long time.

When she left, Lizi refused Ren Ziling's request to send her back home; she went downstairs herself... she was used to being alone.

Eating alone, sleeping alone, staying in her rented room alone... Even staying home for half a month... however, she wouldn't stay in a single place for too long.

She finally turned around and overlooked the floor of Ren Ziling's home, looking at the light that brought her warmth, comparing it with the cool sky after the rain. Then she muttered to herself, "Well... what about staying for a little while?"

She smiled suddenly, taking out an orange-flavor lollipop and put it into her mouth. Opening her arms, she walked along the white line of the street.

Humming an unknown song.

She suddenly jumped on one foot, like a kid playing hopscotch.

She thought there shouldn't be many people that knew her.

She was still alone.

She was Lizi, who had been living in this world for 197 years.

Chapter 347: Criminal Suspect and Officer of the Provincial Government

Ren Ziling washed the dishes while humming 'Give the world to you'---the song Luo Qiu had heard previously.

After several months, Ren Ziling was still worrying about her good friends from university days.

"No news from her yet?" Luo Qiu asked while getting a bottle of water from the fridge.

"News?" Ren Ziling was stunned, stopping her work and looking at Luo Qiu with curiosity.

Luo Qiu answered, "I mean Tu Jiaya, weren't you humming her signature song?"

"No." Ren Ziling shook her head and sighed, "I was just humming some song, don't think too much. What is your head made up of?"

"Water, protein, fat... almost the same as yours."

"..." Ren Ziling rolled her eyes, "You know I don't mean this... By the way, can you think carefully, did we miss something about the cram school? Like what Old Ma said, a bystander may see things more clearly."

She grabbed Luo Qiu's arm, forgetting that she was washing dishes. Her gloves still had bubbles on them.

Boss Luo slapped her hand away, then washed his arms and walked to the living room with his cup.

Ren Ziling chased after him, asking with a hurtful face, "Can't you give me some support?"

"That rumor." Luo Qiu sat down, turning on the TV and watching news, "Repeat it again."

Ren Ziling took off her gloves, sitting down and thinking, "It

states that there is a teacher, who could improve the scores of any kind of students, even if they are inferior students."

"What do students think of the rumor?"

"I think they are still dubious. Most of them know the rumor, but this topic does not seem to be the main focus of the students in the cram school... Of course, we know that's because part of them can improve their scores in another way, which is better---I mean by trading for the exam papers."

Ren Ziling shook her head, "If the teacher is so skillful, he should have become famous earlier. Even if he is modest, many high-scoring students he taught should understand his capabilites."

"Then why is such a rumor spreaded?" Luo Qiu continued asking.

Ren Ziling was stunned for a moment and frowned, "Yeah...Why does this rumor exist at all? It feels like somebody purposely spread it."

"Why would they want to make it well known?"

"Why... because they want people to notice it."

Ren Ziling followed this thought and suddenly said, "The leading actor is the mysterious teacher, but nobody knows his real identity... Then, think about it, if the police came to investigate the issue, they would easily be leaded to finding out the teacher's identity... Is somebody intentionally leading us to chase after the 'teacher'?"

"What's the motivation?"

"For reducing the possibility of them receiving investigation..." Ren Ziling turned to Luo Qiu, "It says the mysterious teacher can improve their scores, so he must be experienced in teaching, or be a person like Xu Zhao, who can secretly get the test paper... We also investigated following this lead. But in all probability, this teacher may not know how to teach at all!"

Luo Qiu didn't reply, he just listened to Ren Ziling's monologue.

"...A staff of the cram school that doesn't know how to teach but can get access to the information of all the students." Ren Ziling recalled all the details, "There are many offices in it, and the staff in each office only owns the keys to their own office. Besides that, the police checked all the surveillance cameras but didn't find anybody sneaking into other offices..."

Ren Ziling subconsciously wanted to pick up the teacup, which was actually not beside her. However, she still made the gesture to 'grasp' it.

Boss Luo pushed the cup to her.

So, Subeditor Ren successfully took up the teacup, sipping it, and considering the issue.

"...Xu Zhao didn't admit he was involved in the students' death but the police have reasons to believe that he and Dai Youcai threatened the students with the evidence. Furthermore, teenagers scare easily and are immature, so they chose to commit suicide..."

"Luo Qiu, do you think this rumor is a lie concocted by the real criminal to escape?"

Ren Ziling raised her head, "After all, if the scandal of the cram school can affect many famous... even some officials..."

Luo Qiu said calmly, "Don't know how to teach, is not a teacher, but have all students' information, does such a kind of person exist?"

"Yes... there is. And I have seen her!"

Ren Ziling deeply breathed, "That female receptionist! She can get all information about students! And she knows more than any other one! Think about it, she even knows clearly the time Xu Zhao and Dai Youcai show up and she makes tea and pour water to them. If she heard something... My god, she may be the most suspicious person! Brat, you helped me out again this time!"

With her words, the excited Subeditor Ren held Boss Luo Qiu face and was about to give him a kiss.

But unexpectedly, a bottle of water stopped this woman's violation.

"F*ck! Don't you like my reward?" Ren Ziling felt hurt.

Luo Qiu said, "Forget about the reward. If you want, go wash dishes, don't delay it until tomorrow."

"Well... ok, I'll do it."

...

...

"That's what my boy reminded me off last evening."

In the café near the police station.

It was an old café with a decade of history. It was also the place Ren Ziling kept in contact with the police... before Luo Qiu's father died. There were more memories there.

Ma Houde opened his mouth after a while, "In reality, we had put the receptionist into our investigation list, just as Luo Qiu said."

He shook his head then, "But before investigation, Xu Zhao became crazy and came for confessing his crime... Anyway, she is suspicious, but we didn't understand her motivation... Well, I'll order them to follow the receptionist."

Ma Houde's phone rang suddenly. After that, he said an officer wanted to meet him and then paid the bill.

...

"Let me introduce, this is Wang Yuechuan from the provincial public security." His leader, Old Liu, introduced a man in suit around 28.

Ma Houde had seen countless of people before and easily found slight hint of arrogance from him---but on the other hand, it was

reasonable for him to be arrogant as a provincial officer.

"This is Ma Houde, the most experienced guy in our station. He keeps this area quiet and peaceful." The leader, Old Liu, said with satisfaction.

"Really?"

Wang Yuechuan said indifferently, "But I heard several students committed suicide here. And it shocked the provincial public security. Earlier, there were some homicide cases and a kid's dead body was dug out at a surrounding university... Is it quiet and peaceful?"

Old Liu felt awkward; he cleared his throat and looked at Ma Houde, "Officer Wang came to investigate the issue of the cram school. Ma Houde, give assistance to Officer Wang, don't be lazy, understand?"

Officer Ma... Ma Houde just listened to his words, nodding weakly.

Chapter 348: Supercilious Person

"Here is the information of Xu Zhao, Dai Youcai, the cram school staff, and those students'."

Ma Houde placed a thick stack of information in front of Wang Yuechuan and said indifferently, "What else do you need?"

"That's enough." Wang Yuechuan answered calmly, "Is this room always this quiet?"

Ma Houde glanced around, saying indifferently, "Yes, this place is only for meetings."

"OK."

Wang Yuechuan nodded. "I'm going to read the information here and will notify you if necessary."

"Fine." Officer Ma shrugged, walking out of the meeting room... Of course, shutting the door heavily.

Outside the room, a group of young policemen walked quickly toward Officer Ma and started asking their questions curiously.

"Officer Ma, where is that guy from? He looks so high and mighty."

"Not only that. He never even lowered his head just now."

Ma Houde snorted, "Are you busybodies? You all finished your work and are very idle? Shall we go patrol?"

The group immediately broke up in a hubbub.

Ma Houde went back to his own room, drawing the curtains and gazing at the meeting room--- Just like this, Ma Houde smoked while monitoring Wang Yuechuan, who was reading the documents.

Time flew.

"It has been almost 2 hours."

Ma Houde massaged his back and felt amazed that Wang Yuechuan did not seem to move during this time... He had to say that this guy was very serious.

Suddenly, Wang Yuechuan stood up and pushed open the door, waving at Ma Houde's room... This scared Ma Houde---who was playing Minesweeper and smoking---Bow!

My record! So close...

...

"Anything you want to know? Mr. Wang Yuechuan."

Officer Ma tried to control his voice ensure his grumpiness wasn't obvious... My record!!

Wang Yuechuan walked close to the meeting table, pulling out a document, looking at it. "Officer Ma, though it was certified that all of 5 of them died due to suicide, but why didn't you suspect their identity judging that they were students from the same cram school?"

"I'm investigating that issue right now," Ma Houde said calmly.

Wang Yuechuan glanced at him indifferently, nodding and continuing his words, "Did you circle the suspect list, about the people that were able to obtain information about the students and the rumor spreaders?"

"Yes... any problem?"

"No, you're doing good."

Wang Yuechuan nodded, "However, we can narrow the range. Let's leave the motive for now first. Why did Xu Zhao suddenly give himself up---Have you ever thought that the criminal might have deliberately lead you to a wrong train of thought, which was why he made up such a rumor? For example... that his identity is not a teacher?"

Wang Yuechuan turned to a page, where there was a snapshot...

The receptionist of the cram school---Zhao Ru.

"This... is the same as Little Luo Qiu's deduction." Ma Houde subconsciously said with a full face of surprise.

This kind of unconscious mumbling was quickly stopped by him.

However, Wang Yuechuan had heard it. He frowned. "Who is Little Luo Qiu? Someone inside the station?"

"No, he's one of my nephews." Ma Houde shook his head.

"Is he in our system?" Wang Yuechuan asked.

Ma Houde shook his head again... He suddenly felt that Wang Yuechuan was like a viper, very sensitive.

He even imagined what he would say next. So he said, "Don't worry, I didn't reveal anything about the deals of the cram school under the table. I just let an onlooker help me activate my thoughts! Well, he's a relative of a person in our system---his father, who died in the line of duty."

"I don't care who has died or what kind of person his father is. Death in line of duty cannot give a privilege to his relatives. Also, his father was not good enough to be a policeman if he couldn't protect himself at work."

Wang Yuechuan said emotionlessly, "As for you, Officer Ma, I suspect your ability as well because you rely on an onlooker to investigate this issue."

Ma Houde couldn't control his fiery temper.

He ever confronted the leader in office when he was angry.

And Brother Luo was a holy and inviolable person in his heart.

He pulled his face, walking to Wang Yuechuan, "You don't know nothing. Do you know what kind of person Brother Luo was? How many criminals he caught? And that time, you were just a little kid. How dare you say he is incapable in his work?"

"Officer Ma, yes, I was a kid several years ago." Wang Yuechuan said indifferently, "But at least, I never hid myself in my room, while smoking and playing games."

"I'm just activating my thought process. Understand?!"

"I don't care about how you think." Wang Yuechuan tapped the document, "And I'm just giving you my opinion. Sorry for the offence. I'm just saying it straight. And about Brother Luo, I'll check his information. If I'm wrong, I will apologize to you too. But anyway, I think a policeman that cannot protect himself is not a good one."

"You!"

Ma Houde deeply breathed, controlling his temper, "Young man, there is nothing wrong with being a bit arrogant. Hopefully, you can be the person I will admire, and I also hope that you have the ability to protect yourself as a good policeman should have."

"I will." Wang Yuechuan said expressionlessly.

Officer Ma left the meeting room with the document... He was unwilling to speak anymore with this guy besides work matters.

He thought, 'This guy will get into trouble sooner or later.'

"Hello, check Zhao Ru's address for me please."

He called someone.

Since a provincial officer came for the case behind the cram school, Officer Ma thought he only needed to focus on the five suicide cases... It was unfair for those students to die even though they did something wrong.

He thought he needed to bring some back some justice for them.

...

...

"9 o'clock on the 29th, got on a car at the third crossing near the

old station, two seats, here is the receipt, but I need the deposit first."

Shen Meihuan paid it to this man, getting the receipt and left with her head lowered.

She thought it better to leave this city.

She knew that Gu Feng already reported her as missing from the short messages on her cellphone... She couldn't show up anymore at this place or let others know that her son was still alive.

She chose to leave this province by illegal cars because they didn't require ID cards... To start their life somewhere else, just like the situation when she left home and came to this city with her son.

She wrapped up her clothes; it was still rainy and cold after the rainstorm.

Shen Meihuan suddenly turned around to check her back.

She felt someone was following her these days---This was the second reason for her to leave in a hurry besides the first one---Gu Feng reporting her to the police.

But she didn't see anything behind her.

The follower, who wore a mask and sunglasses, came out of a shop and continued to tail her.

Chapter 349: The Devil In The Heart 1st

The story of Zhao Ru was very simple, or one should say, common.

Going to work, going home. The days passed quickly with either smiles or silence.

If one color could be used to describe her life, it would be the color of walls that were decades old.

Of course, she was a really optimistic girl.

There were many exquisite details in this ten-square-meter rented room. Such as the new wall-coverings, the old but spotless floor and also the rusty but noiseless iron window.

One could imagine the small pits and flaws on the old walls. However, they were covered up with some simple decorations.

Now, she was cooking in a small corner in the room. That was her"kitchen".

Zhao Ru heard someone knocking at the door while she was cutting the vegetables. She had no idea that who would want to visit her during the lunch hour.

"Are you...Mr. Ma?"

She was pretty astonished when she saw one of the students standing out of her house. Actually, she found out the real identity of Mr. Ma a few days ago.

It was the time when he led a team to search the cram school, she realized he was a policeman.

"Oh, Maybe I should call you Officer Ma." Zhao Ru opened the door and said, "What's the matter?"

Obviously, she was not going to let him in if the policeman didn't ask for.

"Well, it's like this. Would you please help us answer some questions for further investigation?" Ma Houde said to her with a smile.

As a seasoned police, he had perceived her hesitation and resistance.

He shot a glance inside the small room and saw an opened suitcase lying in a corner.

Ma Houde asked calmly, "Did I disturb you?"

"No... it's alright." Zhao Ru nodded and stroked her necklace subconsciously.

That was a black crystal pendant which seemed simple and rough.

Seeing this, Ma Houde became a little absent-minded. He felt tired and pinched his eyebrows lightly.

Zhao Ru added, "Is there anything I can help, Sir? I remembered that I have answered your questions as much as I could last time. Is there anything that we missed?"

"May I come in, please?" Ma Houde asked.

"Please wait for a moment, I need some time to tidy the place."

"Understood, I can wait." Ma Houde nodded. He guessed that the small room must be filled with all kinds of daily supplies of this single woman.

So it was better to avoid going in for the moment.

After a while, Zhao Ru re-opened the door, and asked Mr. Ma to come in with shoes off. She was a person that preferred cleanliness.

Ma Houde noticed that the suitcase was not placed next to the wall anymore but instead, lying on the ground.

"Miss. Zhao, may I know that how long have you been living

alone?"

"Officer Ma, Am I obliged to answer this kind of questions?"

"That' OK, you can ignore my question if you don't want to answer it." Ma Houde said with a shrug and then continued. "Well, Miss. Zhao, you know we have placed Dai Youcai on the wanted list. I wonder if he contacted you during the past two days or have you heard anything about him? We are not going suspecting you but just informing you about it. After all, you are an acquaintance of his."

Zhao Ru was stunned. She loosened the pendant which had been in her hands all the time, and thought for a moment. "You mean our boss, Mr. Dai? I know nothing. And I am not familiar with him. Besides that, I'm just a receptionist, how can I be familiar with the big boss?"

Ma Houde nodded. "Eh, it was just to notify you. Miss. Zhao, should you have any other information, please call the police in the first instance. "

Zhao Ru smiled, "Yes, sir. Oh my God, I forget to pour you some tea."

"It doesn't matter. Ma Houde responded. "I am going to leave now. I was just passing by and visiting you was on the way. Sorry to bother you."

"See you." Zhao Ru nodded with a smile.

...

Ma Houde got on his car immediately after going downstairs.

The young officer asked Ma Houde in the driving seat, "Sir, any progress?"

Ma Houde frowned. "Before I came in, I saw that her suitcase was open. But when I entered her house, the suitcase has been placed at a corner next to the wall. Her house was very clean, so there was

no nothing to tidy up. Um... Zhao Ru may want to leave. Call back our office to check all the records for both railway stations and airports."

"Yes, sir."

After glancing at the left rear-view mirror, Ma Houde pointed to the front, "Drive around and then come back. Because the woman is watching us. Later, we need to ask those who know Zhao Ru in the neighborhood.

"The woman is so cautious. Looks like there is a problem." The young police officer added with a glance in the rear-view mirror.

Officer Ma pinched his eyebrows and shook his head.

"Are you tired, sir?" The young man joked, "Perhaps you worked too much today."

He knew that Ma Houde must have some plans when he opened the curtains of office. This was due to the many years of experience being with Ma Houde.

"Stop talking and drive the car." Ma Houde rubbed his eyes and said impatiently.

The young officer started the topic again when the car was not far away, "Eh, sir, is that the son of Mr. Luo?"

Ma Houde saw Luo Qiu, who was carrying a bag and sitting at a bus stop on the street.

"Wait for me." Ma Houde said and then got off the car.

...

Luo Qiu took off his headphone and turned around with a surprised look when he felt someone slapping his back, "Uncle Ma, what are you doing here?"

"Oh...I was just passing by because of a case. I saw you sitting here while I was in my car." Ma Houde said with a smile, "How about you? Why are you here, no class today?"

"Yes." Luo Qiu added, "I am going to buy some durian as I'm told that the fruits in this supermarket are pretty good."

Ma Houde sat next to him and laughed. "No wonder I can smell a faint fragrance of durian. Well, Ziling likes eating durian very much. You are so affectionate."

"So do you, don't you?"

Luo Qiu picked up a piece of durian which had been peeled and packaged. And said, "Have you eaten anything? It is already so late, please eat some durian to get some strength back."

"Oh, then I won't refuse!"

Ma Houde received the fruit happily and took a bite. "Wow, sweet! I'll buy some later."

Showing a content look, Office Ma stretched himself and said, "I was a little dizzy from hunger just now. But I'm feeling much better. Thank you, Luo Qiu."

The feeling of sickness and fatigue had gone right away. He felt as if he had just taken a bath.

"Really? That's good."

Luo Qiu stood up and then said, "The bus is here, it's time to go."

"Alright. Go to my house when you are free, I will ask your aunt to cook your favorite dish!"

Luo Qiu nodded before stepping onto the bus.

...

...

"Mr. Ma, the landlady told us that Zhao Ru has very little friends, not even a boyfriend. She rarely goes out except to work."

"And we have also asked the other receptionist Little Liu. She said that Zhao Ru was really hard-working but revealed nothing about her personal details."

"As per our investigation, we found that Zhao Ru went out on the evening of 2nd, 6th, 17th and 20th last month. The surveillance video around her apartment showed that she didn't come back until midnight."

Hearing this, Ma Houde was startled and said, "On the evening of 2nd, 6th, 17th, and 20th."

"Yeah, if I'm right, the dates were consistent with the time those students died."

In the meantime, the other policeman rushed in quickly and said to Ma Houde, "Sir, Zhao Ru did buy a ticket to YN city. But it is strange because she was not born in YN and have no other relatives there."

"When did she buy the ticket?"

"Three days ago."

"Was that the day when we searched for cram school?" Ma Houde frowned and asked, "When will the train depart?"

"On five o'clock this evening, we have 70 minutes." The younger policeman frowned, "Sir, what should we do next?"

Ma Houde stood up immediately, "We must find an excuse to stop her first! It will be troublesome if she escapes. This woman is really suspicious. I'm afraid she has done something or she wouldn't buy the ticket so fast."

Ma Houde felt energetic ever since eating the durian from noon till now.

The police team all prepared to leave except Wang Yuechuan, who was sitting alone in the meeting room.

He stuck a lot of pictures on a blackboard, and drew many intricate lines under pictures. He was in deep thought.

...

Ma Houde called his wife secretly before leaving.

"Darling, I don't go home for dinner tonight... you cooked the soup? I'll come back later and promise to drink it! Oh, you can go to Xinfeng Road if you are free. I heard that there is a wholesale fruit market there and the durian there is good... I have to go now, bye."

Then, Mr. Ma happily got onto the car... and drove away.

Chapter 350: The Devil Inside 2nd

"Ladies and gentlemen, the train to YN Dali is going to depart from platform No. 13. Please ensure you have your ticket and all your personal belongings, and please also..."

In the waiting hall, Zhao Ru lifted her suitcase and stood up from the chair.

She prepared to walk toward platform 13 after observing her surroundings for a short while. However, she soon stopped and headed in the opposite direction.

The reason being she saw the man she met a few hours ago, Ma Houde, and his team mingling in the crowd.

Zhao Ru could easily distinguish the policemen from ordinary people when she looked into their eyes. Their eyes were very different.

Zhao Ru, with an expressionless face, walked towards the female bathroom at an unhurried pace. The more flustered she was, the more likely she will attract the attention of those policemen.

When she came out of the washroom, she found that the police had left.

She glanced at the train ticket in her hand and threw it into the nearby garbage can. She did not intend to board the train.

However, when she turned back, the police man with a beer belly appeared in front of her face.

"Hi, Miss. Zhao. Where are you going? It seemed that you didn't mention it this morning."

"Sir, I think this is my personal business. It's none of your concern," Zhao Ru said firmly. Nevertheless, she found that she was surrounded by policemen when glancing about slightly.

She still seemed calm and said, "Officer Ma, I'm wondering why

you came here. Is there anything you require from me?"

"Nothing, but we would like to invite you to have a chat. Something needs your confirmation."

"Sir, I'm afraid that I can't help as I'm running to catch a train." Zhao Ru shook her head and continued, "You people have no right to force me to go back with you even if you are the police."

Ma Houde shrugged. He had abundant experience in dealing with these excuses. After taking a mouthful of cola, he said seriously, "We suspect you of hiding some dangerous items in your suitcase. May we have a look?"

"Sir, there is no evidence. So you can't do that." Zhao Ru frowned.

Ma Houde added, "We need to check your suitcase to prove your innocence. Take it easy, I will ask a female officer to check. Is that ok?"

"Miss. Zhao, Please cooperate with us in investigating." A policewoman showed her identification to Zhao Ru. Then she said, "The female bathroom is over there, I think we can start."

Zhao Ru found with a quick glance that there were a few other policemen besides Ma Houde and this policewoman.

She nodded with a smile, "Fine, but you'd better hurry up."

When Zhao Ru turned to the female bathroom, the policewoman caught up to her. Nevertheless, suddenly, Zhao Ru turned back while holding a spray in her hand.

Spraying it into the policewoman's face, she pushed the woman into Ma Houde and attempted to flee.

Unexpectedly, after a few steps, she suddenly staggered, then fell to the ground,

It turned out that her leg had been hit by something... A can of cola!

Seeing Zhao Ru falling down, the policemen rushed forward and to hold her down. Ma Houde carried the female police officer who was injured and came over. "How about my shooting skills? I learned it from my best friend... Miss Zhao, you assaulted the police without any reason, please come back with us for further interrogation!"

Zhao Ru struggled twice but found that she could not get rid of them. Therefore, she remained silent with her eyes closed.

She didn't say anything as her arms were grasped by the policemen. They left the railway station in a very quiet atmosphere.

The passengers came and left in a hurry. People would soon forget that there had been a scene of arrest... It was a common occurrence at the railway station.

People got used to it. Who wanted to take a second look?

However, two figures stopped in the crowd, a man and a woman... They were not travelers, but people with a long lifespan.

The woman crouched down and picked up a small necklace from the ground. She handed it to the man after a brief look.

This necklace was pulled down when the police officer struggled with Zhao Ru.

"Master," she said, "It is the pendant of this necklace that caused Mr. Ma's spirit to have abnormalities."

"Well, this seems a little familiar. Have I seen it before?"

"Do you remember the black diamond in Liu Ang's house? This pendant contains much lesser energy but the two should be from the same source."

Liu Ang. Liu Zixing.

He nodded his head shortly. he remembered the house, as well as the story of three generations.

Luo Qiu put the pendant back in the hands of the maid and said, "Interesting. Go ask Zhao Ru where the pendant came from."

...

...

Through the mirror of the interrogation room, Ma Houde had been staring at Zhao Ru for a long time along with the other policemen.

Under normal circumstance, criminals will behave anxiously.

It could be observed from their tiny actions that they were on thorns, no matter how they pretended to cover it up, yet this woman didn't have that behavior.

From the beginning, she was sitting with eyes closed. Just like a waxen statue. So it was hard for the police to get details from her behavior.

"Let me have a try." Ma Houde took a deep breath and entered the other room near the mirror.

"Miss. Zhao, do you know what we found in your suitcase?" Ma Houde broke the silence.

Nonetheless, Zhao Ru did not seem to hear anything. She kept her eyes closed without blinking.

Ma Houde spoke louder, "We found a lot of photographs on your laptop... You know what I mean, right?"

There was still no response from Zhao Ru.

Ma Houde sneered and continued, "In addition, there were more pictures in your cell phone. Those pictures were all for these dead students recently. Zhao Ru, I think you need to give a proper explanation how you took pictures even before police arrived at the crime scene."

"What are you trying to say?" Zhao Ru opened her eyes slowly.

Ma Houde thumped the table wildly and said angrily. "Tell me, how did you make the students kill themselves? Did you threaten them with these pictures?!"

"Do you have any evidence?"

"Evidence?" Ma Houde shouted, "The pictures in your laptop involved both the dead and the other students. Why did you keep a candid snapshot of them? Furthermore, why did you go to the crime scene? We have checked the surveillance video near your apartment. It was extremely abnormal that you just went out on these evenings when the students committed suicide."

Zhao Ru smiled and began to say, "Well, you guys really made great progress. Your speed really shocked me."

She sighed and then said, "I admit that I did have contact with the students and I did threaten them. I just wanted to ask for some money. As for the reason why they killed themselves, I don't know about that. Let's put it this way, they were afraid that what they did would be found by others. On the other side, they couldn't bear the pressure... Their tolerance was too low."

"How dare you say it was not you who compelled them to death?" Ma Houde asked with anger, "But why did you go to their house before they died?"

"That was our time of the deal."

"A mere coincidence?"

"I shot these photos to blackmail them for money. Since I didn't get any money from the first person, so I would definitely look for the next. I can only say that I was unlucky as those that I picked died every time I contacted them. Officer, your side has confirmed that they jumped from the building themselves. You can accuse me of blackmail but not murder."

The key point was that the police couldn't find compelling evidence to prove that Zhao Ru made these students die. Even they

knew she was not innocent.

If the truth was like what she said, that these students killed themselves because they were afraid of their pictures being exposed... In short, the court always requires conclusive evidence!

"Five people died because of you! Don't you have any regrets about that? Are you cold-blooded?"

"Officer." Zhao Ru said, "Why five lives? Did you get something wrong?"

"Chen Youli! Zhou Mingxuan! Qiao Rongrong! Li Hao! Gu Jiajie!" Ma Houde thumped the table and shouted, "These five students are dead because of your threats!"

"Officer, I admit that I blackmailed the first four people. But I am not relevant to their death. In addition, I didn't threaten the last one you mentioned."

"Ridiculous? Isn't Gu Jiajie a student of the cram school?"

Zhao Ru sneered and said, "Have you found any information about this student after checking my belongings? Besides, since I have admitted to extortion, I won't conceal anything. I really know nothing about the last deceased."

"You..." Ma Houde took a deep breath and added, " Keep sitting here, We will definitely manage to get you to confess your crime."

...

"Sir, I checked again and found that there was no info about Gu Jiajie after comparing the evidence obtained from Xu Zhao' house. It was suggested that Gu Jiajie didn't participate in the so-called 'business deals'. There were no photos about Gu Jiajie on Zhao Ru's mobile phone. And..."

Ma Houde was stunned, "And what?"

"The surveillance showed that Zhao Ru didn't go out of her home on the night when Gu Jiajie died."

Ma Houde frowned, "This... Perhaps Gu Jiajie really killed himself?"

Chapter 351: Breakthrough

A group of policemen were discussing about the case of Zhao Ru in the office.

"What a tricky woman!"

The policewoman, who was hurt by Zhao Ru, said angrily, "She knew she couldn't escape, which was why she confessed. However, she admits only to blackmailing as she knows clearly that the penalty won't be harsh."

"Yes, the victims have died. We can't find anything about their conversation. So she can say whatever she wants to say. Zhao Ru can use this point if she has a lawyer."

One policeman punched his own hand, and said in a deflated voice, "That's what we worry most."

Ma Houde massaged his forehead. He said after a while, "Zhao Ru must have some way to contact the dead secretly. No matter via cell-phones, emails or envelopes, there must be some records. Go to the mobile network operators and check the communication logs for the last 2 months of Zhao Ru as well as the students'."

Ma Houde added after thinking for a moment, "And designate a dozen members to search the houses of those dead students to see if there are any details. I think there must be some clues that we overlooked last time"

Ma Houde clapped firmly and raised his voice, "That's all. Go ahead. This case is pretty complex, let's achieve it together. I'll treat you all to big meals after success."

He paused and talked to a young police officer, "You go to Gu Feng's house with me for a second inquiry."

"Yes!"

...

...

It seemed that the detention room was bigger than Zhao Ru's apartment.

If the furniture were excluded, this was much bigger than her room. Even though, Zhao Ru couldn't move anymore since she was imprisoned.

She lay on the tatty bed. The toilet was next to the bed, which was made from the cement.

What she couldn't bear was the smell of toilet.

Zhao Ru reached out to her collar subconsciously. But she stopped soon and became flustered gradually.

The feeling was just like that a habit that was forcefully chopped away, causing one to be unable to get used to it both psychologically and physically. At this moment, Zhao Ru was just like a person that went cold-turkey on smoking. She started fidgeting.

Zhao Ru got up at once, then squatted down in order to look at the empty bed.

She stood up and stepped forward. She could do nothing but watch the entrance while gripping the bars.

"It's gone..."

She tried to recall every detail while grasping her collar.

"Are you looking for this?"

She heard a woman asking her with a pleasant voice behind her back.

Zhao Ru turned back. She saw a beautiful and eccentric-looking girl under the dim light.

The girl's eyes were as blue as the sea, which seemed as if it could swallow her immediately.

Zhao Ru couldn't move her eyes from the girl as the girl was holding the necklace which she was looking for. Zhao Ru stepped forward, her hands grabbing the necklace instinctively.

Of course, she failed--- the servant girl stepped back easily.

It was just one step. However, that one step was the one that made Zhao Ru not able to reach the necklace.

"Return it to me!"

"Shouldn't you ask who I am? Why am I here? Rather than asking for the necklace..." Miss. Maid raised the necklace slightly and smiled, "It seems that it is really important to you... In other words, you have relied on it for a long time. How long have you kept it?"

Zhao Ru shivered as if hit by a cold blast of air. She retreated to the bars and then calmed down.

She remembered that the door of this detention room had not been opened since she was here. How could this odd girl come in?

Seeing the girl walking toward her, Zhao Ru was alarmed and said in a tremulous voice, "What... are you going to do?"

Miss. Maid stood with Zhao Ru face to face. She pinched her chin with smiles, "Relax, I'm not going to hurt you."

Miss. Maid opened her mouth slightly and blew a breath of air at Zhao Ru. Zhao Ru then became stunned at once.

You Ye was pleased with Zhao Ru's reaction. She took her hands and sat with her on the bed.

You Ye put her hands on Zhao Ru's hand back and whispered, "Can you please tell me where you got this necklace?"

"I bought it from a jeweler in Ying Chuan building."

"When did you buy it?"

"Three months ago..."

"Have you kept it with you all the time?"

"Yes."

You Ye put this necklace in her hands after watching for a while. She kept her palms on Zhao Ru's face and turned her head around.

Miss. Maid knew what her master thought. He gave the necklace to her instead of taking it back.

That meant that she could do anything to this necklace.

What master wanted to know was just how Zhao Ru got the necklace.

"Since you kept it all the time, pay attention and not lose it again."

She returned the necklace to Zhao Ru and helped her wear it.

"Actually, she is quite pretty."

After that, You Ye helped to fix Zhao Ru's fringe and collar before vanishing.

...

...

In the evening, Gu Feng opened the door. He saw Ma Houde and another officer standing outside.

It could be obviously seen that he was impatient. "Mr. Ma, why are here? My home was shattered because of you."

Ma Houde was not going to be friendly with him. "Did you think you could hide the fact of your extramarital affair, if it wasn't discovered by me?"

"Why are you here?" Gu Feng leaned against the door and smoked. "Is there any news about my wife? What are you officers doing every day? She has been lost for several days but there are still no updates from the police!"

"Don't worry, We will give you an update." Ma Houde added, "We

have locked down a range of places by tracing the bank slip. We will find her soon if there are no exceptions."

"That sounds good." Gu Feng responded, "Anything else?"

Ma Houde could not be bothered to talk to Gu Feng anymore. He pushed Gu Feng away and entered into the house.

"Wait, I didn't allow you come in!" Gu Feng frowned.

But the young police pushed against his chest gently and said, "This is a search warrant. Your resistance is not a problem. So please behave yourself, OK?"

"You..." Gu Feng stopped talking reluctantly. He was discontent but didn't have a choice, thus saying aggressively, "Don't dirty my place! I am really wondering what needs to be checked. You have already searched thoroughly last time."

Ma Houde ignored him and entered into Gu Jiajie's room. He began checking this small room but no useful information could be found.

Ma Houde was turning page after page in boredom.

Gu Feng stared at Ma Houde while leaning against the door. Ma Houde put down the book, "Have you cleaned this room?"

Gu Feng answered, "No, we haven't touched anything in this room since my wife disappeared."

Ma Houde nodded. He stepped on something just as he was going to leave.

Ma Houde squatted down directly on the carpet which was next to the window.

It was so small that Ma Houde almost ignored it.

Ma Houde opened the carpet and found out a little white pill under the carpet.

It seemed to have fallen down on the ground accidentally. Part of

the pill was shattered, which might have been caused by other police officers during the first search.

Ma Houde picked the pill up with a raised eyebrow.

The strange thing that Mr. Qin mentioned occurred in his mind abruptly.

"What did you find?" Gu Feng and the other police walked toward him curiously.

Ma Houde opened his fist and asked, "Did your son eat pills? How about his health?"

Gu Feng glanced at it and said, "I am not sure, He should be alright? After all, he is old enough to take care of his himself well."

"When did your son have his last physical examination?" Ma Houde rolled his eyes and continued to ask.

Gu Feng said impatiently, "I don't know!"

"Is he your son?"

"No, He is not my biological son!" Gu Feng snorted.

Ma Houde stood up with a sense of pressure, which made Gu Feng step backward. Gu Feng said, "What do you want to do?"

"Nothing, just going out to eat a midnight snack. You want me to eat in your home?"

"No... Please go ahead."

...

...

"Hello, Old Qin, are you still in the laboratory? Can you help me to analyze something? Don't leave, I'll be right there..."

Ma Houde said to the young police after calling. "Drive me to the lab, quickly."

"Sir, aren't you going to eat a late night snack..."

"Drive, no more words!"

"Well...Fine..."

Chapter 352: Decomposing

The building of Yingchuan.

One could call it a shopping mall as there were many stores in this building from the first floor to the fifth floor.

Yingchuan building was a popular place, attracting mostly the younger people for selling cuisines, clothes and also jewelry.

But this didn't mean the business here was good as there were too many similar stores nearby. The shop owner could, maybe, at most make one deal a day.

So, the shopkeepers, when seeing a customer come in, would be very happy to raise prices... oh, no. They would serve the consumers with their "enthusiasm".

"Dear customer, come in please! We have the latest fashion accessories. Would you like this silver accessory, which was made of pure silver... How about the pink crystal? It will bring you good luck. Buy one for your pretty girlfriend, how beautiful she is!"

The excellent verbal talent made Luo Qiu feel humbled.

Yes, the consumers here were You Ye and her master, Luo Qiu.

"Excuse me, have you seen such a necklace recently?" You Ye showed the shop owner a picture on her phone.

A black necklace with a crystal inlaid.

"It... seems a little familiar," the shop-woman paused and then said, "But it is very common...would you like to buy a similar one? Please look, their shapes are almost same! If you buy one, we can give you a big discount..."

The woman stopped talking suddenly as Miss. Maid pointed to her forehead quickly.

In the meantime, Luo Qiu was looking at the jewelry as well as listening to the conversation between Miss. Maid and the woman.

"Can you remember if you have seen this necklace three months ago?"

The actions of Miss. Maid made the woman sink into deep consciousness. To put it simply, it was a hypnosis technique which could allow the woman to gather her memory fragments from the past days.

"It was three months ago..." The old lady watched her shop for a while and said, "I remembered...it was a man who sold his goods to me for a low price, claiming that these were crystals with a high quality. So I bought some. But they did not sell well... It seemed that a woman bought one of them."

"Did you remember what the man looked like... Relax, I believe you can do it... relax."

At the same time, Miss. Maid provided the old lady with the a pencil and paper and kept her fingers pointing at the woman's forehead.

It could be seen that the old lady was drawing something with pencil on the paper... It was a portrait of the salesman.

Later.

"Master, I think she has answered most of what she knows." Miss. Maid walked to Luo Qiu with the paper in hand.

Luo Qiu moved his eyes from the jewelry to the paper for a glance... It was a lifelike drawing.

However, Luo Qiu had no idea about the salesman on the paper.

This man was quite a normal person with an obvious mole on his face while wearing a pair of glasses.

"Did the woman sell them all out?"

"No, only then one sold to Zhao Ru." You Ye opened the box under the counter and added, "The others are here... According to what the woman said, these are not easy to sell so that she placed

the box under the counter."

Luo Qiu picked up one from the box and touched. He said, "They are different."

"Maybe that one was mixed among them."

Luo Qiu smiled and closed the box, "Based on what we found, someone released them into the market on purpose, regardless of whether the black jewelry of Mr. Liu or the crystal kept by Zhao Ru. The necklaces contain the same power inside, which is similar to our hall. Both of them can dig into the deep heart of human beings... Interesting."

You Ye said lightly, "They can't be compared to the hall as these necklaces can only initiate wicked ideas but not inner peace."

Luo Qiu smiled without saying anything.

"Master, Let me check if the salesman lives in this city."

"No need." Luo Qiu shook his head, "We can meet him someday."

Miss. Maid knew clearly that Luo Qiu had an accurate presentiment as a club owner. So she stopped asking.

Luo Qiu opened a counter and picked up a handmade bracelet with three amber-like stones while smiling.

He put the bracelet on You Ye's left hand.

"Let's go back."

Luo Qiu left this shop with hands folded behind his back.

Of course, he paid the money.

...

...

In the police station.

"It was found from the components that this medicine is an anti-cancer pill called chidamide."

"Anti-cancer medicine?" Ma Houde frowned...Now that Old Qin said it was anti-cancer medicine, he believed that it must be. So he continued, "Old Qin, do you want to know where I got the pill?"

"No."

"..." Ma Houde blinked his eyes to hide the embarrassment, he added, "I found it in Gu Jiajie's room. It was ignored during the first search as it was under the carpet."

Old Qin stood up suddenly and went out without a word. Ma Houde was confused and asked, "Huh? Where are you going?"

"I want to do an autopsy on Gu Jiajie again."

...

...

Shen Meihuan looked back constantly and quickened her pace. She couldn't relax until arriving at the rental house.

She calmed down when she didn't see anyone following her through the peep hole on the door.

Too nervous?

She couldn't help asking herself. After taking a deep breath, she put down the food she bought and then entered into the room.

Although her son could move now but it was far from being able to take care of himself.

"Stand up, my boy, Mom will help to wash your back."

Shen Meihuan scrubbed his back with tearful eyes... Every time she saw the scars on the boy's body, she would become upset.

That man... was a devil. How could he hit the little kid?

"Why didn't you tell me the truth." Shen Meihuan asked in a low voice... Obviously, no one responded to her.

"It's fine now, we are going to leave." She touched the boy's arm and whispered gently, "We will have a new life. Just like how we

left your father. You are my everything, this time I must..."

Her face changed when she touched her son's head.

Because his hair started falling from Shen Meihuan's finger.

A handful of hair.

"How could this be? Oh, no."

She tried to put the hair on his head again but grasp more hair... She couldn't stop it from dropping.

He... was decomposing gradually.

Chapter 353: The Feeling of Seeing the Walking Dead

Memories resounded in Shen Meihuan's mind with voices ringing around her ear.

'Even if you resurrect him, the boy wouldn't be the one you are familiar with.'

'...You must be aware that the decomposing smell emitting from your son is bad for your health. As time goes by, you will get ill.'

In front of the bathroom mirror, Shen Meihuan washed her face again and again. She became absent-minded while looking at herself through the mirror without noticing the water had overflowed.

She even couldn't remember how long she had not used a mirror. Shen Meihuan couldn't believe the pale face in the mirror was hers.

She was just like a patient with bloodless lips, empty eyes, and a dark face.

"I am just a little tired, it must be..."

She took a deep breath and turned the tap off. She washed her face again and again using the water.

She told herself that she was not exhausted while leaving the bathroom.

It would be the time to depart soon. It's time to leave and have a new life. How could she be tired!

No way.

But it was getting worse and worse since the boy started decomposing.

"It will be fine, my little boy. You're just ill. It's okay, Mom will

be with you."

He could open his eyes. He could move. He was alive since he could express through his eyes.

Alive!

Shen Meihuan took his face in her hands and said to him gently, "My little angel, mom is going to buy some foundation. You will recover soon. It will be fine."

Everything was gonna to be okay.

The boy stood up suddenly when Shen Meihuan left. He was watching himself in one corner of the mirror on the way to the bathroom.

He kept standing there.

...

...

"Sir, why don't you arrange the other members to look for Shen Meihuan? I don' think you have to do it in person."

A young officer asked Ma Houde after inquiring passers-by.

Ma Houde was leaning on the car with holding a cigarette. He replied, "I can't figure out something. Zhao Ru claimed that she was not relevant to Gu Jiajie's death. But why would Gu Jiajie be the fifth one to commit suicide?"

And the most confusing thing was the pill found in Gu Jiajie's room as well as the words left by Old Qin.

He sighed and said, "Zhao Ru was reluctant to say anything. I might as well come here to seek for clues about Shen Meihuan. I feel something stuck in my heart whenever I see Wang Yuechuan sitting in the opposite meeting room from my office."

"So is this the real reason why you come here today?"

"So what?" Ma Houde stared at that young police.

"Of course not... Maybe I should ask the shopkeeper over there." He ran across the street in a hurry and entered into that shop quickly.

According to the expense report provided by the bank, they found that Shen Meihuan purchased some goods in the neighborhood yesterday.

So she was very likely to be hiding in this area. Ma Houde looked around. He found that there were too many rental apartments in this district. And the roads were complex. This meant that it would not be easy to find Shen Meihuan.

And yet, at this moment, the young officer ran back with a delighted face, shouted, "Sir, new clues."

"Tell me."

"I showed Shen Meihuan's photo to the shopkeeper. He said that he had seen the woman twice." After a short pause, he went on, "The shopkeeper said that he has been living in this shanty town for many years, so he can distinguish the newcomers easily. He saw the woman shopping in the evening and going back home in a hurry."

"Does he know where she lives?"

"The shopkeeper pointed at the other direction, but he didn't know the specific address. One more thing, it was almost the time for her to go shopping today."

"We need to go ask separately. Maybe we can find her soon." Ma Houde looked excited.

...

"Madam, would you like something else? Try this lipstick, it is the latest fashion. It really looks good on you..."

"No, thanks. Check them out, please."

Shen Meihuan paid the bill by cards. After that, she left the store

with her cosmetics in haste.

The clerk noticed that the lady was pretty nervous. It seemed that she was hiding from someone...However, it was none of her business.

After all, it was their own lives.

...

Shen Meihuan decided to order some take-out food in a restaurant considering that there were not many fresh vegetables left in the supermarket at such a late time.

She slowed down by a restaurant on the way home and saw a chef cutting up chicken through the window. The chef looked at her and asked, "What would you like to eat? 12 RMB for a set meal with free soup."

The accent of the chef was not very standard Mandarin, it sounded more like Cantonese.

She Meihuan started to hesitate because none of the dishes was her son's favorite. She became anxious suddenly.

It was evening now, but the window...

She noticed that someone was walking behind her through the reflection on the window.

Shen Meihuan turned back and faced with the dark and narrow alleys across the road. One old streetlight was flickering in the dark.

She Meihuan grasped her bag firmly and told the chef, "Sorry, I don't want it anymore."

She darted away but she could still hear the complaints from the chef.

She had no time to care about what the chef complained and was not going to care. The only thing she would like to do was going back to the rental house as soon as possible. So she hastened her

pace and even started running at the next crossing.

Apparently, she was not the only one running on the isolated street.

Another person started running at the same time on the street.

Wearing a hat and a mask, he was obviously looking for somebody. However, he had to leave when couldn't find anything.

'Did she discover me? Should I give up now?' He asked himself with slight hesitation. A voice rose behind his back when he was in deep consideration.

"Have we met before?"

He turned back and saw a middle-aged man with beer belly standing in front of him... Ma Houde.

"Have we met somewhere?"

Ma Houde stepped forward, not because he felt that this person was suspicious, although the wired hat and mask made him look like a suspect.

Ma Houde had found Shen Meihuan when he and his team were searching separately. Mr. Ma didn't intend to call Shen Meihuan's name as he found she was nervous, as if avoiding somebody.

So he followed Shen Meihuan all the way until she stopped at the restaurant... Then, he saw this guy.

Ma Houde thought he had seen this boy somewhere...But he couldn't remember clearly.

"No." The boy responded quickly and managed to slip away with his head lowering down.

"Wait for a moment." Ma Houde put his hands on the boy's shoulder.

From the perspective of an adult, he was too weak.

Unexpectedly, the moment boy got caught of Ma Houde, he

shrugged it off and pushed him to the ground, attempting to run away.

"F*ck, trying to escape? No way!"

Ma Houde took off his shoes without a word and threw it against the running boy. He was a good shot with his shoes just like he when he was using guns and cola cans. Of course, the boy's heel was hit by the shoes, which resulted in him falling after only steps.

Ma Houde walked to him in a rush. He pulled the boy by folding his arms on his back. "Freeze, your behavior is suspicious, report your name and ID."

Ma Houde pressed him against the wall, and demanded in a stern voice.

However, the boy struggled, trying to break free without saying anything. He looked frightened.

Ma Houde twisted him around and tried to tear off the mask on his face.

"Don't!"

The boy shouted, but it didn't work.

"Let me see who you are...You...You are..."

Ma Houde was lost in thought with face stiffening with shock. A sharp pain came from his toes before he reacted.

One of his feet was stomped heavily!

As the saying went, fingers were connected with the heart, so were the toes.

In the chaos, Ma Houde couldn't believe that he pushed down to the ground again.

"Don't move! Ow, it really hurts!" Ma Houde got up but he started to limp. He could do nothing but watch the boy rushing into another alley helplessly.

...

"Sir, why are you sitting here... Oh, what's wrong with your feet?"

A young officer found Ma Houde sitting on the stairs of the restaurant. He asked in astonishment.

Ma Houde was tapping his feet and sinking into thought again... He kept his head down with his eyebrows knit in a frown.

"Sir, could you hear me?"

Ma Houde raised his head and asked subconsciously, "Do you... think a dead man can be resurrected?"

"What?"

"Do you know whom I met just now?"

"Who?"

"Gu Jiajie, A living...Gu Jiajie!"

Chapter 354: Twins

Shen Meihuan who was very cautious thought here was not a safe place.

It was time to leave... She took a deep breath and casually gathered her hair, saying as she opened the door, "Jiajie, I'm home..."

Her peaceful voice was gone when she pushed the door and found it was unlocked.

Shen Meihuan surprisingly shouted her son's name and hurriedly walked into the living room, the washing room and the kitchen... But she found no one here.

Yes, her son wasn't here!

It's not the first time to her that she quickly calmed herself down, "Jiajie!"

However, her son's appearance now was totally different from before.

She couldn't imagine what would happen if people saw her son this time! A confused sense was full of her heart that she crazily rushed into the street and left the door open.

However, it was night.

And she was alone in the street.

...

...

"Jiajie! Jiajie! Where are you, Jiajie?"

She walked and shouted in this quiet dark town with few bright lights of snack stores. And her voice spread far.

After for a while, Shen Meihuan stopped and turned around to leave this street...

But a man quickly went to her and said, "Mrs. Gu! Are you Mrs. Gu? Hold on please!"

The man stood in front of Shen Meihuan, "I've finally found you!"

Shen Meihuan slowly turned her face in panic, "I don't know you, go away!"

However, another voice was heard. Officer Ma's voice... He walked with a limp, "Mrs. Gu, if you don't know him, what about me? We've been looking for you for a long time. Your husband has reported your as missing."

"Don't mention that guy!" Shen Meihuan slowly lifted her head.

"Well." Ma Houde shook his head and walked to her, frowning, "Then let's talk about your son."

"There's nothing to tell! You've found me, now you can go!" Shen Meihuan turned around to leave, "I am an adult. I know what I'm doing. How could I live with such a beast? I have no choice but to leave him! Please don't follow me!"

Seeing Shen Meihuan leave, Ma Houde quickly said, "I've seen your son!"

"What?"

Shen Meihuan suddenly turned around with nervousness and said with hesitation, "You... You really saw him?"

Ma Houde sighed with relief. He nodded and sternly said, "Mrs. Gu, do you have another son? The twin brother of Gu Jiajie? Is he the son of your ex-husband? He looks similar to his brother!"

"Pardon me?" Shen Meihuan was startled, "My... Another son?"

"Yes! Am I wrong?" Ma Houde looked at her, who seemed to be in the dark about it. However, it would be too weird if she didn't know she had given birth to twin boys.

Then who had Ma Houde seen? A creepy feeling suddenly swept Ma Houde.

"No...I have not!" Shen Meihuan shook her head, "I actually have another child, but..."

"But what?"

But... He had already died. Shen Meihuan thought that in her heart.

She hesitated for a moment... Since she was eager to get information about her revived son, she thought maybe this officer hadn't noticed the strangeness of her son and now he was just talking about his hypothesis.

However, this hypothesis was really true.

"My former husband and I divorced."

Shen Meihuan was unwilling to talk about her past and simply said, "And we each took a son. I've tried to get the other son's custody, but after divorce, they've no news. "

Shen Meihuan shook her head, "You said you saw Jiajie. But he died that day... Oh, right, I have another son, I have another son!"

Excitedly seizing Ma Houde's hands, Shen Meihuan said, "Officer! Have you really seen him? Where is he?"

"Mrs. Gu, keep calm." Ma Houde frowned, "You really have another child... Seeing him, I was surprised that I didn't pay much attention to him. Oh, he stepped on my foot and just ran away! "

"Ran...ran away... " Shen Meihuan disappointedly loosened her hand.

Ma Houde went on, "Mrs. Gu, I don't know much about your another son, but I suspect that he was following you these days. Maybe you've felt that at the snack store. And at that time, he was found."

"What... It was him... "

Shen Meihuan surprisingly lowered her messy head. She was confused by the resurrected son and the other son who had died after the divorce and hadn't been taken away by her...

She took several breaths and didn't know what to say.

"I... I..." She tried to hold her head and said, "I'm confused..."

She fell to the ground.

"Mrs. Gu! Mrs. Gu!"

"Officer Ma, she fainted... Her face is so pale!"

...

...

Hospital.

He took off his hat and stuffed it into his pocket before he came in with the packaged food.

When he went through the nurse station, a nurse on duty immediately stood up and angrily said, "Liu Jiahui, why did you go out in such a situation?"

Liu Jiahui gave a start, "I just go and buy something to eat."

"Your grandmother has fainted!" The nurse signed but sternly said.

Liu Jiahui hurriedly came to her and anxiously asked, "What's the matter with her?"

"She's all right now."

The nurse shook her head, "It's just because of a sudden fever. You should take good care of her after this operation. Please don't

turn off your phone in an emergency any more."

"My phone was out of charge." Liu Jiahui shook his head, "I'm sorry, it will not happen again."

"Well, go to see her." The nurse whispered, "Your grandmother called your name when she fell asleep. You're the only relative of her, look after her well... Well, please be strong."

Liu Jiahui just nodded and walked away.

The nurse sighed and said to her colleague nearby, "What a pitiful young child, with so much pressure."

Her colleague indifferently said, "Stop showing your sympathy to those poor people in hospital. Just do your work..."

...

He stretched out his hands to open the padlock on the glass door... But he failed.

Like a soulless person, he directly walked into the door since he couldn't open the lock, repeating this over and over again.

"Do you want to go in?"

A voice came from his behind, but he seemed not to hear that and just repeated his actions.

"What are you thinking? Let's go in."

Boss Luo just waved his hand behind him--- The lock and the

door were opened.

This time nothing resisted him and he easily went in this... play center.

Luo Qiu just followed him.

Then Luo Qiu snapped his fingers--- All the lights here suddenly lit up.

And all those game machines began to run.

The noise of the running machines was heard.

And his appearance--- Thin hair and gray skin was clearly seen under the light.

The cockroaches and flies in this play center smelled his scent, pouring toward to him. But he didn't care.

He knew what he wanted to do.

He came to a turtle game machine, grabbing the hammer, striking the turtles again and again.

Chapter 355: Father

The rural town now was full of one or two-storey tile houses for the young villagers who worked and earned money outside.

On a sunny day in the summer of 2003, Shen Meihuan and Gu Feng came to this town.

The man of a two-storey tile house obviously didn't want the two visitors to come in... He looked at them with loathing expression.

"Shen Meihuan, why did you come back? To put me down with your lover?"

"What are you saying?" Gu Feng now angrily frowned because he had married Shen Meihuan three months ago.

Shen Meihuan pulled his sleeve to indicate him not to be angry. And she lightly said to the man she divorced a year ago, "I've called you several times. Your mother answered the phone last time. It's very clear that I come for Jiahui."

"What are you saying?" The man suddenly shouted, "You bitch! You want Jiahui to go with you after you took Jiajie away from me? No way!"

Shen Meihuan took a deep breath, "I've heard you had tuberculosis when you worked in a factory. The factory fired you and didn't give you compensation. So how can you give Jiahui a good life?"

Now Gu Feng reluctantly took a check out of his pocket, "Take

the money to treat yourself. We'll take care of Jiahui well. Please give up his custody."

The man glared at Gu Feng and he tore up the check, "Get out! I don't wanna see you again! "

Gu Feng slightly changed his look. Shen Meihuan took a deep breath and said, "Liu Cheng, You need the money, and you really do not have the ability to raise Jiahui. Don't be so stubborn. If he lives with me, you would see him at any time. Please think about it. I don't want to go to court... You situation is not optimistic."

"I'll never let you take Jiahui away! He is my son!" Roared Liu Cheng.

"Jiahui! Jiahui, are you there? Mom is back. Come out, Jiahui!"

Shen Meihuan was so familiar with the house that she loudly shouted and directly came in.

Unexpectedly, Gu Feng's anger reached its peak. He grabbed Shen Meihuan's hand and pulled her out, "We're not a family! Get out!!"

"Liu Cheng! He's my child, too! I have the right to see him! Let me go!"

"You'll never see him unless you die as well." Liu Cheng now shouted. "But he may not recognize you!"

"What did you say?" Shen Meihuan's face dramatically changed.

"He died!" Liu Cheng grunted and threw Shen Meihuan's hand away.

"How..."

...

"This is his grave. You can check it." Liu Cheng awkwardly drank wine on this nearby hill.

"Jiahui..." Shen Meihuan suddenly knelt down with pale face and touched the name on the tombstone with trembling fingers, kept calling the name.

"How did he die?" Gu Feng who was very calm now frowned and tightly held the collar of Liu Cheng.

"All because he was left by his cruelhearted mother!" Liu Cheng snorted, "Jiahui waited for her to come back every day, but she never came back. He drowned in a heavy rainy day after he left home. What a wicked woman you are! Don't you feel ashamed being here!"

"Watch what come out of your mouth!" Gu Feng contradicted.

Seeing these two men were going to fight, Shen Meihuan went to Liu Cheng, "You liar. My son isn't dead...I don't believe it. You liar!"

"Give my son back to me!!!"

...

"Give my son back to me!"

This sudden mournful scream was suddenly heard in the ward.

Shen Meihuan finally woke up with heavy sweat. Ma Houde went

to her and said, "Mrs. Gu, please calm down. You're just dreaming."

"Where... Where am I?" Shen Meihuan vacantly looked all around.

"We're in a hospital. You fainted just now." Officer Ma said, "The doctor said you are seriously ill and you should have a good rest."

"My son, my son!" Shen Meihuan fiercely grasped the clothes of Ma Houde, "My son!"

"Relax, relax." Ma Houde hurriedly placated, "We've found him in the No.3 Hospital."

"He...is in No.3 Hospital?" Shen Meihuan was stunned.

Ma Houde nodded, "Yes. We don't know what he does for a living. Liu Cheng died of illness six years ago. Liu Jiahui only lives with his grandmother. Is your mother-in-law...Oh sorry, is Liu Cheng's mother called He Xiaomei?"

"Yes... Her name is He Xiaomei."

"That's it." Ma Houde went on, "The record says she had received the gastric resection some time ago. Her relative is Liu Jiahui. So I'm sure he's the one who followed you recently."

"Jiahui..." Shen Meihuan was frozen.

She slowly lowered her head and called the name...

Jiajie was missing, and Jiahui was still alive?

She confusedly put her hands in her hair.

For a long time, she raised her head, "Officer Ma, can you take me to meet him? I want to know some things."

"All right." Ma Houde nodded, "I'll talk to the doctor."

Then they were on the way to the third hospital and nothing special happened.

Officer Ma and the young driver looked at Shen Meihuan from the rearview mirror and sighed.

They thought maybe this son could get her out of the pain of losing her other son.

Soon after they came to the No.3 Hospital.

"Officer, this is the room." The nurse brought them here and said.

Shen Meihuan quickly grasped the handle, but hesitated for some time. After she took a deep breath, she pushed through the door.

Officer Ma and the young policeman just stayed outside to quietly wait and see.

Shen Meihuan was at a loss when she saw He Xiaomei, who was obviously much older than that she remembered. Maybe it's just because of the surgery.

Her hair was gray and sparse, her eyes were deep, and her skin

was dark and rough. She quietly leaned on the bed with the quilt covered, as if waiting for somebody.

Shen Meihuan came to her but she didn't know what she should call her.

Suddenly, He Xiaomei turned to her. And Shen Meihuan subconsciously said, "Mom..."

But soon she realized something and stopped at once.

"Who are you?" He Xiaomei was somewhat puzzled. She shook her head with a kind smile, "I can't clearly see who you are. Come here."

"It's me." Shen Meihuan took a deep breath and sat down at the bedside, "I'm Meihuan. Do you remember me?"

He Xiaomei was so surprised that she suddenly moved her hand out of the quilt.

Her lips were moved, but she didn't say anything. For a long time, she excitedly held Shen Meihuan's hand, "Meihuan, is it you?"

She even gently touched Shen Meihuan's face, "I never thought I could see you again."

Shen Meihuan took a deep breath, "I heard that you had an operation in this hospital..."

Then she grasped He Xiaomei's hand, "Can you tell me who sent you here?"

"Nothing can escape from your eyes..." He Xiaomei shook her head and suddenly levered herself up from the bed.

Seeing He Xiaomei attempting to kneel on the ground, Shen Meihuan nervously said, "Mom, what are you doing?"

"Sorry, Meihuan, I'm sorry! We've deceived you!"

He Xiaomei knelt on the ground and cried, "I told Liu Cheng that you wanted to take Jiahui away... so in order to make you give up, he showed you a fake grove..."

Shen Meihuan collapsed on the floor and weakly muttered, "Jiahui... Jiahui is not dead... Ah!!! Ah!!! Ah!!!"

Shen Meihuan screamed in front of He Xiaomei, seemingly to completely release her pain.

"You!... How can you treat me like this! Ah!!! Ah!!! How could you... deceive... me..."

She strongly coughed with tears, hands pressed the ground, "How...could you... "

He Xiaomei could only guiltily hug her, wailing, "Sorry,

Meihuan, I'm sorry..."

Ah!!!!! Ah!!!!

She was still screaming.

Perhaps this was the only way to let herself breathe.

...

"I want to smoke outside, you wait here and see what's going on." Officer Ma patted the young policeman's shoulder and walked away.

The young policeman knew that Officer Ma who was emotional might feel this kind of pain as a father.

The room was quiet for a long time, and then Shen Meihuan's chocked voice was heard, "How is Jiahui doing all these years?... Liu Cheng had died... Why didn't you come to me?"

He Xiaomei sighed, "I don't know how to connect you... And Jiahui was told that you were dead when he was young... I have no face to tell him the truth..."

"But now..."

"A few months ago, I felt that I wasn't going to make it and told him the truth." He Xiaomei sadly said, "I feared that he will live alone in the world... He's unhappy. Liu Cheng hit him when he suffered relapses and I couldn't protect him well...I have tried to find you, but I have no clues of your whereabouts."

She deceived Shen Meihuan with Liu Cheng maybe just because she also didn't want Jiahui to be taken away.

In this situation, Shen Meihuan understood her. However, whether she forgave her or not, that was another thing.

Knowing the other son of her was still alive, Shen Meihuan gradually calmed down. What a good news for her.

"Where...did the operation money come from?"

"Jiahui sold the house and borrowed some money." He Xiaomei shook her head, "I didn't want to take the surgery, but he threatened that he'd die in front of me... I had no choice."

She sighed, "I'm old and this operation would not succeed... If I die, please take care of him."

Then she grabbed Shen Meihuan's arm, "Has Jiahui looked for you? Theses days he often went out. Oh, where's Jiajie? Is he all right? Can you let me see him?"

Shen Meihuan didn't know how to reply when facing this old woman whom she respected but also resented.

How could she tell her the truth about Jiajie?

"He's... All right. " Shen Meihuan quietly turned her face away, "We've send him abroad."

She lied... And she's perplexed in mind--- She didn't know where Jiajie was now.

"Really?... That's good."

This was probably the best news for He Xiaomei during this period---her another grandson had good prospects.

...

Officer Ma was irritably walking around and smoking out of the hospital.

At this moment, someone just came to him but then quickly ran away.

A hot bowl of porridge was dropped on the floor.

"Stop!" Ma Houde threw the cigarette, catching him up, "Liu Jiahui! Stop running!"

Chapter 356: The Soul's First Movement

No.3 Hospital.

Gu Jiajie looked at the electronic board and perfunctorily answered the phone from his mother.

"Not yet, I'm still queuing up... No, not that serious... I just caught a cold. Full body examination? No, there's no need... OK, I see. I'll ask the doctor." Gu Jiajie looked around and listened to his mother's nagging.

"Dad? He's fine... "

Gu Jiajie wanted to stop this nagging and he suddenly said, "Will you come back tonight? Working overtime... OK. No, it's not necessary to ask dad to come back, I'm OK."

Gu Jiajie looked around and suddenly stopped.

He saw an absent-minded person with his head down walk pass.

A person close to his age.

A person who didn't notice him; a person who seemed to be deep in thought, but looked rather haggard; a person who seemed exactly like him...

Walk pass.

"Mom... That's all, it's my turn."

Gu Jiajie hung up the phone and quietly followed him.

...

...

"Stop, Liu Jiahui! Please stop! Stop!"

Seeing him running out of the gate, Officer Ma who had hurt his foot shouted, "Where will you go? What about your grandmother?"

He suddenly stopped and turned around, "What's...what's the matter with her? "

Officer Ma came to him, "Your grandmother is fine. But your mother is in pain. Don't you know that?"

"I... I have no mother." He turned his face away.

Ma Houde said, "Your mother is not very well now. And you just found out your twin brother died..."

He nodded, but lightly said, "It doesn't mean I have to see her."

Ma Houde frowned. The children of single-parent families have its tough...

Then he shook his head, "Though they divorced, she's still your mother. All misunderstandings will be gone if you meet. Isn't it your aim by following her?"

Ma Houde sighed due to Liu Jiahui's silence, "That day your twin brother died, you were there, right? Did you see how much pain she was in?"

"Stop talking!" Liu Jiahui suddenly roared, "No matter whatever you say, I will not see her... At least, in a short time, I won't!"

"You... think about it first." Ma Houde didn't want to force him,

"Your grandmother is in the hospital and you mother knows you're there. To see her or not, it depends on you. "

"Please tell her... I will meet her, but not now..." He thought for a while and said.

...

"Jiahui... Did he really say that? "

In the ward, Shen Meihuan subconsciously grasped Ma Houde's arm, "Why doesn't he want to see me?"

"Please calm down." Ma Houde sighed, "Maybe he needs time to prepare. He cares about you, but don't force him. Give him more time. He Xiaomei is here, he won't walk away. "

Hearing this reminder, Shen Meihuan let go of Ma Houde's arm. Yes, if she waited here, she could see Liu Jiahui.

But...she didn't got any information about Gu Jiajie.

Jiajie couldn't be found...The most urgent thing for Shen Meihuan now was to find him.

She glanced at the old He Xiaomei who also complexly looked at her, "I... I'm leaving. Have a good rest."

...

Shen Meihuan reluctantly looked back at the hospital.

"Mrs. Gu, Let us take you home. You must be tired. " Ma Houde said.

"No, thanks." Shen Meihuan shook her head, "I won't go back and

I hate to see that man...If you really want to help me, please tell Gu Feng that I will get divorced him. And, stop following me."

"This is my phone number." Ma Houde nodded, "Call me if anything happens." There was no need to meddle in this family affair.

"Thank you." Shen Meihuan went out of the No.3 Hospital.

At this moment, Office Ma saw someone hiding under a tree. He shook his head and said, "Not even good officers can settle family troubles."

He unconsciously touched his hungry stomach, and noticed that he had been busy about for one whole day without having a meal.

Oh no! He forgot to call the female tiger in his family.

"My God... Forty-six unanswered calls, I'll die!"

...

...

"Who, who are you?" He Xiaomei sensitively looked at the door and asked, "Are you Jiahui?"

"Yes, It's me."

He Xiaomei breathed with relief and she grasped her grandson's hand, "Jiahui, your mother came here just now."

"I know." He shook his head, "Don't mention her, Granny. The most important is you. Oh, the water is cold. Let me go and get some hot water for you."

"Never mind. Just sit down."

But Jiahui just went out and left a sighing figure of He Xiaomei, who felt sorry for his precocity and sensibility.

After Gu Jiahui went out of the ward, he didn't walk away but sat on the stool in the corridor, where he had had a long talk with his twin brother two months ago...

"Gu Jiajie...Is it necessary for you to exist?" He muttered.

He could not help but hug himself... He had clearly seen his mother and his living-dead twin-brother.

"What... really happened..."

...

...

He sat on the stool in the riverside park and quietly looked at the scenery.

A decaying living-dead person was conspicuous--- Even though this kind of make-up was very common.

But obviously, the passers-by didn't see him as if he didn't exist.

Also nobody saw the club boss, who followed him to walk through these places filled with memories--- the play center, the old town, the snack stores, the mall... and now sat near him.

The club boss seemed never to be tired, and sleeping was just a simple part of his life.

"Your mother and your twin brother haven't met yet." He said this like a know-it-all.

"And your mother will come for you." Luo Qiu whispered, "What

are you thinking?"

He didn't get any response except the flicker of light in Gu Jiajie's eyes, like in a candle in the wind.

Luo Qiu smiled and turned his eyes as he patiently waited... However, while waiting, a beautiful woman in black dress---Miss Black Water appeared.

This demon snake came here by the scent of the corpse...even though she knew Shen Meihuan would never come to her.

She had a sympathetic heart that she couldn't overlook this. That's why she was here, in front of Luo Qiu.

Miss Black Water lightly said without any surprise, "It really is you... An ordinary person would not be able to resurrect a dead man."

Luo Qiu just smiled to this "familiar" woman, "Do you really think he is a living-dead person?"

"He died."

Miss Black Water frowned, "His soul is gone. Now he is just a corpse. If he was possessed by the devil, his mother would be affected. At that time, what will you do?"

Luo Qiu shook his head, "I don't know much about monasticism. But Miss Black Water, what are the chances in this situation that a vengeful soul will be formed in a body?"

Miss Black Water impatiently frowned and sternly said, "Why are you so cruel?"

"We don't refuse customers requests." Luo Qiu shook his head,

"Miss Black water, you can also give your opinion and... request for solving this problem."

Miss Black Water sneered, "Do you really think I want to make the dirty deal with you? No way!"

"All right, I hope so." Luo Qiu looked at the opposite city of the river.

Miss Black Water didn't know what this hope meant. And at this moment, she even didn't see the inverted reflection in his eyes.

Miss Black Water was walking backwards. She was afraid that there was no other way to get closer to the dead body, except for making a deal with him.

"Why do you... let him live in this way?"

Luo Qiu lightly answered, "I just want to know... What he is thinking. "

"Does the dead body have thoughts?" Miss Black Water shook her head.

But at this moment, Boss Luo showed a silent gesture, "Hush."

He looked at her and whispered, "Listen, the soul's first movement."

Chapter 357: Touch

The world became dark red and the city collapsed in an instant as the heaven fell and the earth cracked.

Long Xiruo could even hear the cry of grief from all things.

Seeing the collapse under her feet, blood red tears flew out of her eyes.

She shouted fiercely to the sky, but what came to her was only the darkness.

"No---!"

She opened her eyes and saw a dazzling galaxy. It was a rare wonderful night.

Long Xiruo had just woken up from a dream on a branch of an ancient tree.

This dream was troubling her since she got close to that door.

She gently touched her eyebrows and gathered some water drops with her fingers to drink.

Then, she jumped down the tree and went to the forest to find the answer.

...

...

The soul's first movement?

"Soul" was the term used by the strange club. However, "Spirit" was usually used to describe the eastern demon Black Water.

Miss Black Water confusedly looked at the living dead, whose eyes were gloomy and whose body was decaying.

Where's the sound of the Spirit? Miss Black Water concentrated her attention on this living dead, but she found nothing different except silence.

"I can't hear anything." Miss Black Water expressed this with her look.

"Please think of the first time that you opened eyes." Luo Qiu glanced at her and went on, "I believe you can hear it... because you are qualified."

Miss Black Water subconsciously stepped back with a terrifying and complex feeling.

Soon she turned around and quickly left... She now just wanted to go back to the little demons.

Luo Qiu gazed at the rotten body beside him, revealing a trace of hope.

But suddenly he stood up and walked away.

...

...

After taking a bath and drinking up the soup, Officer Ma hastily went to the police station, because he had gotten new information about the case of Zhao Ru.

"What's new?" Officer Ma sat down and directly asked, "Any

information from the telecommunications company?"

"No. we've found a stack of letters in the room of the first dead though."

The young policeman gave these to Officer Ma and went on, "The photos in it are the same as that in Zhao Ru's notebook. And the notes, there is proof that she wasn't simply extorting. Once we match the handwriting, I'm sure she had threatened and frighten them, which was why they chose such an extreme method."

Many sharp words and different photographs were attached to each letter.

"You're a good student, good at selling yourself."

"What would your family, your classmates and people around you think if they saw these photos?"

"What will happen if your parents know about it..."

"Why are you still living in the world?"

"I think it's time to disclose these. On the Internet or the street? Or should I send it to your school?"

"What's the meaning of your life? You'll be scolded you whole life."

"Oh, do you really want to know what they say behind you?"

"You b*tch! B*tch!!B*tch!!!"

"I'll reveal it. Go to hell!"

...

Ma Houde shook his head after reading these letters, "What would a child feel to receive such letters every day?"

Maybe they couldn't do anything under threats.

"Go and identify the handwriting of Zhao Ru." Ma Houde ordered, "And threaten her when you interrogate her."

"Yes, sir." The young policeman nodded, "These letters must be out of Zhao Ru's imagination."

"Justice has long arms!" Saying this, Ma Houde suddenly frowned and quickly took up the letters.

"Officer Ma, what's the matter?"

"No, no, no..." Ma Houde put down the letters, "There's no word about the teacher."

"Yes... Is that a problem?" The young policeman was startled, "Weren't we confused over that due to the fake rumors by the real murderer?"

"I know..."Ma Houde said, "But the massage in Gu Jiajie's phone mentioned the teacher."

"Well... Officer Ma, you mean the case of Gu Jiajie being different from other four cases?"

"I don't know..." Ma Houde shook his head and quickly stood up,

taking the key and phone, "I'll go to the No.3 Hospital, you stay here and match the handwriting as soon as possible!"

"Yes, sir!"

...

...

Every information, like the words of Gu Feng and forensic expert, Mr. Qin, and the medicine found in Gu Jiajie's room came to his mind while he was driving.

"I just vented my anger on him, I didn't really mean to hurt him with a knife. But he suddenly rebelled that day..."

"It's strange that the cancer cells were gone when I examined them again."

"This medicine should be a kind of anticancer drug called Chidamide."

"I don't know that much. Doesn't he take care of himself if he gets cold or sick?"

"I must do an examination on the corpse again."

He arrived at the No.3 Hospital.

When he got off the car, he called Mr. Qin, "Hey, Old Qin, what did you get from the examination?"

"I'm waiting for the result."

"OK. Please tell me at first instance." He hung up the phone.

Then he flew over to the ward of He Xiaomei but was stopped by a nurse.

"Excuse me, sir, it's past visiting hours now." Said the nurse.

Officer Ma intended to take out his identification card but the nurse suddenly said, "Sir, do you know Liu Jiahui? Are you his friend or relative?"

"What... What do you mean?" Ma Houde was stunned.

The nurse said, "My colleagues said you and two other people came to see Liu Jiahui and He Xiaomei today... I was going to look for you, but you left."

Ma Houde quietly put his identification card back and asked, "Miss, are you close to Liu Jiahui?"

"Yes, this poor child takes care of his grandmother every day. Sir, if you were his friend or relative, please help him...The doctor said, he wouldn't live long..."

...

...

The play center was the first possible place that Shen Meihuan could think of. But she didn't find her son here.

The staff's insincere reply let Shen Meihuan feel relieved. However, she still felt anxious about her son...

Where would he go this time?

Shen Meihuan had looked for her son almost everywhere they had gone before... And now she came to the hotel that they lived.

Thinking about the woman in the black dress that also lived here, she just wanted to leave, but a voice was heard behind her.

"Are you looking for me?"

"I... I'm just passing by."

Shen Meihuan turned around and saw Miss Black Water. She thought leaving was better than talking to her.

But Miss Black Water said, "Your son is missing again, right?"

"What... what do you know?" Shen Meihuan immediately stopped.

Miss Black Water quietly said, "Don't you feel anything wrong? Your body is corroding."

"You saw him, right?" Shen Meihuan grabbed her arm and begged, "Please! Please tell me where he is!"

"I'm sorry, I don't know." Miss Black Water shook her head and loosened Shen Meihuan's hand, then she just went to the hotel with two big bags.

"Please tell me!" Shen Merihuan knelt on the ground and kowtowed toward her.

Though Miss Black Water heard the sound, she didn't dare to look at Shen Meihuan, but directly went upstairs.

...

Shen Meihuan vacantly looked at the automatic glass door of the hotel for a while, then she disappointedly stood up.

The devastated feeling came to her again that she wanted to ask the club for help. It was more likely that her son would be found if she went to the club earlier. And she would pay anything she had to get that result.

But now, Miss Black Water said, "Wait for a minute, I'll take you to him... Don't make any more transactions."

Right then, Shen Meihuan heard the voice of Black Water.

"Thank you! Thank you! "

Chapter 358: Grievances in His Heart

When he backed to the ward, he accidentally saw a man talking with his grandmother.

"Oh... You are back."

Officer Ma smiled and said, "I'm just worried about your grandmother."

He Xiaomei nodded and kindly said, "Jiahui, he is very kind."

"Well." He nodded, "Granny, please rest a while, I want to talk to him."

He showed Ma Houde out. When they walked to the corridor, he said, "I think I've told you not to bother me."

Officer Ma said, "Can't I show my concern to the elderly?"

He took a deep breath and said, "Officer Ma, you're welcome for visiting. But if you came here for... that woman, please go back."

Ma Houde narrowed his eyes and nodded, "Well, alright, I'll go back. Take care of your grandma."

"Wait, you dropped something." Ma Houde suddenly shouted.

He was stunned and turned around, seeing Ma Houde picking up a medicine bottle. "Your medicine." said Ma Houde.

"Not mine." He glanced at it and casually said, "Maybe it's the nurse's."

"It really isn't yours?" Ma Houde asked again.

He impatiently said, "I'm fine, I'm not sick, I don't need medicine, OK?"

Ma Houde seemed to be suddenly become enlightened and patted his forehead, saying, "Oh, It's the medicine that I got from the doctor... But do you know who this medicine is prescribed to?"

"No, I don't."

"This is the medicine for---Liu Jiahui..." Ma Houde squinted his eyes, "Why do you forget that?"

His expression dramatically changed and said with his head lowered, "I don't know what you are saying... Don't come again!"

He swiftly left. Ma Houde didn't catch him up this time, he just shouted, "Gu Jiajie, you're Gu Jiajie... That day, the one who died was your brother..."

He suddenly turned around in shock and panic!

Ma Houde, who was rich in experience, sighed and slowly came to him, "Before you returned, we have asked a doctor about Liu Jiahui. Technology is very advance now, we just need to examine the body and will know if he had an prior illness. And you, with just an examination, we will know your condition as well."

He subconsciously backed up.

Ma Houde calmly and quickly said, "Why did Liu Jiahui die there? Why did you come? And what did you do? You killed Liu Jiahui!"

"No, not me! Don't come... Don't come... Don't!"

"Do you want me to ask your grandma?" Ma Houde had no choice but to seriously ask with a threat to stimulate him. Even though he knew this mean was a little contemptible.

"No! Don't tell this to my granny! Please, don't!" He begged, "Or my brother would have died in vain."

"What... What the hell did you do?" Ma Houde frowned.

Gu Jiajie took a deep breath and said with a bitter smile, "I don't know... I don't know why I agreed. Now it's useless to regret."

Gu Jiajie looked at Officer Ma, "Two months ago, I came here to see a doctor, and I saw him."

"Your brother, Liu Jiahui?"

Gu Jiajie nodded, "My mom told me he drowned, but I surprisingly saw him that day and knew what had happened."

Sitting on the corridor stool, Gu Jiajie sadly revealed everything that happened in the past two months.

"Officer, did you know that my father usually hit me?"

"Yes, Gu Feng admitted."

Gu Jiajie gave a wry smile, "I don't know why I didn't tell my mom... Maybe they are same, just forcing me... "

He grabbed his collar and painfully said, "Sometimes, I feel I'm out of breath. I want to leave my home, leave them... I told this to my brother and he said we could exchange because we are twins..."

"You mean... You exchanged a long time ago?" Ma Houde was surprised.

"Not very often." Gu Jiajie shook his head, "We only exchanged if we knew my father would come home."

Ma Houde nodded, "No wonder Gu Feng said you suddenly rebelled... It was your brother..."

Gu Jiajie exhaled and leaned his head on the wall, "I'm a coward. When I saw these wounds on my brother... I really didn't want to go back... And at that time, he said..."

"Said what?"

Gu Jiajie looked at the ceiling lights and whispered, "He said... He would die for me."

"Are you agreed?"

Gu Jiajie closed his eyes and nodded, "Until now, I still don't know why I agreed... To pay them back... To live... Or to stop the pain of my brother? He fell down in front of me when he suffered relapse..."

He shook his head and went on, "He has so little memories about me and my mom. Granny is the most important person for him. So if he died, I could take care of granny and be free."

Ma Houde was shocked. He wiped his face and sternly said, "How ridiculous! Have you ever thought about you mother? You followed her these days, didn't you know how pain she was in?"

"But what should I do? I didn't know my brother choose that day, but he just died! We didn't talk over this, he himself just made this decision and died...I can't go back to the past!"

Gu Jiajie was excited, "Many many times, I want to tell my mom... I'm Gu Jiajie... But I can't... I dare not to tell her I cheated her... I shouldn't have agreed with my brother. He said a few years later, granny would pass away and my mother would forgive me whether I'm Gu Jiajie or Liu Jiahui..."

"That day... When I saw my mom bitterly cried downstairs and my brother was covered by the white cloth, I..." His voice trembled, "I... I regretted."

Though Ma Houde was an experienced officer, though he knew Gu Jiajie's sadness, fear and regret, he only shook his head and didn't know what to say.

"I... I did not mean to hide it from you, Officer Ma."

"I know." Ma Houde nodded. He patted Gu Jiajie's shoulder and bitterly smiled, "This is not really a bad thing... But it's really not good to go on like this."

"I don't know what I should do."

Ma Houde shook his head and suddenly asked, "Oh, Why there are strange messages in your cell phone?"

Gu Jiejie replied, "You mean the teacher?"

Officer Ma nodded.

Gu Jiejie said, "My brother said we can use the rumor of that teacher to confuse the police..."

Ma Houde was dumbfounded in an instant.

He was curious about...about Liu Jiahui--- What had this child been through before he died?

Did he die in exchange for someone to take care of his grandma and let Gu Jiajie be free?"

"Oh, Officer Ma, I..." He gulped. He wanted to say he had seen his brother, a living dead brother, but he swallowed his words.

"What else do you want to say?"

"No... Just don't tell my mom for the moment, OK?"

Ma Houde sighed, "Then till when? Your brother lived with your grandma for more than ten years...Couldn't she recognize you that you are not Liu Jiahui?"

"I don't know. I can only play it by ear." Gu Jiajie shook his head.

"Well, I'll keep the secret for the moment... But you'd better tell your mom soon."

Ma Houde left the hospital with a touch of melancholy.

...

Looking at the noisy street, Officer Ma couldn't help but wonder how Liu Jiahui got over the pain of living these years?

Twins that came into this world at the same time.

Yet, walked down different paths.

"He..." Ma Houde stopped on the road and suddenly realized, "He has deep, deep grievances!"

...

...

After revisiting these old haunts, he came to the play center again.

It's still opened. And the staff who was watching a video on the cellphone didn't notice anyone or anything.

He didn't notice---no, he couldn't see him.

He also couldn't hear the music of these game machines in this play centre, because he was wearing the earphone.

One tortoise machine now was running.

"It's the time."

Seeing him grabbed the hammer and hit the tortoises, Luo Qiu slowly closed his eyes.

There was no soul in this dead body, but now the long lasting desire for life which was like a seed burst out at this moment and a new soul was born.

This was the most meaningful moment for Luo Qiu. He quietly waited for it, just like quietly waiting for the night-blooming cereus to bloom.

But now Boss Luo opened his eyes and lightly said, "Miss Black Water, I thought you would stand by and do nothing..."

Miss Black Water was standing behind him; and at her back, Shen Meihuan was there.

Chapter 359: The Soul Would Die

"The mistake should not continue." Gu Jiajie said to himself.

The hospital became quiet. After Ma Houde left, he himself sat at the deserted corridor for a long time.

When he returned to the ward, he found that his grandma had fallen asleep.

All of his childhood memory about her was blurred...

Gu Jiajie sighed and put his grandma's hand in the quilt, wondering if she was having a good dream.

Then he shook his head... Suddenly, he decided to tidy up his brother's reminding items. Actually, there weren't much, just some simple bags.

It was just that he wasn't willing to look at them.

Perhaps it was because he had came clean tonight...

But actually he didn't know how to handle these things himself...

In the luggage of his brother in the cabinet of the sickroom, there were just some clothes and daily necessities.

"It smells, how long has it not been washed?" Gu Jiajie shook his head and poured everything out.

Then he found a folded square paper--- a letter.

---If I were taken away that time, would our fates be different?

Reading this, Gu Jiajie knew this letter was written to him.

"Brother..." He muttered and helplessly sat down on the floor.

...

...

Though the machines were noisy, the voice was clear since the trio were very close.

"Jiajie!" Shen Meihuan hurriedly walked to him with eagerness as if nobody else was here.

She didn't want to know why the club boss was here. What she only cared about now was that she finally found her son.

She closely held him and gently patted his back--- even if he was decaying.

"Did I... ruin your plan?" Miss Black Water asked cautiously.

She seemed to salvage some pride. Pride which she left behind when she fled from this boss frantically.

"Ruin?" Luo Qiu shook his head, "Why does Miss Black Water say that?"

She sneered, "Didn't I? Then what do you mean by following him and ensuring he isn't found?"

"You are not wrong." Luo Qiu nodded, "I did do that."

"As expected." Miss Black Water snorted.

Hearing the talking, Shen Meihuan suddenly turned around and stared at Luo Qiu---because she thought of the mysterious man with a mask.

And she was sure this man who was just a little older than her son was the boss of the club.

"What...what do you want to do to my son? Our deal is over." Shen Meihuan protected her son in front and sternly said, "You can take away everything you want, but except my son!"

"Dear customer, I won't do anything to Gu Jiajie." Luo Qiu shook his head, "Because he's... not here."

"Don't talk nonsense!" Shen Meihuan looked back and firmly said, "He is here! Can't you see?"

She held her son's one hand, "Here! I took him here before!"

But at this moment, Shen Meigyan's hand was slapped away.

She was shocked and said in a flurry, "Jiajie, what's wrong with you? I'm your mum... Jiajie, don't you remember me?"

He just turned around to take the hammer and meaninglessly struck the tortoises...

"Jiajie..." Shen Meihuan sadly covered her mouth.

Staring at Boss Luo, she angrily said, "What... What have you done to my son! He never did this to me! What have you done!!"

"There seems to be some problems." Luo Qiu shook his head and walked towards Shen Meihuan, "Just take it as after-sales service. Please close your eyes."

"What... What are you going to do?" Shen Meihuan suddenly backed in a panic.

And now Miss Black Water suddenly walked in front of Shen Meihuan--- her lips became as dark as ink, her two sharp slender teeth stuck out and her tattoos appeared on her cheeks.

"Don't get close to her!"

"I mean no harm." Luo Qiu shook his head.

"I'll say again. Don't get close to her." Miss Black Water sternly said.

"Take it easy. You are not as powerful as Long Xiruo..."

Hearing the name of Long Xiruo, Miss Black Water suddenly felt dizzy and fear. "Did he have any contact with her?"

When she came to herself, the club boss had already walked her through. Shen Meihuan suddenly knelt on the ground. She was stunned by Luo Qiu's gentle touch on her forehead.

"What? Jiahui... He is... Jiahui?" Shen Meihuan lifted her head, "You... deceived me!"

Luo Qiu lightly said, "Dear customer, I have reminded you... And you agreed."

"You didn't tell me he wasn't Jiajie! You lied to me!!"

"Mrs. Shen." Luo Qiu's voice became louder, "What you want was to resurrect your son, right? And... isn't he your son?"

Luo Qiu shook his head and took it lightly, "Were you not willing just because he was Liu Jiahui instead of Gu Jiajie?"

"I..." She was stunned---Jiahui was also her son. But if she knew the son was Liu Jiahui before, would she make the same decision?

She wasn't sure.

Years had passed. Since she desperately left the town the summer on 2003, she deeply knew it was better to pay all attention to Gu Jiajie rather than regretting not to take Liu Jiahui with her.

So for her only son Gu Jiajie, she divorced and remarried, but was still willing to pay everything she owned.

However, for the other son... She couldn't help but hesitate.

Would she do the same?

...

When Shen Meihuan looked up at the clumsy and rotten body, she was suddenly scared.

She had held him...But now her stretched-out hand was quickly pulled back.

Her son came to her with the hammer in hand, seemingly to invite Shen Meihuan to play with him.

"Don't..." She lightly said this with fear and confusion or even instinct.

No sooner had she spoke this word did she feel sorry...

However, she couldn't take it back... because he heard this.

Finally, he, who had never opened his mouth before, let out a sound.

"Arghh---" filled with grief and misery.

In this moment, all the ugliness was fully shown by him.

He dropped the hammer to the ground all of a sudden.

The first time, was because he didn't know how to hold it... but this time was because he threw it himself.

Then he painfully scratched his face, kneeling down on the floor, crazily striking his head, again and again.

He seemed to want to smash everything in front of Shen Meihuan.

How come? And why?

All abnormal changes on Miss Black Water's face disappeared, but what surprised her were the tears that fell down her cheeks.

It was the echo of the soul.

As Luo Qiu said, she heard it!

"I heard... I heard the soul crying." She murmured.

She looked at Luo Qiu with shock, "He... really has thought...and

new soul... It's impossible... No..."

After she glanced at the crazy corpse, "A new soul is born in the shared memory of his mother and him... That's because of his desire for love! And it is what you want to see!"

"What a pity." Luo Qiu shook his head with a hint of disappointment, "It will die."

Miss Black Water fearfully took a step back, and dared not to look at this young man, even though Luo Qiu didn't show any anger or dissatisfaction.

Perhaps he just wanted to enjoy the moment that a new soul was born.

"If... If I didn't bring her here... Would his missing soul and spirit reunite and really resurrect him?"

He was waiting for this result... But she brought Shen Meihuan here...

At this instant, Miss Black Water felt that she had done something wrong.

Chapter 360: A Little Life

Luo Qiu didn't have much impression on Miss Black Water, except for when she was a customer in the last deal.

The club boss politely said to Miss Black Water, "This result is beyond their transaction fee. And the soul won't be his original..."

Miss Black Water blankly shook her head.

Looking at the corpse, Luo Qiu lightly said, "The new soul has just attached on this body. Perhaps it desires a mother, but he doesn't know who he is, just like a newborn baby... He is feeling pain just because he was denied this memory."

Maybe at birth, he had regarded the first person Shen Meihuan he saw as his closest relative, just like many creatures.

"No... In that case, why would he refuse her mother?" Miss Black Water tried to refute. But her perception was not as deep as the club boss.

"I've said, it's born with the desire for life and the memory of the time they spent together, which are the nutrients for the soul..." Luo Qiu suddenly took a glance at Shen Meihuan, who was filled with confusion and perplexity...

She might be able to hear that, but she didn't know what she could do.

"If so, it has a part of Liu Jiahui and it instinctively dislikes Shen Meihuan." Luo Qiu looked at Black Water and lightly said, "It can't think deeply, but it can feel it."

"And now, it can't express its emotions appropriately." Liu Qiu carefully said, "With such pain... it can only express it through hurting itself."

These words clearly came to Shen Meihuan's ear and heart; she raised her head in an instant.

His head was still striking against the direction of the floor... However, it hit something soft. A soft hand that had held him.

"That's enough." Shen Meihuan sobbed, "Enough."

She took a deep breath and held his head, "Don't... Don't hurt yourself. "

The warmest sound from his mother let him stop moving and crying...

"Enough." She whispered again and again...

Miss Black Water subconsciously turned her head... This scene looked like a mother said gently, "Stop crying, mum is an ordinary person and will sometimes be scared...So, stop crying..."

He quietly stayed in his mother's warm arms, listening to his mother's powerful heartbeat.

Though it didn't have a lot of memories, the remaining feelings told him the heartbeat was familiar.

Yes, in his mother's belly, the heartbeat was the first peaceful voice he'd heard in the world.

Now something broke out from the rotten throat, from the decaying body, which could only be heard by Black Water and Luo

Qiu.

In Shen Meihuan's arms, it tried to speak like a child.

"Mum..." It cried.

它喊:妈.

妈.

...

"It's... It's settled down." Miss Black Water suddenly relieved with a little bit of luck.

She signed and came to Luo Qiu, lightly saying with her head lowered, "I want to buy something."

Then she bit her teeth and walked to one game machine...

Luo Qiu reluctantly left this new soul, which was expressing beauty after going through the pain.

But he had no choice but to leave for a while because of a new deal.

"Miss Black Water, what do you want to buy?" Luo Qiu patiently asked, even though at this moment the new soul was more attractive to him.

Miss Black Water asked back, "It won't die now, right?"

Luo Qiu nodded, "Yes. And it will get stronger... The soul is very wonderful, it may die or be reborn in a second. Well, at the risk of showing my ignorance, I think perhaps the Monasticism can be taken to explain this phenomenon..."

Showing his ignorance? What a kind of irony!

Miss Black Water indifferently and angrily glanced at the club boss with confusion, though she knew he was speaking humbly

and honestly.

"What... what about his body?"

"It will continue getting rot, but also it will move until the transaction fee is utilized to the maximum. " Luo Qiu thought for a while and said.

Miss Black Water exhaled and nodded with an "as expected" expression.

Now she pulled her collar away with her eyes focused on Luo Qiu. What gave the most striking and beautiful contrast to her black dress was her white skin.

When the clothes were untied to her chest, she cruelly slashed the beautiful skin with her sharp fingers.

The red blood and some gold-like liquid flowed out of the wound...

Miss Black Water was tired. She bit her teeth and covered the wound with her palm. After a moment, she loosened her palm, a tear-like golden pearl was floating above her palm.

"A drop of gold blood, is it enough?"

"Miss Black Water's blood is of great value." Luo Qiu nodded, "But Miss Black water, what exactly do you want to buy?"

She quietly said, "Aren't you omniscient?"

"All right, my honorable customer." Luo Qiu bowed.

The drop of blood was floating in the air. Miss Black Water turned around with a pale face to tidy up her clothes.

When Luo Qiu sized up this drop of blood, he suddenly said, "It seems that Miss Black Water doesn't really hate human beings."

"No. I have no good feeling about human beings." She slightly tilted her head, "But to me, she's just a mother."

"I got it..." Luo Qiu lightly smiled.

It's probably because...demon also had feelings.

"Another problem." Miss Black Water suddenly asked, "Do you always deceive customers with such unfair information?"

"Why would Miss Black Water say this?"

Miss Black Water sneered, "Isn't that so? It's unfair that you didn't tell her it was the other son of her. Or you did this on purpose to let her make a deal with you?"

She didn't get the answer immediately.

She shook her head, "It doesn't matter. Anyway, you're...not a place that does good things."

She didn't want to see the end... She knew the club boss could give her what she wanted.

But when she was about to leave, Luo Qiu said, "Is it fair for him not to have any chances to share a good memory with his mother before he dies?"

Such a response seemed like a sigh.

Miss Black Water subconsciously slowed down her steps. She was totally confused by this young and terrifying boss.

"Was he... sympathizing with him from the beginning?"

Miss Black Water didn't know. And now she broke her oath and made a deal with the club.

She left there with her head lowered... She would be weak for a long time due to losing that drop of blood.

...

...

Luo Qiu picked up the hammer and cleaned it up with tissue.

Shen Meihuan merely cared about what in her arms.

Quietly looking at him or it sleeping, Shen Meihuan lightly held his hand, thinking of the scene her twin-boys were born.

Boss Luo walked in front of her.

He crouched down, which surprised Shen Meihuan. Now she could only look at Luo Qiu in picnic.

She even couldn't move, and couldn't speak.

Seeing Luo Qiu put his palm on her son's chest to take out the white light... Shen Meihuan tried to open her eyes wide and stop everything from happening, but she couldn't give any kind of reaction.

Lou Qiu glanced at the pure white light ball in his palm. When he saw the tears of Shen Meihuan, he lightly said, "Don't be afraid, everything will be fine."

And the next second, he suddenly threw the light ball into Shen Meihuan's belly.

Shen Meihuan finally regained her consciousness; she angrily grabbed Luo Qiu's arm, "What are you doing? Why can't you let him go?"

"Listen."

Luo Qiu put her hand on her belly and went on, "And feel it."

Shen Meihuan was astonished, and she suddenly looked up.

"Can you feel it?" Luo Qiu said, "A little life."

She felt that there was a baby growing in her belly.

...

'If there is another life, I will be your child one more time.'

Chapter 361: Happy Heartbeat

Those little monsters gathered at the window and did not dare make any noise for fear of waking up the sleeping Black Water.

The little pig could only put the chips into its mouth, but dared not chew it hard.

Sister Black Water had been sleeping for a whole night, since she came back with a frightening pale face last night.

Black Water's hands covered her belly and looked very peaceful.

"Sister Lingling, what are you doing?"

Little pig asked Little Rabbit Monster Lingling, who climbed onto the bed and got close to Black Water's face.

The rabbit monster blinked its eyes, "I will try to see if I can kiss Sister Black Water awake."

"Ah?"

"Fool! Did you forget how the prince woke up the princess?" the little rabbit monster, Lingling, straightened its back, "Stop eating! Stupid pig!"

Lingling rolled its eyes, and pouted its mouth, getting close to Black Water's lips.

The little monsters were reminded of the words of Black Water, that a kiss was a very private issue; therefore, they only peeped at it through their finger gaps.

When they almost kissed... Lingling swallowed some saliva but suddenly felt the heart beat faster.

Its body became dry, its face turned hot, and there was a weird feeling in its chest.

It felt nervous and expectant... The little rabbit demon, LingLing, then became short of breath.

But Black Water suddenly opened her eyes.

As they gazed at each other, the little rabbit monster, Lingling, was taken aback and stood up, but it didn't manage to maintain balance and fell down from the bed.

It covered its forehead, saying with surprise, "Sister Black Water, you woke up!"

Black Water gave it a 'hush' gesture, "You guys, go hide somewhere."

As soon as she said that, all members went to different places to hide. Some went beneath the bed, some sneaked into the wardrobe, washroom, the bottom of the table, and some hid behind the TV.

They were trained with regularity.

Yes, they were, but Black Water didn't look happy at all. Because they should have been living happily in the forest.

Black Water sighed, getting out of the bed and walking to the door... then opened it.

She saw Shen Meihuan standing at the doorway, Before she knocked at it, the door had been opened.

Shen Meihuan revealed a slight hint of surprise on her face.

"What's the matter?" Black Water looked at her.

Her eyes looked red and swollen, but her spirit was totally different... Maybe because the solution was pretty good.

"I, I heard that person said that it was because of you..." Shen Meihuan tried to explain the purpose of her visit.

Black Water interrupted her, "If there is nothing else, go back, I'm not interested in talking to you. And don't come to me in the future."

"No matter what..." Shen Meihuan took a deep breath, "Thank

you for helping me and I won't forget it forever!"

"Do whatever you like." Black Water said emotionlessly, and was about to shut the door, "We don't have anything to tell each other, go back and look after your kid, don't lose him again."

Shen Meihuan stopped her from shutting the door. From the gap, she looked at this unknown and mysterious woman.

Shen Meihuan said with appreciation, "I'll give birth to him and have him grow up healthily. And ask him to call me mum!"

"Give birth?" Black Water stopped and got confused.

Shen Meihuan nodded, heading down and touched her belly with a smile.

...

The door had been closed finally, and their conversation ended.

Black Water leaned against the door, murmuring, "I'm just..."

She didn't say out the thing she wanted to buy, but she sensed that the mysterious shop had understood her meaning.

She just hoped that the corpse could get back to its original shape, that the aura of the dead body could be erased, and that new-born soul could grow up happily and healthily.

But it was reborn in another way... and it could feel the most sincere love in the world and could grow up happily.

It... could really be him.

"Who are you..."

Miss Black Water expressed her confused feeling, and fell asleep again.

...

...

Officer Ma found a young man sitting in his office when he came

back.

It was the subordinate of Old Qin.

"Hey, Xiaobao, why did you come to look for me?"

"Officer Ma!" the young man headed down, "Can I apply for political asylum for now?"

"Excuse me?" Officer Ma was totally confused.

"I dare not to go back because Chief Qin got mad in the morning." Xiaobao sighed.

"What's wrong?"

"Sometimes there are cancer cells in the corpse and sometimes there are not. Maybe the different conclusions made him crazy..."

Xiaobao sighed, "The chief said I was careless while working, but I swear I did it carefully every time...what the hell? Why would the result always change?!"

"You got the results?" Ma Houde was enlightened.

"Yes, there really are cancer cells." Xiaobao nodded, "It's true... Alas, Officer Ma, can you say something to the chief and ask him to let me go?"

Ma Houde shook his head, "I'm scared of him. There is only one person that dared to go against him but he passed."

"Ah? Who is he?"

Ma Houde sat down slowly, smoking, and saying with reminiscence, "The former boss in this office."

"Then... should I go back to the office?"

Ma Houde smiled, "Don't worry. I know Old Qin very well. If he shouted at you, it means he expects you to achieve something. Understand?"

"...But you didn't tell me if I should go back."

"Do you want your salary?" Ma Houde patted the table, saying ferociously, "Get back!"

"Oh, OK, sorry..."

...

...

No.3 Hospital.

Gu Jiajie didn't sleep well. He walked out of the sickroom and went to get some hot water.

But he met his mother---Shen Meihuan, at the doorway.

Shen Meihuan stood in front of him, which made him too nervous to hold the kettle.

Shen Meihuan sighed, picking up the kettle and shaking her head, "Why are you still so careless, you've grown up."

Gu Jiajie suddenly gazed at his mother... This sentence, he had heard too many times.

"Mum...you, you..."

"I know everything already."

...

"Sorry... I, I was wrong."

The mother and the son had a heart-to-heart talk in the hospital corridor. Gu Jiajie lowered his head, "Mum... this is the last letter from my brother."

Gu Jiajie fished out the letter from his clothes, and passed it to Shen Meihuan.

Shen Meihuan opened and read it thoroughly... Tears fell. Finally, she deeply breathed, raising her head and tried to withdraw her tears.

And hoped the time could go back.

She tore the letter completely.

"Mum...this is the last..."

Shen Meihuan shook her head, "Your brother didn't die. He is still alive and living in my body."

Gu Jiajie didn't understand his mother's words, but he still nodded.

Shen Meihuan hands put on Gu Jiajie's shoulders, "You have two identities, got it? Don't let your brother down, take good care of your granny. Don't be afraid, mum will help you. Come here..."

Shen Meihuan wiped her face; as a mother, she knew that she should be stronger.

She opened the corridor window with a complex look. After breathing deeply, she threw out the shredded paper and let it flow with the wind.

...

In the sickroom, He Xiaomei squinted her eyes, and tried to take of her quilt, "Are you Jiahui? Did you mum come here? It seems so..."

The senior's face was full of expectations.

"It's me." Shen Meihuan came to her bed, sitting down and grasping He Xiaomei's hand tightly, "I came to see you, mum."

"Meihuan, Meihuan..." the senior seriously cried.

She didn't expect that her daughter-in-law would call her mum one more time. Her wish had been satisfied in her last days.

"Great, great." The senior wiped her eyes, repeating, "Great, great!"

The senior grabbed Gu Jiajie and Shen Meihuan's hands.

Their hands tightly grabbed one another.

The senior acted carefully, dared not to break up the dreamful

morning, "When Jiajie comes back from abroad, all members of our family will be united again."

Shen Meihuan choked back her sobs.

That was what she wanted to say.

At this point.

...

...

The sickbeds were for patients to rest in; but the weather today was suitable for patients to catch some sun.

The young man was sitting in the pavilion, nobody noticed him, or the hammer near him.

It was a plastic hammer for games.

He opened his palm, and the shredded paper near his hand was gathered and stuck together, finally formed into a complete letter.

Luo Qiu put it on his thigh, smoothing it out, before reading.

--If I were taken away that time, would our fates be different?

--I sat in your room, there are many things I desired; and now, I'm holding them by in my hands.

--but I know, they would never belong to me. Even if I entered this family using your identity.

--I saw my mum and had the chance to talk to her and eat the food she cooks, along with 'Good night' from her.

--But don't know why, I'm not happy... I thought I would be, but at least, I can feel these extravagant things in my last days.

--However, I cannot be happy. Do you know why?

--That's because what mum sees is only you. I don't blame her for believing father's lies. In her opinion, there will be no father in the world who would make a fake tomb for his son.

--Yes, I know all of these, so I don't blame her... but I cannot be happy.

--If, if she had investigated it thoroughly, would she have found something? If she took me away that year, would the result be different?

--I ask myself, why do I have to suffer the pain. Why do I have to stay in this family and face this disgusting father? Is it because of the ruling from the court?

--Sometimes I wonder if mum had a choice. Was it her choice or the court's ruling?

--I don't know and dare not to think about it.

--Today, your disgusting father punched you again. Of course, it was me. I resisted on instinct. I don't know why didn't you resist all these years but I feel a little happy.

--Because even if you're lucky, it doesn't mean you have a better life than me.

--I hate, I hate everything.

--I hate you.

--I hate my mum.

--So, I made a decision, I decided to punish you. I'll jump down from your building, with your identity.

--I will make you and mum suffer. Even if you confess or if the truth is revealed. I don't care. Because you've suffered the pain. This is the punishment you should get.

--Ridiculous isn't it? I made this decision but still write down this letter.

--Whatever, please take good care of granny. I would not have lived through the decades without her.

--I have never felt happy.

--If I have a next life...

--Liu Jiahui, last words.

...

Folding the letter carefully, the club boss picked up the small hammer, knocking on the stone bench.

Pat!

Like a heartbeat from a little life, which was strong and connected with his mother.

Chapter 362: An Agonizing Feeling

A figure was freely passing through the earth's core, where human beings couldn't reach.

She achieved it merely by her own body, without any technological means or protection suit.

There was another reason that was helpful in guaranteeing her free travel.

Because this was where she was born.

Long Xiruo saw red magma when she opened her eyes.

A special texture was mixed in the air---it was an oppressive heat wave. Long Xiruo had submerged in it for a whole day, since she came from the top of the ancient forest.

She stopped here now.

The place had been built before she was born and upheld by a huge column with half of the area being a spacious platform in the rolling magma.

The platform connecting the wall was surrounded by 360 huge chains at the magma level. But each one was not close to the next one.

This was because the platform was extremely big.

Long Xiruo jumped from the entrance and stepped on one of those chains; she jumped again. Her body rising up to the edges of the platform.

She got close to the center of the platform step by step.

Her face looked serious, without any distracting thoughts.

She finally reached her destination--- In front of her eyes was a round pool with no liquid in it.

There were only numerous bones. Gigantic bones.

They belonged to all the true dragons.

Long Xiruo made a bow in front of this pool, "Long Xiruo greets all elder generations."

She pressed her hands on the platform, knocking her forehead 9 times on it before raising up. Then, she gazed at the peaceful pool, saying gently, "Xiruo has seen a strange phenomenon, which has been confusing me. Could any of the elder generation give me some guidance?"

After that, she closed eyes slowly, recalling all the scenes she witnessed from the horrible door gap.

A lot of sweat emitted from her forehead--- Even the burning earth's core even could not cause her body to have such a reaction.

A minute later, Long Xiruo heaved a sigh and opened her eyes. She was waiting there and clearly knew that those elder generations had become bones and their souls had turned into the nutrition for raising her.

Nevertheless, she was aware that some parts of their intelligence remained.

"Please give me some guidance! I need to know!"

Time passed and her patience had been withered away. She had no choice but to stand up, "Please tell me! What did those phenomenon mean? Why did I have that dream?"

With a deep breath, Long Xiruo said abruptly, "Elders! What happened to his blessed land's ley lines? Tell me!!"

"Elders!"

She couldn't help walking forward; but soon, the platform started to quiver slightly!

And it became even more serious as time passed.

Long Xiruo expression changed in an instant, because all the bones were smashed into powders and scattered away.

"...What happened?"

The extreme uneasiness made Long Xiruo face paled... Nobody else understood how firm those bones were, except herself.

They had stood at this place after countless years. She never thought they would be smashed.

But she didn't get her answer.

Next, the whole platform started to break, one and one rocks dropped into the rolling magma, and 360 chains broke up one after another.

They fell into the magma and disappeared completely. Long Xiruo saw this place, where she was born, facing an unprecedented disturbance.

"Ley lines... The ley lines even..."

Abruptly, her golden eyes clearly saw a different movement of the magma, something which had never occurred in her memories.

Long Xiruo deeply breathed, submerging herself into the magma.

She tried to follow the unusual flow... maybe she would find the real answer.

...

...

It was another day for a typhoon.

Not long after the last one.

Anyway, the abnormal weather that occurred more frequently brought excess rainfall to this city.

A sudden thunder resounded, loud enough to wake the dead.

Qin Chuyu opened her eyes and woke up from her meditative condition. She didn't know if it was the thunder that disturbed her.

She frowned, gazing at the club hall and saw a figure knocking something on one of the walls.

Tai Yinzi.

"What are you doing?" Qin Chuyu asked.

Tai Yinzi gaped, hiding it behind his body by instinct. However, it fell, maybe because of his nervousness.

Fortunately, Tai Yinzi had a speedy reaction. He turned into black smoke and caught the dropping item.

He turned back to human shape and grasped it by both hands, showing a relaxed expression---It turned out it was a small hammer.

The servant girl ordered him to place it on the shelf yesterday.

"I was lucky not to break it... Oh my god." Tai Yinzi sighed, placing it back onthe shelf.

"Slave B*tch! A gentleman should never scare people from the back, don't you know that?!" Tai Yinzi moved his anger to Qin Chuyu.

"Ridiculous." Qin Chuyu sneered, closing her eyes gradually.

Tai Yinzi knew he used inappropriate words, but seeing Qin Chuyu no longer speaking to him, he felt depressed and couldn't help giving her an atrocious look.

WOW!

It was a hellish look.

"Tai Yinzi, what are you doing?"

The servant girl's voice flew to him from the back. Tai Yinzi gave a start and coughed. When he turned back, his expression had changed back into an old peaceful Taoist.

Anyway, that was what he thought while wearing a colorful shirt with an afro.

"Master, Miss You Ye." Tai Yinzi made a bow to them, "I'm thinking about some martial arts from my friend."

Luo Qiu just finished the daily maintenance on You Ye. He sat in front of the counter, taking a sip of water, and asked, "Martial arts?"

"Yeah, nothing, but some martial arts comprehended by a dingy Taoist from books like the Book of Changes and the Eight Diagrams."

Tai Yinzi said indifferently, "I met him by chance, and had a happy conversation to exchange thoughts about cultivation. And that dingy Taoist created a set of fist skill for preserving one's health. I just found out there are many sects using it! So I plan to deeply ponder on it."

Luo Qiu looked at Tai Yinzi, who turned from calm to nervous. He put down the cup, asking, "What kind of fist martial arts?"

Tai Yinzi said politely, "That dingy Taoist wanted me to name it. I just blurted out 'Tai Ji', and he used it."

Luo Qiu chuckled upon hearing the name. He glanced at the servant girl, who didn't know why her master laughed.

Why?

That was because Tai Yinzi showed off in a proper way.

"Master... anything wrong?" Tai Yinzi didn't know the reason and felt his back turning cold.

Luo Qiu shook his head, "Nothing, I think I should thank you on behalf of those seniors in the park."

"How dare I receive Master's appreciation!"

Tai Yinzi waved his hand, stepping forward and saying, "Master, I realized my fault from the last matter! So these days, I dared not to act lazily to seek for new potential customers under No.9's instruction! And fortunately, I found one!"

Saying this, Tai Yinzi picked up a white card from his pocket at the back of his leggings and, with both hands, passed it to master.

Luo Qiu didn't even check the cards Black Soul No. 18 gave him at the level one basement.

He had his own tempo in running a business.

"Really?"

Luo Qiu saw Tai Yinzi's urgent look that wanted him to check it quickly; however, he put it down.

"Lead the way, I want to go to have a look at the potential customer." Luo Qiu said softly, when Tai Yinzi showed a slight hint of depression.

It made him think of the matter last time. Who knows how this matter would turn out this time.

"Yes, master!" Tai Yinzi was excited.

But the boss opened his mouth, "You Ye, go change, and accompany me."

Tai Yinzi...Tai Yinzi's smile was slowly faded.

'WHAT...THE...F*CK!'

Chapter 363: Interrogation Carried by Wang Yuechuan

Ma Houde walked into the police station with his folded umbrella.

He heard a noise upon entering report room. Therefore, he stopped and was not astonished to see an "old acquaintance".

Gu Feng, who was Shen Meihuan's husband... Maybe ex-husband. Shen Meihuan said that she would get divorced from this man. Who knows what happened after that.

But there was another woman sitting in the report room with bruises on her face. It seemed that she was struck by someone.

One police officer was making a record for the case. He saw Ma Houde coming back and walked out of the report room. Giving a greeting, he said, "Officer Ma, how are you today? You seem to have returned a little later than yesterday."

"Eh, we are caught in a traffic jam because of the heavy rain. What the hell is the city's administration department doing? The stagnant water was overflowing everywhere!" Ma Houde complained. "What's wrong here?"

"Eh, nothing, just an assault case." The police said with a shrug. "The man inside was betrayed by the woman. He found the son was not his, so he beat the woman forcefully. Do you know the man? Or..."

"Nope."

Ma Houde raised his head and put his fingers in the key ring. Next, he patted the dust off himself and then left.

He didn't know why he felt extremely satisfied upon seeing that Gu Feng being betrayed by others. It was really inexplicable!

But his delight was disappeared when he saw Wang Yuechuan

sitting in his office. It seemed that Wang Yuechuan had been waiting for him for a while.

He pretended to take a glance at his watch and tried to ignore the man who was assigned by the provincial police station.

At this time, he saw a policewoman walking by and holding a saucer in hands. Ma Houde said to her, "Hold on, where are you going?"

The policewoman was stunned and responded, "Sir, I am bringing a cup of coffee to Mr. Wang."

"Eh... Did you add sugar?" Ma Houde nodded and asked.

"Yes, I put one spoon of sugar." The policewoman was confused why Ma Houde would ask her.

And Ma Houde said without any expressions, "Mr. Wang likes sugar the most, one spoon is not enough. Add six spoons more, please."

The policewoman realized that Ma Houde wanted to play a joke on Wang Yuechuan. She said in a pitiful tone, "Sir, please! It's okay to add six spoons more. But could you please do it yourself? I can't afford being made into a scapegoat for this joke."

Ma Houde opened his mouth but said nothing. He felt betrayed. He picked up the cup and drunk up the coffee. He snorted and spoke, "That's all, and this is for me. No need to provide coffee! Water is okay for him."

"Fine...Fine..."

"Wait, the cold boiled water is perfect."

"..."

...

Ma Houde stepped into his office with the coffee cup and made a direct eye contact with Wang Yuechuan after sitting down.

"Hi, Wang, how long have you been here? Is there anyone serving you a coffee?" Ma Houde laughed and continued, "Maybe they are too busy to serve you a cup of water. I shall knock them for their overlooking. For now, what can I do for you?"

"Please help to schedule an interrogation, I need to talk to Zhao Ru." Wang Yuechuan requested directly.

Ma Houde thought for a while and frowned, "Colleague Wang, based on the letter we found in the deceased's house, we can confirm Zhao Ru is not innocent. Things have gotten clear. Although Zhao Ru said nothing, we will find a timing to let her admit her guilt. I believe that she can't escape from the Heaven's ' punishment, as manifested in the voice of her conscience. So there is no need for your interrogation."

"I have something to confirm with her." Wang Yuechuan insisted, "Mr. Ma, please arrange the meeting."

Ma Houde sat close to him and asked, "Is it about that cram school?"

"Officer Ma, this is required by the provincial police station, I have nothing to tell." Wang Yuechuan requested a third time in the same tone, "Please arrange it as soon as possible."

...

Ma Houde raised his middle finger against Wang Yuechuan secretly when he saw Wang Yuechuan entering the interrogation room.

The young police who were next to Ma Houde knew that the gesture was most often used by his sister-in-law so he learned it. But the young man was not intended to expose the fact. He was going to the hearing room without a word.

Normally, there should be someone in the hearing room when one was interrogating suspects in the interrogation room.

"Hold on, no one needed in the other room." Ma Houde shook his

head and added, "This is requested by Wang Yuechuan."

"What, this is against our regulation."

Ma Houde said grouchily, "No choice, he is higher ranked and we need to follow his instructions."

"OK, let's go back if that is so." The young police planned to go back to the office.

But he was obstructed by Ma Houde and was told, "Idiot, you can overhear through the door. Put your ears close to the door! Try to catch every word inside! "

"..."

'So...you will leave me alone here while you go back to play games which are impossible to win?' the young police said under his breath.

...

...

Wang Yuechuan met Zhao Ru the first time although he had seen the photo of her many times. He could remember every detail of her.

He realized the reason why she could keep silent until today when he saw Zhao Ru herself.

A morbid silence and calm leaked out from her eyes.

In addition, Wang Yuechuan knew clearly that the woman wouldn't say anything unless he began first. Even if he started the topic, Zhao Ru might say nothing at all.

"Zhao Ru, I have seen your profile." Wang Yuechuan chose to break the ice.

But Zhao Ru kept sitting in silence and didn't intend to respond.

"I am not going to make you admit your guilt." Wang Yuechuan pulled out several photos from the pocket of his suit. "Answer me,

have you seen these people?"

There were three men and one woman in the photo. One of the men wore a pair of sunglasses with a mole on this face. The others looked normal with no characteristics.

Zhao Ru glanced at the photos and looked into the large sheet of glass between the interrogation room and the hearing room. It seemed that she was not trying to look at someone behind the glass but merely seeing her reflection on the glass.

She even tried to fix her hair and touched the necklace as if the glass was a mirror.

Nevertheless, there was still no response.

Wang Yuechuan narrowed his eyes.

Then, he picked up one photo where a man was in it. "This man killed six people in the provincial capital city a year ago."

And another woman's photo was taken by him, "This woman was a dancer, who was involved in a murder eight months ago."

And the last one was picked up, "This man has no job. However, he killed four vagrants about six months ago."

Zhao Ru stared at Wang Yuechuan, but she still didn't say anything. She stood up and walked towards the glass to fix her hair.

"Miss. Zhao, tell me the truth." Wang Yuechuan stood up, too. He walked close to Zhao Ru's back gradually. Seeing from the reflection on the glass, Wang Yuechuan was right behind Zhao Ru.

"I don't know what your purpose is for asking me about these killers who I can't recognize." Zhao Ru answered calmly, "Am I obligated to answer? "

"Really? You don't know?" Wang Yuechuan nodded and got more close to her. His body was almost touching Zhao Ru's back.

He put his hands on Zhao Ru's shoulder lightly rather than with

too much strength.

"The police have changed tricks from coercion to harassment?"

"Of course...not, I am just..." Wang Yuechuan sneered, "I am just going got take something from you."

Wang Yuechuan tore off the necklace from Zhao Ru in one move and walked back to the table. He raised the necklace, "I need this one."

"Return it to me!"

Zhao Ru broke her unhurried manner and reacted crazily. The other police never saw her frenzied behavior like this. She pounced at Wang Yuechuan at once.

But she didn't succeed as her hands were handcuffed. Wang Yuechuan moved backward and got by easily.

Wang Yuechuan asked, "Are you really not relevant to these people? Why are you so excited? Why do you have the same necklace as they do? And, why..."

Seeing Zhao Ru's ferocious eyes, Wang Yuechuan said in a heavy sound, "Why do all of you care so much about this kind of necklaces?"

"Give it back to me!"

Zhao Ru leaped at him the second time.

Wang Yuechuan pressed her on the wall and shouted, "Say it! What's the meaning of this necklace? Have you gotten the necklace from a man with glasses? What's his name!"

"I don't know! I don't know! Return it to me! Quickly!" She struggled to get free.

"What happened?!"

At this point, the young police rushed in as he heard the noise out of the door. He was speechless when he saw the scene here.

Wang Yuechuan frowned. Zhao Ru took the chance and broke free.

But she did not intend to escape from the room. She leaped at Wang Yuechuan again. Wang Yuechuan rose in self-defense but pushed Zhao Ru to the wall accidentally.

Zhao Ru's head was hit by the wall and fell unconscious.

"Sir, are you... beating the culprit?" The young police frowned.

Wang Yuechuan stared at the young man indifferently.

The young man felt his sight was much colder than the murderers in the prison. His heart was beating fast.

Wang Yuechuan took a deep breath and cleaned his clothes. He walked closer to the young man, "She won't go crazy once she sees this necklace. You send her for treatment. Remember, contact me once she wakes up."

Wang Yuechuan left directly.

"Sh*t...Who do you think you are?"

The young police... raised up his middle finger, which was learned from Subeditor Ren.

Chapter 364: The High Walls Of Prison

What the prisoners expected most was not the day when the canteen held a feast, or the occasional activities in the prison, nor the day when they were exempted from work.

They looked forward to "Visiting hours" the most.

The day they could meet their families and friends.

"Cheng Youmin, Li Sicheng, Wang Wei, Zeng Jinfu..."

The prisoners would stand up when the jailer called their names one by one. Some would go into the meeting room with sweet smiles. Some went out of the room in melancholy. And some would sit there waiting in helplessness.

Certainly, there was a man who was never called... as no one came to meet him.

The man was about 60 years old with short straight hair. His hair was half-black and half-white. He might be younger than his real age. After all, the life in jail was not comfortable so he looked old.

But Zhou Xiaokun knew that the old man sitting beside him by the field was 57 years old today... because today was this old man's birthday.

"Hey, bro, make a wish. Today is your birthday but there is no cake. This is an egg provided by canteen. Just take it."

Zhou Xiaokun was sent to the prison for escaping from drunk driving. It was not very long since he came into this jail. However, this old man had already been here since Zhou Xiaokun came.

He was accused of murder.

Zhou Xiaokun didn't ask anymore. Everyone had a past. It was impolite to inquire about others' stories. Unless he was willing to tell him.

So Zhou Xiaokun only knew that the old man named Feng

Guichun, a northerner. His wife died while giving birth. He had a daughter.

But his daughter never visited him—at least, his daughter hadn't come in the past one year.

"Little Zhou." The old man...Feng Guichun was looking at the red egg in Zhou Xiaokun's hands and smiled, "You are very thoughtful."

"Not at all. Thank you for your kind help when I came here at the beginning." Zhou Xiaokun said with a smile.

"I have my reasons, you know." Feng Guichun sighed and looked at Zhou Xiaokun. "Have you seen...your brother?"

"Yes, he left just now." Zhou Xiaokun nodded and sighed, "Sorry, bro, my brother said he didn't find your daughter."

Feng Guichun shook his head and tapped his thigh. "Never mind, I expected it. It has been many years. People here came and went. I have resorted to many people... and have gotten used to this situation."

Seeing the old man getting hopeless, Zhou Xiaokun continued, "Don't worry, my brother said he had gotten some information about your daughter, but he just didn't find her."

"Really?" Feng Guichun got excited. His senile eyes haven't been so bright for many years.

Zhou Xiaokun nodded and added, "Of course, my brother got it accidentally. She was adopted by the orphanage since you were arrested."

"I know this." Feng Guichun nodded his head, "People from that orphanage would always come to see me at the beginning. They told me about her recent life. But later, she was adopted by others... about eight years ago. I heard that they went aboard and then there was no news at all. "

"It seemed that they had come back." Zhou Xiaokun clapped his shoulder, "And furthermore, your daughter is going to be married."

"Is she?" Feng Guichun held Zhou Xiaokun's hands at once, "Are you kidding me?"

Zhou Xiaokun saw his tearful eyes. He had never seen this old man get so excited.

Nothing could be more exciting than that a father hearing that his daughter was getting married.

"It should be real." Zhou Xiaokun clapped the old man's hands, too. "Congratulations, bro!"

"Same to you..." But Feng Guichun got upset with lowering his head.

"Bro?" Zhou Xiaokun was confused and asked, "Aren't... you happy?"

"I am happy." Feng Guichun smiled rigidly. He sighed and touched his leg, "How could I be unhappy... Thank you so much, Little Zhou. It's windy. I am a little unwell. I will go back now."

"Hey..." Zhou Xiaokun didn't know what to say while watching his back.

It's a big joyous occasion to see daughter getting married. But he... couldn't see it.

What could he do even if he knew?

His daughter, however, never thought of seeing him.

The egg was still in Zhou Xiaokun's hands. He thought that this gift would only make the old man much sadder.

Zhou Xiaokun sighed. He did not intend to eat the egg. Placing it on the bench, he walked back too.

...

Later, the egg was picked up by someone... the club's owner.

Luo Qiu sat on the bench watching the playground in the rain. Rainwater was flowing slowly on the field.

The scene differed a lot between the prison and outside world.

"Master, what's your opinion?"

Seeing Luo Qiu sitting here without a word, Miss. Maid could keep silent. But Tai Yinzi couldn't. So he proceeded to ask just now.

"What do you mean?" Luo Qiu asked Tai Yinzi while watching him.

"I mean...Feng Guichun." Tai Yinzi answered in a hushed reverent voice, "You see, he was eager to see his daughter! So I guess he will do everything to achieve that! Especially when he heard what Zhou Xiaokun said just now, he must be more eager."

Luo Qiu was watching Tai Yinzi with a faint smile on his face. Tai Yinzi added, "In addition, it is so easy to let his daughter meet him. She can come here by taxi if I possessed her body. Master, the deal is worth it."

Tai Yinzi got a little anxious seeing no response from Luo Qiu, his eyes twinkled and went on to say, "Master, you see, Feng Guichun is willing to give everything for a chance to see his daughter. Once he sees her, he should be very touched and will weep. There will be no regrets for him then. So his soul will be of high quality."

Luo Qiu still said nothing. Tai Yinzi felt a little flurried.

Perhaps he said something wrong? No... according to his observation these days, Master should have some interest in this.

Also, He heard the topic about soul quality through the conversations between Master and Miss. Maid sometimes.

So, what was wrong here?

Luo Qiu's silence made him feel worried.

"Master?"

Luo Qiu put the egg back and stood up, "Tai Yinzi, you finally found a decent customer this time."

"Thanks to your blessing."

Luo Qiu smiled lightly and then disappeared in front of Tai Yinzi...

Tai Yinzi was stunned. He looked at Miss. Maid who was going to follow Luo Qiu next. Tai Yinzi asked, "Miss. You Ye, What... did master mean? It is hard to guess."

"Don't you hear master said the customer was good?" Miss. Maid said in a peaceful voice, "Can you understand?"

"Oh... I got it!" He shivered, "I'll get to work now, working hard!"

Miss. Maid disappeared in the rain.

...

...

This was a medical institution which cooperated with the police. Criminals and suspects would be sent here for treatment.

The window was furnished with guardrails to prevent criminals escaping.

The young policeman and another policewoman sent Zhao Ru here. Seeing Zhao Ru lying on the bed unconscious. Young police asked the doctor, "Doctor, how is she?"

"Eh, there are many possible conditions. We will do a blood draw later to see details." The doctor withdrew the stethoscope and continued to say, "The girl's condition is pretty stable, she will wake up soon later."

"That's fine." The young nodded and told the policewoman, "I will go through the admission procedure with the doctor. You keep watching out her here."

Then, he handcuffed Zhao Ru's hand to the bedrail and said seriously, "In case she escapes, be careful."

"Got it." The policewoman nodded, "Lin Feng, leave it to me."

The young policeman... Lin Feng walked with doctor away.

The policewoman checked all the windows in this ward, as well as the washing room. After that, she locked the door and read the newspaper while sitting down.

But she didn't know why she became sleepy and even couldn't open her eyes.

She closed her eyes slowly, and then went into sleep with head down.

At the same time, the door was unlocked and opened by someone.

His leather shoes knocked on the floor and made noises. A man came in. He sat beside the bed after pulling a chair with him.

The man took off his glasses and rubbed it with his handkerchief.

After wiping, he wore the glasses again. The man picked up Zhao Ru's necklace after watching her for a while.

The crystal of Black Water now flashed in the man's hands.

He whispered, "It's really ugly... but it's not enough."

The man lowered his head to get close to Zhao Ru. He was saying something to her gently.

Chapter 365: Wonderful Performance

Half a day past since Lin Feng went to complete the admission procedure.

He ran to the ward directly after going out of the doctor's office. Opening the door, Lin Feng said, "Hurry up, I am going to buy some snacks outside, what would you like to eat..."

He immediately saw that the bed was empty without finishing his words. He ran to the bed and found that the handcuff had been fractured with one part of it hanging by the bedrails.

The policewoman could not wake up. He was really confused who made the girl unconscious.

Lin Feng started emitting cold sweat. He could only call back to the office to seek help.

"This is terrible, Sir, Zhao Ru escaped!"

"What? Ouch..." Ma Houde's angry voice could be heard but it turned into a shout of shock. Then the young police heard an anguished sound from the other side of the phone. It seemed that Ma Houde had hit something, "How could she disappear?"

"I am not sure, I was completing the admission procedures with the doctor for a while. Xiao Ke was here watching her. But I found Xiao Ke unconscious when I came back. The handcuffs were sawed by something, the incision was tidy... I think someone dragged her away."

"How long did they do it?"

"About ten minutes...No more than thirteen minutes!"

"OK." Ma Houde added, "Just leave Xiao Ke in the hospital if you can't wake her up, go to check the monitoring system in this hospital to see if there are any clues... She won't get far in 13 minutes!"

"Yes, sir!"

On the other hand, Ma Houde hung up the phone and assigned missions to the other members. He almost forgot his painful knee which was hit just now.

"Try to check all the bus stations, train stations and airport. And also inform those illegal taxi drivers!" Ma Houde clapped his hands, "Go now, quickly!"

He evicted other policemen out of office in a very short time.

Hearing of the noises outside, Wang Yuechuan opened the door. He had already regarded the office as his own. Seeing the police rushing out, he frowned and asked, "What's wrong here?"

Ma Houde was not going to blame Wang Yuechuan if he reviewed documents in the office. But he was apparently looking for trouble himself. Ma Houde said angrily. "Wang, do you know you caused a big mess? Zhao Ru was taken away from the hospital!"

Wang Yuechuan pulled a long face, and then walked out from the office. He asked, "Why was she taken by others? Your team lost her?"

Ma Houde snorted and said, "I believe my members! One of them fainted and stayed in the hospital! But you didn't even tell me what you said to Zhao Ru! You should be clearer why she was taken! And, who caused her to be hurt thus needing treatment? Wang! Yue! Chuan!"

Wang Yuechuan didn't respond to Ma Houde's scolding. He was in deep thought. Later, he walked back to the meeting room and returned with clothes on. "Where is the hospital? Take me there."

"What are you going to do? Do you think she will still hide in the hospital?"

"No." Wang Yuechuan said seriously, "Officer Ma, take me there and I can tell you the truth. I am not going to look for Zhao Ru but to find that guy's tracks."

"That guy?" Ma Houde was confused and followed, "Which guy?"

"A scumbag."

Ma Houde had no idea that who the scumbag was but he could feel Wang Yuechuan's indignation.

...

...

There was no work that needed to be done in jail because of the visiting hours. Although some prisoners had no families or friends visiting, they could still enjoy a free day without working.

But Feng Guichun chose to lie in his bed.

Perhaps he was sleeping? It was rainy today... Seeing the gloomy and dump cell, Zhou Xiaokun thought that. He didn't intend to wake the old man as he knew that it was better to leave Old Feng alone.

Zhou Xiaokun's bed was on the left of Feng Guichun's. He had nothing to do so he fell asleep soon.

There were a few people in the cell. Feng Guichun opened his quilts and picked up his pillow after glancing at Zhou Xiaokun. There was a photo under the bed sheet, which Old Feng had kept for years.

He would look at the photo every night before he went to sleep.

Years past and his vision became poor gradually.

Old Feng moved his body toward the window. He wore his glasses and tried to discern the photo with the help of light refracted from the iron window.

It was a normal photo. The photo showed a father sitting in a house with his daughter in a hug.

But Old Feng never got tired of seeing the photo.

He gently touched the little girl on the photo again and again. At

last, he held the photo and leaned on the bed, saying to himself, "I know you don't want to see me...it's not your fault..."

He was tired and closed his eyes.

He heard a gentle voice saying something around his ear... and felt someone talking to him when he was half-asleep.

The voice said, 'Do you give up meeting your daughter?'

Is that his voice? Old Feng was not sure... but he thought in heart, 'I don't want to bother her, it's right for her not to see me...'

The voice continued, 'But she may leave here forever when she finishes her wedding and you will have no chance to meet her at that time.'

Old Feng was sad, 'It doesn't matter... as long as I know she is happy, that's enough.'

The voice didn't give up, 'How do you know she is happy if you don't see her at all? Don't you worry if the man treats her badly? Don't you want to see how she looks like now? Don't you want to hold her hands again?'

'I do... but... she won't see me anymore... I dragged her down.'

'Just do it... follow your heart... just see her... I can make it come true... come on... if you want, give me something, then your wish can be achieved... come on...'

The voice was ringing around Old Feng's ear.

That's the voice of Tai Yinzi, made by imitating his voice.

Tai Yinzi was shocked that Old Feng reacting calmly.

'F*ck! Why aren't you giving me any reaction? I worked so hard.'

However, Feng Guichun... fell into deep sleep.

Chapter 366: It Would Be Better Not To Meet

Ma Houde didn't know who Wang Yuechuan was looking for.

He had been watching the surveillance footage of the hospital for almost two hours without missing anything on the screen.

'Why would I waste two hours here together with this guy?' Ma Houde thought.

'As time went by, it would be more and more difficult to find Zhao Ru. So, what if I just leave him alone?'

Just as Ma Houde was prepared to speak, Wang Yuechuan found something in the video. He switched the video into the main screen and enlarged the picture step by step.

Ma Houde also noticed that the profile of a man in the video. He was about thirty years old.

As for the characteristics... It might be, wearing a pair of glasses?

"Is this what you are looking for?"

Ma Houde frowned when he saw Wang Yuechuan watching the screen without moving, "Is this the man who help Zhao Ru escape from the hospital? Do you... know this person?"

"Cao Yu, this is the name he last used," Wang Yuechuan said abruptly.

"What? Name he last used?" Officer Ma was confused.

Wang Yuechuan nodded and continued, "He has many nicknames and nobody knows his real name. 'Cao Yu' was the name he used recently."

"You said... he is a scumbag?" Ma Houde frowned. He remembered clearly that Wang Yuechuan had said this word---not long before.

Wang Yuechuan glanced at Ma Houde as if deep in thought. A

while later, he said slowly, "I found out about this guy by accident. There was a serial murder case in the provincial capital city a year ago. Do you remember?"

"Eh... give me a second." Ma Houde tried to recall the memory, "That's it. Was it the sensational murder case? The murderer was really cruel. It was reported on the front-page of all newspapers. But, the killer has been arrested. And the provincial police station organized a seminar where almost every police station assigned a representative to attend this seminar. Oh, I remember... I saw you at that time!"

Ma Houde remembered every detail that happened a year ago thanks to Wang Yuechuan's reminder---He remembered the reason why he disliked Wang Yuechuan ever since meeting him.

Officer Ma had seen this guy in the seminar a year ago.

"So you are the person who solved the crime!" Ma Houde patted his head.

He also remembered that this arrogant man had made a statement in that seminar. He was as prideful as before.

"Yes, you are correct." Wang Yuechuan nodded, "Although the crime was solved and the killer was also caught, but there were some details not revealed to the public. That was the matter of this person."

Wang Yuechuan pointed at the man's face on the screen: Cao Yu.

"Tell me the truth... Why should he be related to Zhao Ru?" Officer Ma said seriously.

Wang Yuechuan explained, "One year ago, I found the criminal a bit strange when I arrested him. He was carrying some kind of material. The material was taken away when he was going to be scheduled for execution. Then, he became agitated and even crazy."

Wang Yuechuan shook his head, "But I bet you didn't imagine

that the material had vanish... It disappeared in the evidence room without a reason. Nobody knows how it was taken away. Luckily, one surveillance camera captured a profile of a man."

"Was that Cao Yu?" Ma Houde was shocked, "What is his real identity? Why could he remove the evidence from the police station?"

"I don't know, and no one knows, I guess." Wang Yuechuan took a deep breath, "Of course, he won't be there without a reason."

Ma Houde stopped him, "Hold on, how do you know Cao Yu has a connection with Zhao Ru?"

Wang Yuechuan squinted and said, "Because the necklaces they are wearing are similar. And when the necklaces were taken away, their reactions were similar. Zhao Ru was agitated and even crazy once the necklace was taken away."

"But... what does it mean?" Ma Houde was still confused.

Wang Yuechuan explained, "Actually, excluding this case and Zhao Ru's case, there were another two homicide cases happening somewhere within one year. There were four murders in total. These murderers had nothing in common and they even didn't know each other. We have investigated the social network of them all, but..."

"They all have the necklaces..." Ma Houde was shocked, "Really?"

Wang Yuechuan nodded, "Accurately speaking, they all have the similar... maybe the same necklace. The necklace vanished from the evidence room secretly the last three times."

Ma Houde thought for a while, and said, "Perhaps this was not a coincidence... if Cao Yu has been involved in so many murders... it might be to create a conspiracy behind these murders, although we don't know his real purpose... I think you are right."

Ma Houde took a deep breath while looking at Wang Yuechuan. Then he said, "What a scumbag! Wang, I will take all my efforts to

assist you. I swear that I'll find him out as long as he is still in this city!"

Wang Yuechuan nodded slightly, added, "Officer Ma, please don't tell others."

Ma Houde paused but responded quickly, "I understand... this guy can take evidence away from the police station, maybe he knows a great deal about us. I will be careful."

Wang Yuechuan stretched out his hands while saying, "I hope you are trustworthy."

But Officer Ma didn't shake his hands immediately and said in a stable voice, "I have no interest in making friends with you. But anyway, I'll be careful in my work. I cannot stand the tricks played by such a scumbag."

The most important thing was that they must find Zhao Ru.

...

...

Tai Yinzi found that the old man's life was boring enough... That was the potential customer he found.

Although the life should be routine here for a criminal, but a criminal should have some hobbies during his free time.

No matter if it was playing cards or watching others play basketball on the grounds, but the old man was only sewing and mending clothes alone.

His sewing skill was pretty good...

The club's chosen... strongest.... and also the newest member of the Black Soul Envoys had been staying in this prison for almost two days but felt it an unlucky place.

He could clearly feel the strong wish of Feng Guichun being eager to see his daughter. But this old man had a stronger restraint than his desire.

He sat in front of Feng Guichun while watching him sew step by step... They were not allowed to hold weapons in this prison, so Feng Guichun was staying at the cabin where criminals worked.

"Hey, man!"

Tai Yinzi saw Zhou Xiaokun walking toward Feng Guichun in a hurried pace when he was planning to persuade Feng Guichun with his voice.

"What's wrong?" Feng Guichun stopped working.

"I got some news." Zhou Xiaokun said, "Do you remember I told you my brother got some information about your daughter last time? My brother sent a letter to me today, I think he may have gotten some more details!"

Feng Guichun seemed frozen. But he held his breath and then tied a knot of the thread. Then, he put down the needle and took a deep breath, "Then... let's read the letter."

——To Brother Xiaokun

Zhou Xiaokun read the letter word by word while keeping track of Feng Guichun's expression. He stopped reading halfway.

Old Feng frowned, "Why do you stop?"

"Fine..." Zhou Xiaokun took a deep breath and continued, "I have contacted Feng Guichun's daughter yesterday and I have met her. The girl is beautiful and polite. But she's unwilling to talk about her father and said that..."

Zhou Xiaokun stopped again here. He glanced at Old Feng and went on in a low voice, "She said she was well and she didn't want to recall the past. Meeting will be a torture, so..."

"So what?" Old Feng held Zhou Xiaokun's arm tightly.

"So...it would be better not to meet."

The old man loosened his hand.

He turned his back hopelessly. He said nothing. After a long silence, he began to work again.

It seemed that he could forget the troubles and feel better by keeping busy and working.

"Brother..."

Zhou Xiaokun patted Old Feng's shoulder slightly.

But Old Feng suddenly covered his eyes and started crying like that.

His shoulder twitched.

"She is unwilling to see me again..."

...

...

Old Feng was watching the iron window with an absent mind.

He heard the voice again.

"Come on... come on..."

The voice faded sometimes and would get close sometimes, which made Old Feng distracted.

"Come on... let your daughter see you... let her call you 'father'."

The voice was magical and stopped Old Feng from seeing the ward and the iron window.

He could only see a door... a door which was opened to him a long time ago.

"Welcome, my customer, what can we do for you?"

Chapter 367: Cost Saving

Old Feng hesitated but he still came to see the club's owner.

Miss. Maid pulled out a chair and he sat down anxiously.

"Is... this a dream?" Old Feng said subconsciously.

Luo Qiu waved his hand to ask You Ye to avoid. Then he said, "You can regard it as a dream, a real dream. Of course, it's all up to you whether it can come true or not."

Old Feng raised his head. He looked around the club's lobby from the left side to the right side. Realizing there were many strange decorations, he finally looked at the mysterious man in front of him.

He showed a forced smile and said, "I believe in karma since a long time ago. Now I',m certain I'm correct upon coming here."

"Why?" Luo Qiu wondered that what he was thinking as a person whose whole life will be spent in prison.

Old Feng sighed, "Thirty-five years ago... I made a big mistake when I was young. But I didn't have the courage to face it and chose to escape. I thought I could... I ran away and hid for a short period."

Old Feng showed a happy smile, "At that time, I lived relying on my skills and got married to a pretty girl. And a baby was going to come to my family."

But he shook his head, "I thought I was lucky but I knew I needed to be punished for my crimes. The punishment will merely come earlier or later."

"Oh." Luo Qiu nodded, "Do you think it is retribution that your wife died in childbirth?"

Old Feng smiled bitterly.

He was not going to talk about this but implored, "I couldn't pay

back for my mistake. I deserved to spend the rest of life in prison. I am much more grateful for being alive."

Old Feng sighed with his head lowered down. He said clearly, "What should I do to regain the things I lost?"

"Do you just want to see your daughter again?" Luo Qiu asked gently.

"I don't expect her forgiveness, this is what I deserve." Old Feng raised his head. He looked older than he was with a balding head. "It's enough to see her once. It is alright even to see her from a distance."

"If it is just one meeting..." Luo Qiu paused, and slide across the table. Several cards with wonderful designs appeared on the table, "You can pay with these."

Old Feng took the first card and asked, "Memory?"

He shook his head... Memories were the most valuable thing for a prisoner.

There was no love or career, and also happiness in the prison.

He was condemned to a life sentence so he couldn't have these anymore.

The choices were the memory of his daughter, of his wife... his own health, life, and doing good deeds.

"Doing good deeds?"

"Yes, doing good deeds. Just keep it up for one year."

Luo Qiu nodded, "Actually, I suggest you choose the shortest-time option of doing good deeds. Because it will be easier to complete. It'll be enough to meet a person... but..."

"What?" Feng Guichun got nervous... He knew the one who was making deal with him was not some kind savior.

"But, I don't suggest you to choose doing good deeds." Luo Qiu

said slowly, "As far as I know, some family members of the one who you killed are still alive."

Old Feng seemed unhappy. He smiled bitterly, "You mean, for the victim's family, it's a sin for every day I am still alive... right?"

"Yes..." Luo Qiu changed his sitting position, and said lightly, "To make it clear, people will forget something as time going by. But no one can make sure that they won't remember some day. For the one who hates you, there is a possibility that they will remember your crime someday. If they remember your crime in the year you chose. According to our contract, you will be counted as breaking your contract... If so, we can only replace doing good deeds with other things. I am afraid that it will be hard for you to accept it. Therefore, the last choice would be a bet."

"It looks like the best choice but is actually an impossible choice..." Old Feng shook his head and said gratefully, "Thank you for your kindly reminder."

Luo Qiu kept silent and responded, "It is nothing. I was just accused of something by someone lately... Well, it is just a self-examination."

Old Feng sighed, "I don't dare to make the gamble... Those years when I escaped was also a gamble for my life. Apparently, I lost completely. If I can see my daughter once again, I am willing to exchange it for my last six months of life, or even three years or five years. I wish..."

He took a deep breath, "If I can see her wedding... even if I am in just a corner, I would be satisfied. I want to see her indulging in happiness. If so, I... will have no more worries."

"Is five years ok?"

"Ok!" Old Feng nodded his head heavily.

"Thanks for your coming, my customer."

Luo Qiu stood up and gave Old Feng the best etiquette.

...

With a wave of hands, Old Feng vanished from the club.

The sheep skin scroll signed just now was rolling automatically in the air and then fell on Luo Qiu's hand.

He delivered it to You Ye.

Miss. Maid didn't say anything, but Tai Yinzi was unable to wait. He said ahead of You Ye, "Congratulations to Master for the new deal. I just didn't expect that Feng Guichun's request to be so simple."

"It is really simple." Luo Qiu smiled.

Tai Yinzi added, "Master, I will find a better potential customer next time! This is just a beginning! Well, I'm going to work now."

Luo Qiu asked suddenly, "Tai Yinzi, what are you going to do?"

Tai Yinzi said reasonably, "I am going to save your cost and get Feng Guichun out of the prison. I can possess in the jailer's body and set free Feng Guichun."

"Well, you are really an straightforward person."

"That's nothing, I am thinking for my Master." Tai Yinzi looked modest.

But Luo Qiu transferred the remark, "But, I want to do it in another way."

"Please tell me your plan, master, I'll follow your instructions to the letter!"

Boss Luo smiled, "The plan is to get Feng Guichun out and... you stay in the prison instead of him."

"What??"

Tai Yinzi... Tai Yinzi couldn't close his mouth.

...

...

Tai Yinzi opened his mouth and then shut it mechanically. The food inside his mouth was too unsavory for him... although the other prisoners said the dishes were pretty nice.

"Dude, what's the matter? Don't you like the dishes?" Zhou Xiaokun got close to him and asked him in a low voice.

Tai Yinzi glanced at him... He knew that Zhou Xiaokun and the others regarded him as Old Feng.

He was possessed in Old Feng's body and sat in the canteen.

"Nothing, I am just a little..." Tai Yinzi sighed and started staring at the light on the ceiling. He continued, "I was a little upset."

"Understood, dude, take it easy."

Zhou Xiaokun patted his shoulder and said nothing next.

Tai Yinzi glanced at Zhou Xiaokun.

'What the hell would you understand!!!'

Chapter 368: Wedding Dress

"Meimei, today I..."

"Xiao Man, I have some business and need to leave early."

"But we have an appointment..."

"My mother came to pick me up. Bye..."

"Oh... fine."

During her childhood, when she was still called 'Feng Xiaman', her hands grasped the schoolbag straps with her head lowered. She told herself, "Those who can be picked up by their parents are so blissful."

She used to have equivalent treatment one month ago.

The big and rough hands always held her small hands tightly.

Feng Xiaman walked through the crowd quickly; however, some sounds came to her ears.

"Don't talk to her tomorrow, got it?" one parent of another child said.

"If she wants to play with you, you should say you're not free, ok? if she insists, then tell the teacher!" another parent said to his own child.

There were also some similar but more unpleasant words.

"Don't play with the child of a murderer. You're good, baby, and she's bad."

Something like this.

She could only cover her ears and ran over the corner... escaping each unfriendly saying and treatment.

...

"Xiaman, Xiaman? Xiaman?"

"Oh, what's wrong?"

Tao Xiaman was stunned, turning to look at her fiancé, who was her university classmate in L.A. they met, knew each other, fell in love; now, they were about to step into marriage.

"The designer is asking you a question." Her fiancé Zhou Zihao smiled, "She is asking you what do you think of this style of dress?"

"Oh... sorry, my mind wandered just now." Tao Xiaman looked at the designer apologetically.

The famous designer over 30 smiled, "That's alright, a girl before marriage finds it easier for her mind to wander. I was the same when I got married a few years back. And at this point, Mr. Zhou, you should coax your fiancée."

Zhou Zihao laughed, watching his fiancée with happiness and satisfaction.

The designer added, "Ms. Tao, according to your requirements, I can give you 3 design sketches of the dress. What do you think of these?"

Tao Xiaman looked back at the design drawing, and suddenly remembered she had lost her train of thought in the second one.

"Well... let me think it over." Tao Xiaman hesitated and said.

The designer replied, "Don't you like this kind of wedding dress mixed both western style and Chinese tradition?"

"Yes..." Tao Xiaman waved her hands, "It's really beautiful, but I think I should have time to consider."

"Well..." the designer smiled, "Yeah, it's a key decision for your life and marriage, you should think it over. Then, let me edit it slightly. Is that OK?"

"Yeah, thank you." Tao Xiaman nodded.

Zhou Zihao held Tao Xiaman's hand and walked out of this store, towards the parking lot. He asked, "Why? Are you feeling bad? You

don't look good."

Tao Xiaman shook her head, "Probably due to the time difference."

"Yeah, then get more rest." Zhou Zihao didn't think too much about it... He didn't sleep well either.

Although they had been back for more than one week.

Zhou Zihao said as opening the car door for Tao Xiaman, "Anyway, I thought you should be fond of such traditional formal dresses."

"Why do you say this?" Tao Xiaman asked curiously.

Zhou Zihao smiled, "Do you remember last Christmas? You gazed at one of the dresses in a dress store and held still there. I thought you like traditional Chinese style, so my friends introduced me to this designer and I told her to design a Chinese-style one. I thought it might be a surprise to you, but..."

Tao Xiaman felt touched and patted Zhou Zihao's hand, "No, I don't. I like the Chinese style, but..."

"But what?"

"It's hard for a girl to meet a Chinese-style wedding dress with phoenix pattern that she likes." Tao Xiaman shook her head, "I don't want to make do with it..."

"Yeah... that makes sense." Zhou Zihao nodded, "Well, we still have time to look for another one. Oh, by the way, when will your parents be back?"

"Next week."

The car left slowly.

The old man dared not speak. Only when the car left did he come out. He had never felt so excited these years.

The happiness and restraint of looking at Xiaman also made him

suffer.

Yet, Old Feng glanced at this dress shop. This was still a good result for him.

Because his daughter would get married.

To a father, nothing would be better than hearing this.

...

Old Feng soon wore his cap and mask and left this place.

He didn't know how he left that tall wall.

He only regained his senses when he was standing on the street.

Furthermore, what he wore were not prison grab, but a simple suit with some money in the pocket.

Then, he witnessed the girl had been led from the car and walked into the dress shop... Old Feng was sure that she was his daughter.

Old Feng even found a note with an address from his pocket---it was Tao Xiaman's address.

He got the information from the staff of that welfare institution, that the adoptor's family name was Tao.

Old Feng felt he met the most mysterious issue in the world... Even if it was a dream, he was happy to be immersed in it.

And didn't want to wake up.

Maybe he should cherish the time, and head to Tao Xiaman's address to watch his grown-up daughter one more time.

However, after a long consideration, he decided to go back to his home.

That old house.

...

...

In the evening, Zhou Zihao calmed down after chatting on the

phone with Tao Xiaman.

He loved this girl, more than everything else.

He tried to provide her with the best he could give.

The wedding banquet here was for treating the families and friends of both side; and after marriage, they planned to immigrate abroad.

Zhou Zihao couldn't fall asleep, because of the time difference and the matter that happened this morning.

He searched online to look for wedding dress and shops in the city.

Nevertheless, he failed to get what he wanted after half an hour.

So Zhou Zihao tried to ask questions, 'Where can I find an experienced and skillful worker for designing traditional Chinese dresses?'

He didn't expect to get the answer right away.

Zhou Zihao laughed, turning off the lamp light and decided to sleep... but unexpectedly the notification for the question rang.

Zhou Zihao quickly turned it on and checked.

A user named LQ wrote a paragraph, "I heard, a dozen years ago, there was a good tailor who provided customized dress-making services. He lived at No.33, the second alley of Jihua Road. But I don't know if he is still living there. You can go check."

"A dozen years ago?" Zhou Zihao gave a start, thinking; he decided to get up and copy down this address.

...

When he woke up the next day, Zhou Zihao massaged his eyes. He slept well, so was energetic today.

He looked at the note, thinking for a while, and making a phone call---to his fiancée.

"Hey, Xiaman, I'll go for a dinner with my classmates, so I cannot go with you this afternoon." Zhou Zihao apologized, "They asked me to go last night. It was too late, so I didn't tell you yesterday."

"Oh, that's ok. You should go see your classmates after so many years. And I have to hurry to finish a report. So, take care when you're driving. The road situation is quite different from L.A.'s."

Zhou Zihao made some small talk with her, then tidied himself and went out of the door.

The destination showed, 'No.33, the second alley of Jihua Road.'

Chapter 369: Shadow

The shop sign had disappeared.

When Old Feng came back to this old house, he didn't see the shop sign.

He used to be a tailor in his own house. Part of his living room would be used as a place to sew.

Plus there were many products placed there, so there weas not much space for him to rest.

Nevertheless, it was spacious enough for Old Feng and his daughter to play around.

Old Feng found the key at the gap of the iron door... when he touched it, he felt jubilant.

But it was soon watered down by melancholy.

The key and the lock hadn't been changed---but nobody was living there.

And nobody came to visit... not even Xiaman.

Old Feng sat on the old-fashioned sofa, looking around the house, and those clothes hanging on the coat hanger.

They looked like a thick growth of grass.

Old Feng suddenly laughed.

He thought of something that happened during Xiaman's childhood.

He was reminded that his daughter always hid behind those clothes. He didn't know when and where she would jump out and pounce on him.

The daughter would always sit on her father's shoulder, walking through every corner of this small house.

And there would be small scratches left at the corridor.

He left one scratch every half a year.

Old Feng squatted here and touched these scratches, which recorded the procedure of Xiaman's growth.

Old Feng didn't turn on the light all night.

He wondered why there was still electricity and water service provided after so many years. Murky water with the metallic taste of rust came out form the tap after he turned it on.

Old Feng didn't want others to know that he came back here...

When he came back, he met some old acquaintance nearby, but... they did not seem to recognize him. Maybe they didn't expect that Old Feng would show up in this place.

But it was good to be careful.

Old Feng decided to clean everything in the house.

He couldn't give up all his tools for tailoring.

Everything here was a record of his life and history.

Old Feng fell asleep after his hard work till midnight... This was the best sleep in the recent 10 years.

When the sun shone, Old Feng was reluctant to get up.

Even though he got used to being punctual.

He suddenly found it was almost 10 o'clock in the morning.

It was terrible... but at this point, somebody knocked at the door.

It surprised him... who's coming?

Nobody should know he came back.

Old Feng knew that he was set free because of that shop, but he didn't know about the matters in the prison.

Maybe the police officers came to catch him and send him back!

He was not sure if the shop could protect him throughout his remaining life. So, Old Feng grabbed a pair of scissors and got close

to the door.

The knocking sound became louder with a man speaking, "Excuse me, anyone here? Anyone here?"

Old Feng watched him through the peephole, 'Why is he here?'

Old Feng didn't expect his daughter's fiancé to come here!

"Excuse me, anybody here?"

Old Feng gritted his teeth. He knew not making a sound was the right decision... but in the end, he couldn't remain silent.

He wanted to know this man... what kind of man did his daughter choose.

He was eager to know how he behaved.

"Who's that?" Old Feng answered across the door.

He was aware that he might be in danger if he opened his mouth.

But his instinct as a father ordered him to do this.

"Good! Someone's there!" Zhou Zihao smiled, "I thought nobody's living here, but there is!"

"What's the matter?"

Zhou Zihao said to this door, "Are you the tailor here? I heard there is an experienced tailor living here. I'm getting married and am seeking for a good tailor to make a wedding dress for my fiancée!"

"How did you know about this place?"

"I got it on the Internet." Zhou Zihao didn't hide it, "Actually it's a remote place without a sign. If nobody mentioned it on Internet, I wouldn't know about this shop."

On the Internet?

Weird... Old Feng frowned and sensed something.

However, he opened the door finally and watched the young man

outside the door, saying indifferently, "Come in and we can have a talk."

"Fine!"

Zhou Zihao came in with a slight hint of expectation... he saw many different styles of Chinese clothes.

And an old sewing machine on the workbench, some rulers, needles and lines, scissors...

Zhou Zihao grew up in a foreign country, so he seldom saw these old kinds of stuff.

"What's your name?" Zhou Zihao asked with a polite tone.

"I..." Old Feng looked at Zhou Zihao as sitting down, "I'm Mr. Zhou."

He apologized in his heart and used the surname of one of his friends in jail.

"Hi, Mr. Zhou." Zhou Zihao gaped, then smiled, "I didn't expect our surnames are the same! I'm Zhou Zihao."

"Zihao, Zihao, Zhou Zihao." Old Feng repeated his name several times, and nodded, "Well, it's a good name. And you look good."

Zhou Zihao sensed his different gaze... he thought old tailors may be all weird.

"You want me to make a wedding dress for your fiancée, right?" Old Fend gazed at Zhou Zihao.

Zhou Zihao nodded, "Yes! My fiancée likes Chinese-styled wedding dresses very much, but many other designers cannot give us a satisfactory style. So I think maybe some experienced tailors can make a nice and suitable one."

"Why didn't you bring your fiancée here?"

Zhou Zihao said shyly, "I wanted to give her a surprise; therefore, I came secretly. I'm afraid that she'll get mad."

Old Fend looked at Zhou Zihao and nodded, "Hum, you're good."

Zhou Zihao seemed to find it a familiar gaze... just like the first time he met his fiancee's parents.

"By the way... do you have some clothing pictures?"

Zhou Zihao explained, "I want to take some back to my fiancée, and ask if she likes some of them... Do you have some?"

"Wait for me here." Old Fend nodded, walking to the workbench.

He didn't take out the old pictures; instead, he sat down, and draw something on the paper.

Soon after, Old Feng took them to Zhou Zihao, "It's like this, take it back to your fiancée. If she likes, then you can come back to me."

"Good idea." Zhou Zihao glanced at it, but didn't find it to be any special... or maybe he just didn't know about design.

"However, I have a requirement." Old Feng said slowly, "You have to come here by yourself, if you want me to make the dress, and don't tell my address to any others."

"..." Zhou Zihao gaped, "Sir, but you cannot make sure my fiancée will like this."

Old Feng deeply looked at Zhou Zihao, "She will."

"Let her see it first." Zhou Zihao didn't agree with him for now.

While Old Feng said, "Remember, come to me alone and don't tell anyone else. Or, you will no longer find me."

Zhou Zihao didn't mention his words.

'Old tailors are so eccentric.'

...

...

When it came to September, this city turned sunny.

Those rainy and typhoon days had gone.

It was a good weather for those freshmen in university.

A girl came out of the station with a large bag. She saw many young people standing there, they might be seniors that were helping new students.

But she didn't go ask them; rather, she walked to the third exit and stood there, waiting for someone.

She looked around, and gaze focused on one guy. Her lips moved slightly, showing a surprising look.

It was not the person she had made an appointment with; it was an acquaintance that was unexpected.

He was a young customer that came to her holiday house for summer vacation.

At the third exit, Lui Yiyun saw Luo Qiu.

She suddenly thought of the blue star flower he sent her.

Chapter 370: Uncommon

However, when Luo Qiu approached her, the first reaction of the girl was just a nod.

Subconsciously, she treated Mr. Luo with respect.

"Do you need help?"

Luo Qiu sized her up. It was hard for a girl to come to a strange city, carrying a heavy bag and a luggage box.

"No need, no need. I can do it." Lui Yiyun waved her hand.

Luo Qiu didn't insist, and nodded, "Let me take you to the university. And you need to remember the bus time and routes. It'll be more convenient for you to travel."

The girl nodded... Luo Qiu did things directly.

She followed him. Luo Qiu only slowed down when he found she couldn't catch up to him.

When the bus arrived, the girl said, "Where's Sister Ren? I thought she would be here to pick me up."

"Well, I thought so." Luo Qiu shook his head, "She said she's busy in solving some temporary issues. You should know her job"

Lui Yiyun was stunned for a moment and smiled, "That is Sister Ren's style. There were a few time while I was chatting with her, she would suddenly say she had to go out for something."

"You keep in touch with each other?" Luo Qiu suddenly asked.

Lui Yiyun told him the truth, "Yeah... Sister Ren is a kind lady."

Luo Qiu looked up to the blue sky and the cloud, saying, "How are you doing recently?"

Lui Yiyun hesitated, and took a glance at the passengers, then lowered her head and said, "I'm okay... I can control myself."

"It's a good city with a slow pace of life." Luo Qiu looked outside,

"Except the weird weather."

Lui Yiyun smiled, "I can even get used to the weird weather by the seaside."

Luo Qiu nodded. He could feel the scent of the sea from the girl, which could calm him down and make him feel comfortable.

"By the way, what's your major?"

"Medical college, Pharmacy."

"You want to be a doctor?"

"Yes."

After several questions and answers, the bus had arrived at the terminal. Then, the next bus came to its destination too. They reached the university where the girl would register... which was also Luo Qiu's old school.

When they got off the bus and took out their luggage, the girl looked slightly excited.

She headed up to see the sign on the entrance, which was much taller than her and the holiday house, while listening to Luo Qiu at the back.

"Your life begins now, nobody knows what you will meet. You may see some odd things, but don't be surprised, because you're an odd being too... Finally, welcome to this city."

The girl suddenly turned back, but didn't find Luo Qiu. It was as if he vanished into thin air.

Lui Yiyun put down her bag, then opened her arms and deeply breathed. The air was not as clean as the seaside, but she sensed a different feeling.

Maybe this would be where her new life started.

Lui Yiyun smiled, lifting up the bag and pulled the luggage; then she suddenly thought that Luo Qiu was also studying in this

university.

But she didn't ask Luo Qiu the details of his university life.

Then she realized that she had been too nervous the whole way...

"Never mind, we may meet again someday..." Lui Yiyun thought for a while, shaking her head and bracing herself up.

She raised her bag, walking in by herself.

It was a good feeling for her.

"Huh? Where's the check-in office?"

...

...

The revolving restaurants around were good a place for lovers... Of course they were expensive but romantic.

And it was easy to gain access to the night scene of this city.

"We can cook in your home or mine, you know I don't like to waste money."

"We can have a taste, it doesn't mean you don't cook well. But sometimes we need a feeling of freshness, don't we?" Zhou Zihao smiled, "And it's not that expensive, it's from a group purchase."

Tao Xiaman rolled her eyes. She didn't blame her fiancé, but understood that their money was hard earned. "Fine, what can we eat from the group purchase deal?"

"Let's talk about it later." Zhou Zihao took out an iPad from his bag, "Let me show you something."

Tao Xiaman was stunned for a moment, but received the iPad and looked at the photos, "Is this... a phoenix-pattern dress?"

"So it is called a phoenix-pattern dress? I didn't even know its name. Do you like it?" Zhou Zihao walked to her back and bent down.

Tao Xiaman looked at all the 4 pages. These were not pictures from a computer but sketches that were photographed.

They were not beautiful and delicate, but she didn't know why, they seem attractive to her.

Something caught her attention.

A familiar sense that was hard to be described hit her heart.

"It's a special and rare color, I like it." Tao Xiamao nodded subconsciously, "Zihao, where did you find it?"

'Really like it?'

Zhou Zihao couldn't help thinking of that eccentric old man... he felt he was very confident, but didn't expect the pictures would attract his fiancée so deeply.

He also recalled of the words from that old tailor; then he said, "A friend introduced an old and experienced tailor. Would you like to have a try?"

Tao Xiaman thought for a while, "Yes, I'd like to."

Zhou Zihao patted his hands, and was delighted like a child, "I'll go to him tomorrow. By the way, shouldn't we have dinner first?"

Tao Xiaman's heart was filled with a sweet feeling, "Well, OK."

...

The next day, Zhou Zihao came to Old Feng's house... he didn't find anybody here while going upstairs.

Maybe only this old tailor was still living in this five-storied, old-fashioned house.

This time, he got a response sooner... Zhou Zihao even thought that this old man was waiting for him.

"Mr. Zhou, you're really miraculous! My fiancée was totally attracted by your sketches. I know her character, she really likes it! Zhou Zihao said loud with admiration, "Can you..."

"I can make it for you." Old Fend nodded, and added straightly, "But, you need to pay a deposit."

Zhou Zihao nodded, "Don't worry about the price. But should my fiancée come here next time? It needs to be customized, right?"

But Mr. Zhou shook his head, "I won't measure the sizes of my customers. But I can go to your home. Give me your address and we can make an appointment. And remember, don't reveal my address. It's my rule."

'Fine.'

'Anyway, my fiancée likes it.'

Zhou Zihao agreed... because in his mind, talented people tended to be eccentric.

...

Seeing Zhou Zihao drove off, Old Feng moved his gaze away.

He seldom laughed, but now, a slight hint of smile hung on his face. Maybe it was because he felt that this man was good.

"Tomorrow..."

Old Feng took a deep breath and thought he needed to tidy all the tailoring tools. He sensed new energy would come out of his body.

He never had such feeling in this recent dozen years.

Chapter 371: Don’t Know Each Other

Old Feng remembered that the city hadn't been developed the last time he took the lift. During those times, lifts were less advanced and not as quiet.

It spent some time to reach the 27th floor.

Old Feng looked at the steel plates in the lift. It was smooth enough for seeing one's figure on it, like a mirror.

He tidied himself many times before leaving his home, but he still tried to check if something didn't look good through the steel plate surface.

He had never been so nervous.

When the lift arrived at the floor, Old Feng breathed deeply, putting on a mask and adjusted his glasses, before walking to a door and pressing the doorbell.

It was as if he could hear his heartbeat. He clenched his hands, then loosened them, repeating the actions. Soon, his hands turned wet.

He felt time passed slowly---until the moment the door was opened.

"Oh, Mr. Zhou, come in please!" Zhou Zihao opened the door, "Why are you wearing a mask?"

Old Feng said in a hoarse voice, "I got cold. But don't worry."

"Zihao, is Mr. Zhou coming?" Tao Xiaman came to Zhou Zihao, looking at the old tailor with a smile; she tilted her head, feeling something that was hard to express.

"Come in and take a seat." Zhou Zihao said.

Tao Xiaman nodded, "Mr. Zhou, take a seat, let me pour a cup of tea for you."

"No, thanks." Old Fend said quietly, "I've got sour throat, I cannot drink today... I'm just here take measurements."

Tao Xiaman didn't say anything but lead him to the living room. Zhou Zihao pushed her from the back, "It's very hard to find this experienced tailor, Xiaman, be nice."

Tao Xiaman rolled her eyes.

She looked back to this old tailor and found he was gazing at herself. When they saw each other, the tailor moved his gaze away and started to prepare the tools.

"I've not seen these old tools for many years." Tao Xiaman was dragged back to her memory.

"They sure have an antiqued feel." Zhou Zihao smiled, "There are many other tools in his house. I was attracted by them. They're all so old-fashioned."

"Really? I want to go have a look if it's OK." Tao Xiaman showed a smile.

But Old Feng coughed at this point, he came to them with a measuring tape, "Let's get started. Turn around, the height first."

Tao Xiaman turned around.

Old Feng squatted down, and put down one side of the tape. He was very careful, gazing at the scale of it, and focusing on the number.

He wrote down each number with strength.

"Open your arms, now let me measure the length of sleeves."

Tao Xiaman followed his order, and looked at her fiancé, "You know, it's a great feeling... Oh, Mr. Zhou, is there enough time to make a phoenix-pattern dress before the wedding?"

"Don't worry, you can get the dress."

"Thank you." Tao Xiaman said with appreciation... She was

aware of the time needed to make a phoenix-pattern dress.

In Tao Xiaman's view, his answer was like a declaration instead of a promise.

It was a weird feeling, but she thought she had felt that before.

Soon after.

"I've got all the measurements, and will make it as soon as possible. Then, I will bring it to you for a try and see if there are some places that need to be amended." Old Fend said while turning around and gathering his tools.

Watching his back, Tao Xiaman asked, "Mr. Zhou... have we met somewhere?"

Old Feng's hands turned stiff suddenly, but became natural once again soon.

"Probably, because it's common to meet someone in this small city."

"Right." Tao Xiaman smiled and realized she asked a stupid question.

But another one was blurted out from her mouth... "Mr. Zhou, how many years have you been a tailor?"

"Dozens of years."

"Do you know a tailor, his surname is Feng and specializes in making cheongsams?" Tao Xiaman paused, "It's been years."

"No, I don't." Old Fend didn't look back, "Since you know another old tailor, then why did you come to me?"

Tao Xiaman hurried to wave her hands, "Sir, I didn't mean that. I'm just ask... I like your sketch very much, really! Really! Besides, I thought that Mr. Feng might have given up tailoring work long ago."

"I'll make it soon and notify you in advance."

Old Feng left with his toolbox and didn't look back.

He seemed to feel that the way back was extremely long, just like when he came.

...

"What's wrong? Feeling uncomfortable?"

Watching Xiaman overlooking the whole city, Zhou Zihao gave her a hug from behind.

"Nothing, just thinking about something." Tao Xiaman said softly.

"Is it about that Mr. Zhou?"

"Probably... I don't know if the product will be good."

"Are you nervous before the wedding, as the former designer said?" Zhou Zihao held Tao Xiaman's shoulder, "You look distracted these days."

"You are the one that's distracted." Tao Xiaman shook her head, suddenly saying, "Zihao... If I hid something from you, what will you think of it?"

"Well..." Zhou Zihao thought for a while, "Oh, what else are you hiding from me? What's that? You even told me you're taken in and brought up by Uncle Tao."

"But you don't know matters before that."

"I'm not interested in that." Zhou Zihao gave her such an answer, "Or I can say, that I'm not interested in what you didn't tell me. Because..."

He turned Tao Xiaman back, saying softly, "I know I like the Xiaman who is standing before me. That's it."

"Sugared words." Tao Xiaman shook her head, lowered it and leaned it against his chest, "Give me some time..."

...

...

"Oh, he's quite good at making clothes."

The servant girl was now going around and looking at the clothes in the tailor's old house.

Luo Qiu knew You Ye's character... she was very particular about food. In her long life, she saw too many perfect things; therefore, not many objects would meet her eye as time passed.

"Then have a try." Boss Luo suddenly said.

The servant girl turned around and looked at her master curiously.

Luo Qiu smiled, "It's OK, he won't be back soon."

You Ye picked up a pure white CheongSam.

Luo Qiu started to turn over everything here, those clothes, scripts, the scissors, sewing machine... and even those scratches at corner.

The club boss closed his eyes gradually.

He could hear the laughter from her childhood. He came to the wall, watching those photos on it.

It was probably Old Feng's habit, that stuck the photos of every customer which tried new clothes.

Those photos were yellowed but had also been wiped again... Actually the room looked very clean.

While watching them, Luo Qiu took one photo down.

He heard the pull of curtains. You Ye had finish changing... she must be very beautiful.

However, Boss Luo didn't turn back; he just looked at the photo in his hand, showing a gentle smile.

"Master, what's this?" The servant girl found the lady in the photo had a nice smile.

She was a gentle lady.

"It's my mum."

Luo Qiu softly explained, "She's been here before. This is the dress she wore when she married my father. There are still old photos of them in my old house... It turns out she came here to customize the wedding dress."

Chapter 372: Dicey Prison

The servant girl was aware of the identity and past of the boss.

She thought her boss would take away these old photos. However, not long later, the boss stuck them back onto the wall.

He smiled, raising his hand and giving it a wipe. Then, the photos looked like it had never been moved.

Luo Qiu merely took out his cellphone and snapped a photo.

He then looked at You Ye, "If this wall is missing a photo, it won't look as good. Isn't that right?"

The servant girl nodded.

Luo Qiu pulled her to the window. He withdrew the curtain slightly and let the sunshine into the room. "Come here, let me take a photo of you."

You Ye was surprised but she still obeyed his order because she was used to following her master's orders. She chose a good place to stand still, so that the lighting would be the best.

The boss didn't take the photos with his cellphone. With a spin of his hand, a peach-colored wooden box soon appeared in his hand.

It turned out it was an item taken out from the club's warehouse.

When the wooden box was opened, there was a camera in it.

The boss lowered his head, bending down his waist to gaze at the camera lens, "Well, even if you don't have a Chinese hairstyle, but you really look perfect in all kinds of clothes. OK, raise your chin."

Time passed among the shutter sounds.

...

When Old Feng pulled open the iron gate, time seemed to continue moving again.

Old Feng took a glance at the door gap. He had hidden a tree leaf

under the door... and it was still there.

It was at the level of his ankle.

Old Feng heaved a sigh of relief, pulling out the leaf and opening the door before walking in. He looked around the old house.

He hesitated, but didn't find anything wrong. Old Feng shook his head, thinking that he was too paranoid.

Old Feng shut the door quickly, putting down his tool case. He didn't start his work immediately, but took out the notebook with all the numbers of Xiaman's measurements.

Old Feng went to the corner with a pair of scissors, and measured Xiaman's height.

Old Feng carefully carved a new scratch on the wall.

It was much higher than all other scratches, but Old Feng felt satisfied.

He smiled when touched this new mark.

Because he never thought he could make another new mark someday... Old Feng felt that the mark was important---even more than even his life.

...

...

The escape of a prisoner was really a big trouble, not something a weak excuse could cover---especially those who were classified as top-dangerous prisoners.

The Radio and TV stations had issued a wanted order and a special task force had been established.

There were two more groups of policemen and Officer Ma's group gathered in the meeting room.

They were reporting the latest information.

"These two days, we have kept watch on every bus station, train

station, even the airport, but we didn't find any trace of the prisoner."

"And we checked all the illegal cars, but nobody saw her. Zhao Ru didn't leave behind any expense trails but we have had the bank block her accounts."

"No tip-off from citizens for now. and she didn't return to her former apartment."

"Officer Ma, could Zhao Ru have left this city already? She might be rescued by her peers and left this city. Do we need to apply for assistance from another city?"

"Yes." Ma Houde knocked at his pen, "I've informed the other cities, and they have started their movements. However, I don't think she has left this city for now."

"Officer Ma, do you think she's still in this city?" A cop asked with puzzlement, "She's on the wanted list, what's the purpose for her staying here?"

Ma Houde said seriously, "Do you remember what she took last time when she wanted to escape?"

"She took those information!"

Ma Houde nodded, "Right, she took the photos that were used to torment those cram school students. We assumed that she escaped to prevent the evidence from being disclosed. But why didn't she destroy those evidence; instead, she chose to take them away. Why?"

"Officer Ma, you mean, those students in her notebook are still her targets?" The police staff was shocked, "How dare she do that?"

"I've interrogated Zhao Ru... something is wrong with her mental health." The other policeman said, "We cannot analyze a criminal that has a twisted way of thinking."

Ma Houde nodded, "Right, I have the same opinion. It's hard to

find a person this way. We may need to check those students. Lin Feng, contact those students, and ask them if they have received any suspicious mail or letters... Pay attention to their mental conditions!"

Lin Feng nodded quickly.

He had to work hard to arrest the prisoner.

"Go to work!" Officer Ma clapped his hands, expelling all of them out of this meeting room.

He glanced at Wang Yuechuan, who was at the corner, saying indifferently, "Mr. Wang, we cannot tidy these at the moment."

"That's fine." Wang Yuechuan merely continued typing in his laptop and didn't turn around.

Ma Houde shrugged... The relationship between the two had never changed anyway.

When Ma Houde left the meeting room, his face suddenly changed.

Because Ren Ziling came...

Officer Ma trotted to her, "Oh my god, why are you here?"

"I came to visit you." Ren Ziling rolled her eyes and pushed the cake box to him, "Here to deliver afternoon tea for you guys. Why? You don't like it?"

"No no no, I appreciate that very much!" Ma Houde hurried to push her into his own office, "But there's an emergency case to handle, I have no time to play host to you!"

"Don't worry, go do your job." Ren Ziling squinted her eyes, "But you look so busy! All the people are out for work... Oh? There's still one sitting over there! Who is he? I never saw him before."

"There are many people that you have never seen." Ma Houde blocked the way and made a 'hush' gesture. "I know you came here due to the wanted list. But there's nothing to tell."

"Oh, I remembered. Wang Yuechuan, right?" But Ren Ziling patted her head.

Ma Houde was stunned, "Do you know him?"

"It looks like him and it turns out here he is." Ren Ziling shrugged, "I know him but he doesn't know me."

"Why do you say that?"

Ren Ziling rolled her eyes, "Everyone knows Wang Yuechuan because he solved an extraordinary murder case. But it's too far for me to go do an interview. He also looks handsome, so it is no wonder he got a little famous last year. Many girls are fond of him, but anyway, he's not as handsome as my boy!"

What was wrong with this woman's eyes and memory?

Ma Houde was about to say something, but Ren Ziling frowned, "Huh, he should be in the provincial department. Why did he appear here?"

Ma Houde actually wanted to explain something, but Wang Yuechuan opened his mouth.

"Officer Ma, who is she?"

This question made Officer Ma embarrassed.

How to explain it?

"She... is..." Officer Ma said, "A delivery girl! Yes! I bought some afternoon tea for the hard-working colleagues!"

Ren Ziling opened her eyes wide.

Wang Yuechuan frowned, "But all of them had gone out."

Ma Houde had to look at Ren Ziling with cold sweat, "I ordered the meal two hours ago, you're too late! DO you all not want to do business anymore? Are you late because you were staring at handsome boys?"

"Officer Ma. Yes, that's true. It's hard to move away when I saw a

handsome boy in the street. I am so sorry about that."

"No... Don't worry." Ma Houde coughed and felt his four limbs turn cold, "That's alright. Pay attention at next time."

"Well, can Officer Ma pay now?" Ren Ziling smiled, "It's 233 Yuan."

"What? 233? It's too expensive! How come?"

"Oh, Officer Ma. Our store uses original and healthy ingredients. Officer Ma, you are a regular customer, so I've already reduced 20% of the price."

Ma Houde... peeped at Wang Yuechuan that had a weird look, and had to fish out the wallet to pay.

"250 Yuan, keep the change!"

Ren Ziling pushed the box to Ma Houde, saying goodbye to him, "Thank you, Officer... Ma."

"Not at all..." Ma Houde was relieved seeing Ren Ziling turning her head and leave.

But Wang Yuechuan was still standing at the door. Ma Houde turned around, "Do you want some food?"

"No, thanks. I'm not hungry." Wang Yuechuan shook his head, and went in.

Officer Ma suddenly shuddered. He raised the box high and wanted to smash it to the ground... but stopped at once.

250 yuan.... He couldn't bear to waste it.

However, not long later, Officer Ma received Ren Ziling's message, 'I know where Zhao Ru is.'

...

...

A lump of black smoke flew into the club, and transformed into a human, it was Black Soul No. 18.

Black Soul No 18 looked around, but didn't find the boss.

He only saw You Ye who was cleaning the cup and a customer sitting in the corner.

"No. 18, are you looking for the master? He is not in," You Ye said calmly.

Black Soul No.18 nodded. "Ms. You Ye, here is the information of potential customers I found these days."

Black Soul No.18 fished out 3 pieces of information cards.

"You're still as efficient as before." You Ye nodded, "Put it down. I'll give them to the master later."

"Understood." Black Soul No. 18 nodded reverently, "Then I'll go seek new potential customers."

"Go ahead." The servant girl waved her hand.

Black Soul No. 18 didn't talk more, but just asked before leaving, "By the way, is that new Black Soul Envoy I met last time not here?"

"You're talking about Tai Yinzi." You Ye smiled faintly, "He's living well, don't worry about him."

Nobody would believe her words...

Black Soul No. 18 quivered and flew out of the club.

...

Tai Yinzi smacked the slipper in the prisoner's room.

"...an arrow flew out and was shot a few small trees. At that point! The barracks was full of cheers, and it scared Jining into cold sweat! Just then! You guy guess what happened?"

"What happened?"

Some of those old prisoners followed to ask.

Old Feng, who used to be quiet these years, suddenly became

positive and passionate... but, Old Feng seemed to be really good at storytelling.

The story was Romance of the Three Kingdoms.

"Well... water!" Tai Yinzi coughed, and soon, a glass of water was sent to him.

Tai Yinzi sipped, and patted his slipper again! Bang!

Right then, Zhou Xiaokun came in hurriedly to Tai Yinzi, saying with fear, "Bad news! Bro, Fatty Zhang was coming to you!"

"Which Fatty Zhang? I didn't mention Wenhou yet! Tell me that later!" Tai Yinzi snorted with displeasure.

"It's Fatty Zhang living in the next room!" Zhou Xiaokun said with cold sweat, "Bro, did you forget you robbed Frog of 6 cigarettes yesterday? He follows Fatty Zhang!"

He didn't know why this bro became so energetic, but since the fight yesterday... Zhou Xiaokun swore that he never thought this bro was so brave! He must have hidden his real character really deeply!

Within a blink of an eye, he mowed down Frog!

Maybe all his anger had turned into energy.

"Who is Old Feng! Come out! I won't kill you!"

A hoarse voice was heard, "Who dared to give trouble to Fatty Zhang's men, do you wish to die?!!"

Chapter 373: From Now On, I'm The Boss Of This Place

At the doorway of the sports room, there was a man taller than any other one standing there with his arms crossed.

There was a scar left on Fatty Zhang's face, and his arms were thicker than the thighs of the other prisoners.

"Don't be naughty, little kid. Are you going to mess with old Taoist...me?"

Tai Yinzi didn't move, but took up the glass and had a sip, glancing at him.

Fatty Zhang sneered and walked in... He wasn't alone, there were three young and strong men behind him. Among the trio was Frog.

Upon seeing them approach with a fiendish expression, Zhou Xiaokun suddenly out came to thaw the atmosphere, "Brother Zhang, we can have a discussion... my brother was not in a good mood recently. Or, let me apologize to you. And I can pay for your loss!"

"Don't worry, if you want to pay, I'll receive that." Fatter Zhang sneered and pointed to himself, "I want the compensation and my reputation! That old fart struck my guy. That means he slapped my face, so I must beat him up to get even!"

With those words, Fatty Zhang pushed away Zhou Xiaokun and grasped the old man's collar, pulling him up, "Old Fart, trash! Did you take the wrong medicine? You dare to provoke me?!"

"You'd better put me down and kowtow to me, your grandpa. Maybe then, I can forgive you." Tai Yinzi yawned.

Fatty Zhang didn't get enraged but just laughed, "Did you guys hear that? This old fart must be out of his mind! Haha, let me see what you can do!"

While saying that, Fatty Zhang released him and cracked his knuckles. Cracking sounds emitted from his finger joints. "I'm nice to weak people. I'll give you a chance first... come on!"

"OK!"

"Roar!"

"Punch him!"

Fatty Zhang's henchmen suddenly kicked up a fuss... To the prisoners here that had only a simple and boring life, some 'games' that could stimulate their hormone were enough to push away the agitation in their hearts.

Tai Yinzi snorted. He put hands back, replying calmly, "It is better if I let you have 3 moves first !"

"Oh?" Fatty Zhang was amused. He opened his eyes wide, "Do you hear that? This old guy... is quite interesting! Then sorry for the offense!"

Seeing Fatty Zhang came close with a sneer, Zhou Xiaokun said hurriedly, "Brother Zhang! Calm down! The guards will come."

"No! They won't! At least, not before I finish the fight!" Fatty Zhang turned his head.

Then, the trio behind him walked to Zhou Xiaokun and pressed him down.

"Are you ready? Old guy!" Fatty Zhang deeply breathed, raising up his fist.

He used to be a boxer with beefy muscles all over his body. No ordinary person could receive one punch from him, let alone a thin and weak senior.

"Hold on!"

But the old man yelled before he threw out his punch. This fierce shout scared Fatty Zhang.

He caught hold of his emotions, raising his eyebrows, "Why? Are you going to beg for mercy?"

Tai Yinzi smiled calmly, lifting up the TV remote control... and turned on the only TV in this room.

Then turned to the music channel.

"What are you doing?" Fatty Zhang asked with surprise.

Tai Yinzi sneered, "Stupid, don't you know I'm unbeatable with my BGM(Background Music)?"

"F*ckin stupid!!"

Fatty Zhang gave a start, and thought he was jeering at him. Therefore, without hesitation, he punched the old man's head.

However, that old man turned his head and evade his attack. He said, "Young people are really tuyang(too young)!"

"Are you courting death?!"

Fatty Zhang shook his fist!

Tai Yinzi squatted slightly and the arm went over his head without hurting him. He stretched out his arm like a snake, five fingers forming a triangle shape, hitting Fatty Zhang's waist.

The attack looked weak, but made Fatty Zhang screech. He covered the wound while his face turned pale and cold sweat started flowing out!

Then, Tai Yinzi gave a kick to Fatty Zhang, launching him 2 meters away.

"Oh, it hurts..." Fatty Zhang covered his belly, climbing up with grabbing something. He yelled, "Don't stand there, you guys! Go beat him! Beat him down!!"

Then, the trio let go Zhou Xiaokun, pouncing on this thin and old man.

"You guys don't know anything about power! Humph!"

A snort.

Everyone saw the trio pouncing on him, but fell back and collapsed onto the ground.

This low-profile 'good man' Old Feng, now opened his arms, one in front and the other at back with his palm up and with both legs in a horse stance, "I'll show you guys what real power is! A dadada!!"

Frog was the first to squat down with pain. Tai Yinzi-style, Old Feng got the first blood!

Another youth screamed on the ground, Tai Yinzi-style, Old Feng got a double kill!

Ouch! The third cry was heard, Tai Yinzi-style, Old Feng got a triple kill and controlled the battlefield!

"Don't... don't punch my face! Fatty Zhang held his head! Tai Yinzi-style, Old Feng, beyond godlike!

"Humph, have you had enough?"

Tai Yinzi waved his sleeve, standing upright.

Fatty Zhang and the trio drooped, shaking their heads with a tremble and answered with fear, "Please, no more."

Tai Yinzi nodded, turning about and indifferently said, "Listen, since from now on, I'm the boss of this place! Got it?"

"Yes, we understand..." Everybody nodded.

"Good... let me continue telling you the story... Huh, where was I?"

"Bro, you said Wenhou hadn't appeared yet..." Zhou Xiaokun reminded him secretly.

Tai Yinzi nodded, taking off his slipper, sitting down, and patting the slipper heavily again.

"At that time, Wenhou..."

...

...

Old Feng cut out the most suitable size.

He used the best silk fabrics.

But he was really old with a loss of vision. Threading the strings took him lots of time.

And his fingers were not as flexible as before.

He did every procedure carefully and dared not to work quickly.

Because he couldn't bear even a tiny mistake.

Turning on the lamp light by the workbench, Old Feng had spent a whole day at work.

He had to make up for the disadvantage of being not as quick.

He didn't leave the workbench except to have a lunch and going to the washroom.

It started to rain and the weather of this city turned abnormal. But Old Feng didn't notice that, because he had laid down on the workbench at some point.

He held the needle, but his eyes were closed and was fast asleep.

Pah, pah, pah, the rain hit the window and almost soaked the furniture in the room. But right then, the window was closed gently.

The club boss had always been here.

He looked at the senior by the lamplight.

Luo Qiu closed the window, and waved his hand to disperse the rainwater immediately.

He then walked to the tea cabinet, adding some water to the kettle.

The water would be automatically boiled and turned to keep

warm, so that the senior could drink warm water upon waking up.

Old Feng would never notice these subtle actions.

Because had long since forgotten about food, sleep, and even himself.

Chapter 374: Collecting Scraps

"Here? The homeless?"

Officer Ma and Ren Ziling decided to come to make an arrest after gathering enough policemen.

Ren Ziling nodded, "All the homeless around are making a living by collecting scraps. I know a guy running a salvaging station near here. They said a weird woman came by recently. Do you see the black part inside? Right there."

Ma Houde gaped, "I didn't expect Zhao Ru who loves cleanliness to hide in such area."

It was a very long and dirty alley with paper boxes, steel iron and household garbage strewn everywhere.

An ordinary young woman would not approach this area.

"Lin Feng, go to the other side, let's surround her!" Ma Houde said.

Subeditor Ren stopped the two policemen, "Wait. She cannot escape but I have to say something."

"...My god, do you want to get involved?" Officer Ma felt terrible.

But Ren Ziling glared at him, "What?! I'm taking care of myself, OK? I won't do dangerous things from now on! Anyway, I want to ask, that how much is the fee for this tip-off? Don't you dare deny me my money!"

Ma Houde asked back, "Why do you always insist on asking for these? I've given you so much through the whole year."

"F*ck! I have to pay for the apartment, car; and my son is studying in a university, he needs to pay tuition fees and expenses for his daily life." Ren Ziling added, "And he has a girlfriend now, of course he has to spend money on her. Furthermore, there is also the soaring price of commodities!"

"OK,OK, I'll pay it soon." Ma Houde calmed Ren Ziling down.

But he felt terrible inside.

That year, when Brother Luo died, she gathered many peers and had them sign a guarantee of supervision.

To hold all of Brother Luo's wealth, to ensure that his son can inherit it after university.

It was a large amount of assets that could let her live well...

But she didn't use any penny of it.

She had a strong personality, fighting to earn money by herself these years.

Officer Ma thought of applying for more claims. When he looked back to Ren Ziling, he found she was staying in the car.

Speaking of which, the recent traffic tickets... do not seem to have appeared yet?

Officer Ma shook his head and concentrated on today's task. Waving his hand, he asked Lin Feng to go to the other side of the alley so that they could encircle the escaped criminal inside.

...

Zhao Ru was still thinking about how those handcuffs broke. She remembered a policewoman fainting and the door being unlocked... Therefore, she could easily leave the hospital.

But she still hadn't received an answer until now. Anyway, she got her freedom.

She was staying in this tiny paper house.

Hugging her knees, she leaned against the wall and played around with the pendant, as if waiting for something.

Suddenly, Zhao Ru heard footsteps; some people were walking towards her.

They were getting close to her...

Zhao Ru held her breath, reaching for a knife behind her back.

She grasped the knife handle.

...

Officer Ma stopped his footsteps.

At that moment, he opened the paper box and shouted, "Don't move, policeman, you're a cri... sorry, mistaken identity..."

There was only an old man who was terrified; but right then, the person from next box rushed out.

She ran frantically towards the other side!

"You cannot escape!" Ma Houde chased after while taking out the walkie-talkie, "Lin Feng, the criminal is running towards you. Stop her!"

Lin Feng took a deep breathe, 'Come on!'

A figure rushed to him; Lin Feng opened his arms, tried to block half of the alley!

He pounced on her, and threw her on the floor.

"Don't try to escape!" Lin Feng pressed her down, handcuffing her to one of his hands.

Ma Houde arrived there too.

"Officer Ma! I caught her!" Lin Feng got up and lifted up the person.

But Officer Ma said, "It's not Zhao Ru!"

"What?"

Lin Feng just figured out that it was just a middle-aged and thin man, instead of Zhao Ru!

"Why did you run?" Lin Feng patted him on the back.

The old man said, "Officer... I saw all of you, of course I would

run."

"Why would you run when you see us?" Officer Ma stared at the old man.

"Er... don't you come to arrest me? I stole a motorcycle a few days ago..." he blurted, but soon he realized something and covered his mouth.

Both of them shook heads. Ma said, "We are here to arrest a woman, not you. But now, you have to come with us."

"Woman? Could it be..." the middle-aged man said, "That woman."

"Which woman?"

"I don't know, she's new here. And said she didn't want this place so I could stay in here." The middle-aged man shrugged, "Her place was very clean, so I moved there, but soon you guys came..."

"When did she say that?"

"About 3 or 4 o'clock this afternoon. I don't remember."

Lin Feng glanced at Ma Houde, frowning, "Officer Ma, it's around the time you just received the message..."

Ma Houde heaved a sigh, nodding, "That woman is too crafty!"

...

...

An old face and a young face appeared in front of Zhao Ru together.

They were the homeless grandpa and the grandson living by collecting scraps... They lived near her, in a simple 'house' made with wood and iron sheet.

"Is something the matter?"

The grandpa smiled, "Girl, take some stuffed buns, we bought a little too much. Let's take care of each other in the future."

The boy next to him took out a small bag from his old schoolbag. He wiped his dirty hand on clothes, then untied the bag and brought it to Zhao Ru.

With a shy smile.

Seeing the sincere grandpa and grandson, she loosened her hand that was holding the knife behind.

Chapter 375: Abandoned People

Seeing the disappointed Ma Houde and Lin Feng walking back with a middle-aged homeless... Ren Ziling hurriedly got off the car.

"Huh? Why did you catch such a guy?"

Ma Houde shook his head, "She left there before we arrived. I think she found that someone was observing her... or she discovered you."

Only then did Ren Ziling remember that she had came in contact with Zhao Ru.

"I tried to be careful... That woman is really sensitive." Ren Ziling was surprised, "Then what should we do next?"

"I have no idea." Ma Houde shook his head, "Maybe we have to call more people to go to other places where the homeless are to check."

Lin Feng gaped, "Officer Ma, Zhao Ru knew that we're looking for her, do you still think she'll hide in those other places?"

"Then what if she thought differently?" Ma Houde rolled his eyes, "Everything is possible. We policemen must keep seeking for some tiny hints constantly during these seemingly useless work."

Ren Ziling patted Lin Feng's shoulder, "Officer Ma is stuffing money into your pocket. You should thank him and treat him to a meal? Oh, I know a restaurant nearby is very good. Let's go have a dinner today!"

Lin Feng rolled his eyes, "Do you want me to invite you to go together?"

"You're so nice!" Ren Ziling blinked eyes, "Can I pack up some food for my Luo Qiu?"

"..."

Lin Feng felt miserable. This month, he might have to eat dirt to

survive... but at this moment, Ma Houde made a phone call.

"Hi, honey, I'll eat outside this evening. Yeah, Lin Feng is treating, yes..."

'Officer Ma, you cannot do this!!'

...

...

Later.

Ren Ziling went back home, taking off her shoes and shouting, "Brat, Luo Qiu? Boss Luo Qiu? Are you in? Did you cook? I brought back some food for you."

Usually, Ren ZIling wouldn't get a response, so she just walked into Luo Qiu's room.

She saw Luo Qiu looking at a photo album beneath the lit-up table lamp.

"What are you looking at?"

Luo Qiu closed the album and put it back into the drawer, "Nothing, just the graduation photos from before."

"Graduation photos..."

Ren Ziling recalled her childhood days. But soon she said, "Have some food, sweet and sour pork ribs! Uncle Ma's subordinate treated us!"

This was Boss Luo's favourite dish, so he took it while walking out of the room, "Why did you go there?"

"Let's not mention that." Ren Ziling looked depressed and told him the events happened in the daytime, then specially mentioned, "I was staying in the car! You can ask Old Ma!"

"Homeless?" Luo Qiu murmured.

"What are you thinking of?" Ren Ziling asked.

"What can I think of?"

Ren Ziling shrugged her shoulders... she didn't know what Luo Qiu thought. She sat down and supported her chin with both hands, saying sadly, "Old Ma said he didn't arrest the right person, so I couldn't get the tip-off fee! But at least he caught a thief! Yet, he didn't even want to pay 100 yuan! Does he have any humanity left?"

"I'm going to heat the dish and cook rice. You only ate a little, right?" Luo Qiu asked indifferently.

"How do you know that?" Ren Ziling gaped.

"Are you eating or not?"

"Heihei..."

Subeditor Ren laughed insidiously and peeped at the balcony, "Ah, you didn't collect the clothes right! Let me help you!"

Boss Luo shook his head and took out some dishes.

He knew that both Ren Ziling and Uncle Ma weren't full. This could be seen from the several full meal boxes.

...

...

The homeless started work as soon as the sun rose and slept when the sun set. Nobody noticed those junkmen and even they didn't know the other similar fellows living near them.

The senior near Zhao Ru said that they were abandoned by this city.

He was called Uncle Mai. And he introduced his grandson with pride, "This is my grandson, Mai Xiaojun."

At 9 o'clock in the evening, Uncle Mai took his grandson to take a shower in the surrounding public toilet and came back.

Mai Xiaojun was a student, and received some help from the

society; so when Uncle Mai came back, he took a bucket of water to wash Mai Xiaojun's clothes.

Mai Xiaojun unfolded the table, and sat on the little stool. Uncle Mai fired an oil lamp for him to do his homework.

After a while, when other homeless approached, Uncle Mai chatted with them about some daily information in this city while washing the clothes.

Zhao Ru now suddenly walked out of her paper 'house', "Sir, let me help you."

"Ah? No need." Uncle Mai shook his head.

Zhao Ru smiled, "Sir, you treated me to some buns, so I need to help you with something."

Other men laughed at that time. They didn't know why a girl came to such places but her smile looked nice.

Uncle Mai didn't insist on his behaviour and received Zhao Ru's kindness. Since then, he knew this new girl's name, "Little Ru."

He could not help ask her later, "Little Ru... you're so young, why..."

Zhao Ru hanged the clothes and said, "You said the people here are all abandoned, didn't you?"

So Uncle Mai didn't ask more. Everyone here didn't want to tell their own stories.

That evening, his grandson looked excited and happier than ever, because Zhao Ru tutored him. And the senior felt appreciated and happy.

He had a much better sleep watching his grandson looking so delighted.

...

During the daytime, Uncle Mai woke up as before. Everything

was the same, including sending his grandson to school.

After coming back, Uncle Mai met two policemen, who were walking towards him; they took out a photo and asked, "Did you see this person?"

It was Zhao Ru.

Uncle Mai didn't answer them, but frowned first, "Officer, what's wrong with this person?"

They just told him, "She's a dangerous escaped criminal! We suspect she's hiding in the surrounding area. Did you see her?"

"No, I didn't."

Uncle Mai shook his head and gave a natural and peaceful look.

The policeman didn't care about that, "Oh, fine. But if you see her, call the police, and you'll get some rewards!"

Uncle Mai didn't say anything but smiled. When the two cops left, he walked into the alley.

He backed to his 'house'; after cleaning his objects, he went to the next 'house'.

Seeing this sleeping girl with her body curled up, Uncle Mai put down two stuffed buns at the door. He bought buns on the way back to this 'house'.

To Uncle Mai, she was not Zhao Ru, but only a new girl.

She said she was an abandoned person.

All members here were abandoned and they had no history.

That was all.

Chapter 376: Master's Business

There were a total of seven cards that contained the information of potential customers placed in front of Luo Qiu.

These were sent by Black Soul No.18 twice... Of course, the Black Soul didn't dare to push the boss. These cards could be here forever if Master wanted them to be there.

She noticed that boss seemed to be willing to keep these cards here. This habit was unlike the former boss.

According to the transaction rules of this club, the one who walked into the club would have the strongest desire to purchase something. The one was detected by Black Soul Envoys might develope into a strong purchasing consumer---Of course, these potential customers were bound to have a stronger purchasing power than normal people.

Master would choose a potential customer and then Black Soul Envoy would be responsible for flaming their desires gradually.

Nevertheless, there would be situations like Ding Dongsheng—where a customer would enter an unbelievable state and could enter the club themselves with some slight help from the Black Soul Envoy.

Black Soul No.18 was apparently a veteran among Black Soul Envoys... She was smart and had already expected the new boss to save the cards of potential customers.

So she wouldn't miss any desired customers---because this was also part of business

"Dai Youcai, Xu Zhao, or Ding Dongsheng...as well as Zhao Ru."

The names of these four people were printed on these cards.

Dai Youcai was the boss of a cram school who was wanted by the police. Xu Zhao was imprisoned by police. Ding Dongsheng had

sunk into sadness because of the death of his beloved girl. Zhao Ru was a woman who was wanted and spent the nights in the street.

Of course, there were other three people's names on the other cards.

However.

"It seemed that Black Soul No Eighteen was good at digging out new potential customers based on one event, just like an experienced staff."

"This was her usual method." Miss. Maid was servicing the tea and responded lightly, "Conflicts create an abyss that will swallow people in.This abyss exists among all relevant parties, including enemies."

Luo Qiu laughed and held these cards in his hands, just like playing poker. He shuffled them a few times and laid them open on the table one by one.

Then he looked at Miss. Maid and said, "Now, you choose one from them."

You Ye was confused and looked at her master but she didn't refuse his request.

She didn't say anything and touched these cards with her fingers---She would definitely not take a peep at these cards and she was not going to figure out the names.

This was a bet.

Miss. Maid chose the one which located in the middle part and opened it. She took a glance and read the name.

"Zhao Ru."

Luo Qiu pushed the table and chairs. He stood up and took the potential-customer card from You Ye, before saying with a smile, "We can't slack off. We need to take some action to meet Black Soul No.18's efforts."

...

...

Tai Tinzi was enjoying the sunshine on the grounds of the prison.

He stretched his legs. There were two people massaging his legs. And Frog was gently knocking his back.

As for Tai Yinzi, he has been appointed as a "big boss" by the other prisoners. Now, he was eating watermelon, which was provided by one of his followers.

Tai Yinzi did not care about how it appeared, as long as it was a 'tribute'.

"Harder! Have you not eaten anything yet? Do you want Fatty Zhang to punch you?"

While Tai Yinzi enjoyed his 'emperor' life, a real super Black Soul Envoy was watching him indifferently.

"He would not be a threat to me."

Black Soul No. 18 shook her head and disappeared---It was not strange for an old staff to pay more attention to a newcomer.

Black Soul No.18 could make sure that there was no possibility for this newcomer challenging her position---Although the new master didn't think highly of her.

Black Soul No.18 stopped suddenly while she was out to find more potential customers on the streets.

She looked seemed to be focused on something with hands crossed in front of her chest.

At the same time, an information card for potential customer fell in front of her, emitting faint light in the air.

When the card fell to the level of her eyes. She lowered her head with hands reaching out to the card deferentially.

The card turned into black upon reaching her hands.

Black Soul No.18's eyes turned bright immediately... It looks like she didn't waste her time sending these seven cards to the boss. She could get one card back for an assignment at least.

Black Soul No.18 looked back to the wall of prison with a scorning smile after taking the black card into her hands.

...

"Boss Feng, is the strength OK?"

Frog was flattering Tai Yinzi while massaging his back.

But Tai Yinzi shivered suddenly and sat up... He felt that someone was watching him.

'Was that Master?'

'Will Master be angry if he sees me?'

Tai Yinzi felt more and more worried. His face turned pale. He stood up without a word and walked into his room. He has even ignored the concern from his henchmen.

Seeing this, Big Zhang punched Frog's head heavily and shouted, "Frog, did you annoy Boss Feng?"

"No, I didn't."

"No? Then how do you explain Boss Feng leaving suddenly without a word? Say, did you do something wrong?"

"No, I didn't! I swear!"

"Fatty Zhang, stop. It's nothing relevant to Frog."

A voice came from Fatty Zhang's back... that was the voice of Zhou Xiaokun.

Fatty Zhang knew that Zhou Xiaokun was close to Old Feng. He smiled to Zhou Xiaokun immediately, "Brother Zhou... do you know the reason?"

Fatty Zhang thought that Old Feng had been in this jail for dozens of years, he must be an expert. Fatty Zhang would be free in

two or three years. He decided to seize the chance to learn something.

He would be unconquerable if he could learn from Old Feng.

"Of course, I know why he is unhappy." Zhou Xiaokun shook his head and sighed, "Old Feng was not such a person before. He was shocked and became abnormal recently."

Fatty Zhang took one piece of watermelon and cleaned the chair, "Take a seat, Brother Zhou, eat the watermelon and we can talk thoroughly."

Zhou Xiaokun was never treated so politely by these fierce guys. He felt important and continued, "My bro is worried for his daughter."

"His daughter?"

"Listen to me, my bro had a daughter outside prison..."

Zhou Xiaokun told the whole story to them and sighed, "His daughter was unwilling to meet him. Maybe they will never meet again. So he fell into sadness. It is no wonder he became like this... What's wrong with you?"

"What?" Fatty Zhang looked around, "Sh*t, Frog, why are you crying?"

"Boss... you're crying as well."

Fatty Zhang tried to wipe the tears with his sleeve. He stood up and sighed. "I hadn't imaged that Master Feng's story would be so sad."

He looked at the direction which Tai Yinzi left just now. And then he pat his chest and promised, "Master, your business is my business. Trust me, I will make your daughter come to see you one day."

Zhou Xiaokun was stunned. He didn't ask Fatty Zhang on how to help Old Feng, but asked curiously, "When did you become a

disciple of my bro?"

"In the future." Fatty Zhang said, "I will become his disciple one day!"

Chapter 377: A Place to Belong

Several years ago.

A group of girls were celebrating the promotion of a head waitress in an office of a hotel.

The office was filled with happiness and best wishes.

But one girl came to the office of the assistant manager. She wanted to see what her manager would say to her.

The assistant manager was in charge of human resources... of course, he was mainly in charge of the lower levels of the hierarchy. As for the management layer, he had no control over it.

It seemed that the manager knew why the girl came in. He said in an apologetic tone, "Zhao Ru, cheer up, you will succeed next time."

"Didn't you... promise me?" The girl grasped her hem of clothes with head lowered down.

"Actually, I would like to give you the promotion." The manager shook his head.

The girl in front of him was very hard-working. She completed her work excellently and was responsible in her daily work.

"So..."

"Your education was not sufficient according to the rules of our company." The assistant manager shook his head and said, "You met all the requirements except for the education part."

"Did she win because of a diploma? I am better than her in all aspects."

The assistant manager shook his head and sighed, "Some of the rules are rigid... but why don't you choose to improve yourself? You have worked for so many years already. You can learn in an adult college if you are interested... Let's do it this way, our

company is going to broaden their business in the housing-keeping department. At that time, I will recommend you to work as an assistant head waitress... Is that ok?"

But the girl shook her head without listening to the manager that was finishing his words. She said without any expression on her face that, "No need."

The girl was so upset that she didn't believe the assistant manager would promote her even if the position existed.

She had been working in this hotel for more than a year. She was the most experienced staff in the house-keeping department. But she was not promoted even when two head waitresses resigned.

To improve herself?

She would like to do so, but reality wouldn't allow her to do... She earned too little.

She worked since graduating from high school but she didn't have any skills. At the beginning, she only earned two thousand RMB per month. Until now, she could only earn three thousand RMB per month.

It would be more and more difficult for a university student to find a job... Yet, for Zhao Ru, it would be even harder.

The others were still in the big party celebrating... But she could only squat by the stairs alone. This was not her first time hiding here.

This was not her first job, either.

She looked at the messages on her phone silently.

It's time to send money back to home.

...

...

Zhao Ru had a dream.

She hadn't dreamed of these unhappy memories for a long time---This unexpected dream made her wake up earlier than usual.

Why would she have such a dream?

This was abnormal.

This dream made her restless---but she calmed down quickly.

This was because she grasped the crystal necklace habitually. She could always calm down with the help of this necklace.

...

Due to the abnormal dream that made her wake up earlier, Zhao Ru saw Uncle Mai preparing his grandson.

Uncle Mai was going to send Mai Xiaojun to school.

"Sister Xiao Ru!"

Mai Xiaojun smiled and greeted Zhao Ru.

Uncle Mai also smiled kindly, "Miss. Good morning!"

Zhao Ru nodded and went back to her 'room'.

Uncle Mai paused for a while and came in, too. He said to Zhao Ru, "Xiao Ru, it isn;t very peaceful outside. Please stay at home if there is nothing urgent."

He seemed to be reminding her of something.

Zhao Ru looked at Uncle Mai without a word. A while later, she nodded lightly.

Uncle Mai waved his hand to let his grandson go first and wait for him at the crossing. The old man took out a wrinkled cigarette and smoked.

He said, "People here have no names and they would never chat with others. Do you know why?"

"Why?"

The old man thought for a while and said, "Because there is no

place outside for us to belong to. This is actually not a good place for us. But why are we still living here? Because we want to have a home."

Zhao Ru said nothing.

The old man patted her hands and then stood up. He ducked down and said, "You can live here until the time you decide to leave."

The old man was going to send his grandson to school. This was the most important thing for him.

Zhao Ru stayed in this 'house' for about half an hour. Then she put on her clothes and left from the other side of the lane.

However, she didn't know that there was a wisp of black smoke following her.

...

...

Officer Ma couldn't be angrier...

They found nothing since Zhao Ru escaped one week ago.

"Could she be invisible?"

At the same time, Lin Feng opened the door and came in while holding a file.

Ma Houde asked directly, "Any updates?"

Lin Feng shook his head and continued, "Officer Ma, we didn't find Zhao Ru but we have contacted her family."

"Go ahead."

Lin Feng opened the file and added, "Her parents are still alive. She had a little brother. However, they all lived in another province. Her parents are both farmers and her brother was expelled from school due to fighting. According to what Zhao Ru's parents said, Zhao Ru started to work after high school. At the

beginning, she would send money back to support her family. However, she had a quarrel with her family on new year's eve, so they lost connection since then."

"She was not close with her family..." Ma Houde nodded and frowned, "Do you know why she argued with her family?"

Lin Feng said with a shrug, "Her father answered the phone. I tried to ask the question. But her father hung up the phone directly. I didn't mention about this case and just told them that Zhao Ru was missing."

Lin Feng added, "But her father was indifferent after hearing my words, he just said 'Oh'"

"Oh?"

"He said 'Oh' and then no more."

Ma Houde massaged his eyebrow and asked, "Have you contacted Zhao Ru's school? How was she doing at school?"

Lin Feng answered, "I called her head teacher. She said that Zhao Ru was an 'A' student and that she was nice to the class. She had gotten a letter of admission from a college but she gave it up, choosing to work and said that her family let her down."

In the meantime, another policeman came in. He seemed very hurried and said, "Officer Ma, a student from the cram school called us and said that she received a threatening letter!"

"Where is she?" Ma Houde asked directly without caring about the file held by Lin Feng.

"That student said she would only talk with you secretly. She didn't want anyone else to know, especially her parents. She hopes that we can help her."

"Fine, I will arrive later." Ma Houde nodded.

He met Wang Yuechuan when he walked out of his office... Officer Ma watched him and felt that Wang Yuechuan was like a

police dog. He must have 'smelled' something and then walked out.

As expected, before Officer Ma could say anything, Wang Yuechuan started the topic, "I heard what you said just now, Officer Ma, let's go together."

Ma Houde thought for a while and agreed. They left the police station together with Lin Feng.

...

...

In the prison, a man, who had a tiger tattooed on his arm, was talking to Fatty Zhang.

"Boss! Why did you contact me so urgently? Is your money insufficient?" The man asked directly.

"Idiot!" Fatty Zhang gave him a contemptuous look, "It took me so much time to send a message to look for you. How could it be because of money? The price is high here but I can still afford it."

The strong man scratched his head and asked, "So what's the matter?'

Fatty Zhang got close to him and whispered, "Listen carefully, if you miss one word, I won't forgive you!"

The strong man patted his chest and promised, "Boss, your business is mine. Thank god for your help or I couldn't be here today."

Fatty Zhang nodded and said seriously, "Listen, Qiangzi, you need to meet a man called Zhou Xiaopeng, he lives in... he will lead you to find a woman. Bring the woman here!"

The strong man...Qiangzi scratched his head again and asked, "Boss, is Zhou Xiaopeng a prostitution organizer? Wait, that's isn't correct. It's not the month couples to meet yet. Boss, do you want woman now?"

"Do you know what I want to do now?"

"What?"

"Fu*k you!"

Chapter 378: Witch

Gradually, Black Soul No. 18 found it wasn't easy to tempt this potential customer in front of her.

There seemed to be some kind of power protecting her.

To be more accurate, a power similar to Black Soul No. 18 was luring the potential customer as well.

Of course, the other power was too weak, compared with Black Soul No.18's.

A Black Soul Envoy couldn't even attract potential customers to make the deal? If this news was let out, she would be totally ashamed.

"I don't know how you got this necklace... but it doesn't matter... Keke..."

Gruesome laughter resounded but Zhao Ru didn't hear it.

She was passing through a bookshop and stopped.

Something was attracting her... so she walked in.

Soon after, she came out with a bag in hand.

She might have bought something from the bookshop.

Black Soul No.18 glanced at the sign: Xinhua Bookshop.

...

...

At dusk, Mai Xiaojun came back with his grandpa.

All his neighbors were much older than himself... Therefore, he had never seen a young elder sister.

He had never gotten so close to a female before, except for those

female teachers and classmates.

He sensed that this elder sister was different from those other people.

But he couldn't tell what it was... He merely noticed that Sister Xiao Ru never smiled.

Even though it was only a few days since she came.

Uncle Mai seemed to have a good harvest today, so he bought some cheap pig liver for cooking sautéed pig liver.

And many other homeless started to prepare their dinner.

Many good smells emitted from this place.

But Mai Xiaojun wasn't attracted by those smells; rather, he peeped at this sister that had just came.

She didn't talk to others---even if it was dinner time.

She just hid in her 'house', tore the bread, and put it into her mouth little by little.

Mai Xiaojun thought her meal must be very cold.

It seems that she was always thinking about something.

The rule here was that nobody would ask about anyone's background. They always spoke about what they saw and heard today or yesterday.

But Mai Xiaojun was still at the age where he could not hold his curiosity.

"Sister Xiao Ru, do you miss your parents?"

At the age of Grade 4, he could only think of such questions.

Zhao Ru didn't answer quickly, but she stopped and turned to look at him.

"Do you miss your parents?" Zhao Ru asked suddenly.

Nobody ever asked Mai Xiaojun this question---so he didn't know

how to answer her.

He held his textbook, and sat near the 'door'.

"Well... sometimes." Mai Xiaojun popped his head out to glance at his grandpa, before saying carefully, "Sister Xiao Ru, let me tell you a secret. But you must not tell anyone, ok?"

"Then don't tell me that."

Mai Xiaojun opened his mouth. He didn't expect her answer---All his friends seem to care about the secrets of others.

"My grandpa said that if I study hard, my parents will come to me when I get into a university!"

"I told you, don't tell me that." Zhao Ru shook her head, "I'll forget it."

"Oh..." Mai Xiaojun lowered his head with disappointment.

Zhao Ru glanced at him and suddenly said, "Let me see your homework."

"Thank you, Sister Xiao Ru!" Mai Xiaojun felt wild with joy... He found that this sister explained much clearer than his teacher in school.

He was so excited that even climbed into her 'house'.

"Don't come in." Zhao Ru stopped him, "Let's go outside, it's too dark here."

Mai Xiaojun nodded and crept out. Therefore, he didn't see Xiao Ru hiding something in her coat.

...

At night, all members in the alley had fallen asleep, including Zhao Ru.

However, something like a shadow was moving around her.

The shadow seemed to look at Zhao Ru; it gave a ghastly laugh, watching the cold sweat emitted out of Zhao Ru's forehead.

It knew that Zhao Ru was dreaming about her past.

In the dream, she came back to her original house in the other province, on new year's eve (Chinese New Year Eve).

Without her noticing, she had grasped her clothes tightly and eyeballs beneath her eyelids started to turn about.

And that laughter turned even more gruesome---Of course, nobody could hear that.

Suddenly, it stopped laughing and left this rough 'house', never revealing its real figure until completely leaving this alley.

The black robe covered its body and only a pair of cat-eye-like eyes could be seen.

It was looking in front--- A man wearing glasses was standing there quietly.

He seemed to have waited for a long time

The man looked at this weird shadow too.

He said first, "Are you an evil soul or a vengeful spirit?"

He shook his head after, "Whatever, you'll disappear later."

"Hehe, I found early on that someone was tailing this woman. Hehe, did you give her the crystal?"

The man wearing glasses chuckled, "No matter where you come from, don't even try to rob this beautiful 'material' from me!"

After the words, he opened the fingers on his left hand; five small black crystal slid down from his sleeve.

They were floating above his palm!

Soon, these crystals shot out to five different places. Four on the ground and one in the midair, the five spots connected to their neighboring ones, and formed a pyramid shield with four triangles as its side faces!

The man came closed his hand and smiled, "I'll use you as the

next crystal's core... if you are powerful enough."

However, his words stopped there. A crack appeared on this hard shield used for catching solitary spirits.

The crack expanded very soon!

In a wink, the shield was smashed, this included the five crystals!

"Tut, I thought I met an interesting guy, it turns out you're just a clown that just has some superficial knowledge of magic. Tut..."

The man face changed slightly while stepping back. His arms hung down and more crystals dropped out of his sleeves, floating above his palms.

"Even the fire-torture columns in Jerusalem couldn't burn me to death... let alone a dabbler like you. You want to kill me? Tut tut..."

Chapter 379: Past dreams & The Book of the Dead

Apparently, the man didn't believe what the wandering spirit said.

The barrier was not his weapon but a means to capture his target...in a gentle way.

"I haven't heard about the tribunal house. But I can burn you my way." The man sneered and shot out the crystals in his hands. The shining crystals were shot out just like bullets.

These crystals were so powerful and fast that they seem to be able to shatter iron.

Ordinary people couldn't catch the movements with their eyes!

But the ghost in a black robe became a wisp of black smoke before the crystals reached it.

It scattered and reunited... Through this way, it escaped the attack easily.

The man realized a hint of danger but he still kept calm and shot more crystals from his sleeve. He began an incantation and fell back in a high speed... However, he stopped after five steps.

The black ghost was standing in front of the man, face to face... almost sticking to him.

"You are really a dabbler... Top magicians would not recite incantations for more than one second."

The man was still holding the crystal in his hands... but a gaping wound had already appeared on his chest!

The man stared at the wound for a moment before reacting... Nevertheless, he merely frowned and asked, "What are you?"

He was staring.

Suddenly, his body crystallized and broke into many crystal particles, which looked like many broken glass fragments.

These fragments bounced on the ground. Black Soul No.18... who was in a black robe, said in a gloomy voice, "You are a good dabbler, at least you know how to hide yourself."

This man from the very start... was not an actual body.

But Black Soul No.18 was not going to root out his real body. She always regarded the assignment as her first priority.

If this man escaped and didn't show up again, she would let him go.

But she would play his game if he showed up once again.

Because, she could defeat him with a stinging slap no matter if it was a crystal or himself.

If one slap didn't work, only one more was needed.

That was how easy it was for her.

The point was that the dream world set up by her had not faltered since the beginning... It was about the past dreams of this potential customer.

She transformed into a black shadow again and sneaked out of the alley secretly.

"Rustling in the wind..."

...

What made Zhao Ru proud was that she had earned money and supported her family to build this two-story house.

The third floor would be finished after this year.

Zhao Ru was pleased while seeing it from far away.

"Hello, Xiao Ru, welcome home!"

"Long time no see, Xiao Ru!"

People greeted her on the way home... Although this village was remote but it was not as cold as the city.

However, everyone had their difficulties. Others would never know the hardships behind the sweet smiles.

It wasn't easy for a wage earner to go back home and spend the spring festival with their families.

Zhao Ru saw her parents and brother. This was the first time for her to be reunited with her family this year.

This was a meaningful meal.

"When will you start school, bro?"

Her mother cut up a chicken leg and added it to Zhao Ru's bowl. But Zhao Ru was looking at her younger brother and looked forward to his feedback.

The boy gobbled. He said to Zhao Ru in a low voice, "No need."

"No need?" Zhao Ru was confused.

Her father tried to explain, "Oh, he means he wants to accompany you these days."

Zhao Ru smiled and continued, "Good boy. Your winter vacation will not end before I go back to work."

But the boy put aside his chopsticks and emphasized, "Dad, just tell her I quit school!"

Her mother beckoned the boy to stop. But it didn't work...Zhao Ru perceived the embarrassing atmosphere in the room.

"Quit school?" Zhao Ru paused for a second. She took a deep breath with subdued anger, "Why did you quit school?"

"Nothing can be learned." The boy said and continued to put rice into his mouth. "I want to find a job rather than staying at school. The college tuition is so high. Furthermore, even after I finished school, I might not find a good job."

"No way. The tuition doesn't matter. You can't give up studying!" Zhao Ru said seriously, "You had better go back to school for graduation next year. I will talk to your teacher after the new year! "

"It's no use." The boy shook his head.

Her mother was trying to stop the boy by kicking his feet under the table.

"Are you trying to hide something from me?" Zhao Ru noticed what her mother did just now.

"No." Her mother denied immediately, "Let's discuss it tomorrow. Today is new year's eve, have a good dinner first."

"No! We must make it clear now." Zhao Ru was angry, "Or I won't eat anything! Fine, I will ask someone else if you still keep silent!"

Seeing Zhao Ru standing up, her father patted the table heavily, "Stop! What are you going to do? Your brother had a fight with others in the school and was expelled! Understand?"

"Had a fight with others?" Zhao Ru turned her head and looked at the boy, "Who are you fighting for? Why did you fight?"

"He provoked me first. It served him right."

"Can you stop talking?" Her father boxed his ears forcefully, "Do you think it's an honor to compensate for thirty thousand RMB to the one you hurt? Shame on you!"

"What thirty thousand RMB?" Zhao Ru turned to her father suddenly.

"Nothing." Her father stopped shouting and drank the liquor alone.

"Tell me!" Zhao Ru questioned, "Where did you get the thirty thousand RMB? Tell me, mom, tell me!"

"Er... we borrowed it from others."

"From whom?"

"From... from the neighbors..."

"OK, stop!" Zhao Ru wiped her face heavily, "I got it. The money was from me, right?"

Her mother lowered her head.

"That's the money for building the house! That's the money you asked from me. You said the government subsidized us and we can build the third floor with thirty thousand RMB. You cheated me..." Zhao Ru screamed, "I really am an idiot!"

"Enough!" Her father got angry, too, "Why can't we use this money to help your brother? He is our family member."

"Ridiculous! How could you say that?" Zhao Ru pointed at her father and said angrily, "Who provided the tuition fee for him these years? Who provided the money to build the two-story house for him? It's me! You... halted my education and gave him the chance to go to school. Am I your daughter? How could you treat me like this?"

A big clap---!

Her father slapped her face and stared at her, "Who taught you this?"

Zhao Ru laughed.

She covered her face and smiled coldly, "Nobody."

She went back to her room and carried her suitcase out.

Her mother cried, "Xiao Ru, be polite to your father!"

"No need." Zhao Ru took a deep breath, "I will not come back anymore. Keep the chicken leg for your son."

"Get out here!" Her father was furious, "And never come back!"

"I will."

The firecrackers were rising in the sky of this small village.

She went back this afternoon.

And left in the evening.

...

She woke up suddenly and found herself in cold sweat... but she was still in this simple 'room'.

It was midnight now.

Zhao Ru touched her crystal necklace subconsciously.

Yet, she found that this crystal didn't make her calm down as usual.

...

...

His name was Cao Yu. At least, he didn't intend to change his name for the moment.

He opened his eyes.

In front of him was a portrait sculpture made out of crystal in front of him. And it was broken into two pieces.

Cao Yu frowned. It took him a lot of time to make that, yet it was so fragile.

He felt a sense of unease.

This had never happened before. Cao Yu took a deep breath and took out an old thick book from the dresser.

He tried to find some clues in this book.

This old book was his origin of power... He found it in an antique shop ten years ago.

His life changed since then.

He felt as if he was chosen by this book... because he could translate the ancient Egyptian in this book.

The Book of the Dead.

Chapter 380: Long Long Ago

This was the second time for Officer Ma and Wang Yuechuan to meet the girl in front of them.

This high school student looked even more frightened than last time.

She called the police when she was threatened for the first time. However, this was the third time already.

"Was this threatening letter still sent to the school?" Ma Houde was looking at this girl and frowned.

She nodded her head... She didn't dare to tell her parents about this.

The students started to guess the truth ever since the cram school closed down. So they tried to avoid contacting each other, even if they were friends or acquaintances.

"Sir! I heard that... the dead victims were all... Sir, I don't want to die. Save me, Please! I know I was wrong."

"Don't worry, we will take care of your safety." Ma Houde said seriously, "We have taken action to protect you since the last time. The bad guy will be arrested at once if he approached you. Relax."

But the girl was still anxious, "But why could... the threatening letter... still be sent to the school..."

This was what Officer Ma couldn't explain.

The letter was mailed to the school directly, but they couldn't find Zhao Ru's picture on the surveillance system of the post office... So, the only conclusion was that she placed the letter into the mailbox herself.

The problem was that they were too many people putting letters into that mailbox in one day. It was difficult to trace who was the suspect... And they couldn't investigate one by one, which would

wake the sleeping dog.

"Do you want to resolve this matter?" Wang Yuechuan asked the girl suddenly.

The girl was stunned. This was the second time she met Wang Yuechuan.

He was cool... and handsome. But he said nothing last time.

She nodded subconsciously... She heard her heart beating quickly upon seeing his handsome face. Compared to Officer Ma with the big belly, Wang Yuechuan seemed more reliable in the girl's eyes.

"Then give me a hand." Wang Yuechuan continued, "I need you to plan a suicide..."

...

Officer Ma said nothing when the girl was on the scene.

He couldn't help asking Wang Yuechuan when the girl left. "Wang Yuechuan, I think your plan will put the girl in danger. It's ridiculous!"

"If we can't find the murder, the other students are in danger, too." Wang Yuechuan added his point, "There are more names on that paper. Anyone of them could be the next victim. But now, only this girl was willing to cooperate with us."

"It sounds reasonable, but!"

Ma Houde couldn't agree with him totally. "But we aren't sure where Zhao Ru is hiding. What if she didn't threaten them but killed them herself? This is not a joke. It concerns a life!"

"What she can do is merely come into contact with the criminal."

Wang Yuechuan said, "According to what we have, the threatening letter was sent one after another. When the students collapsed, the murderer would send the final letter to make the students commit suicide... When the final letter comes, it's me, who shall step onto the roof."

...

Different waste pickers had their own places to working... In other words, they would occupy a place like a 'fixed site'.

Here was the 'fixed site' of Uncle Mai.

"There are so many cardboard cartons here!" Old Mai said happily.

The staff who brought Old Mai here responded, "Yes. People opened their packages and threw the cartons here. And also, the rest package materials can be recycled, too. You can pick them up if you like."

"Okay, thank you."

Old Mai patted his grandson's back---he just picked the boy up from school.

"Xiaojun, you go over there. We can go home after I finish working!"

Mai Xiaojun jumped over there. He turned back to see his grandpa. Seeing he was busy with work, Mai Xiaojun inserted an envelope into the mailbox right away.

Sister Xiao Ru told him that she would buy ice cream for him... if it was not discovered by others.

...

...

It got dark outside.

Old Feng found that the light reflected from the window was too dark that he couldn't concentrate on his work.

He took off the glasses and rubbed his eyes. A phoenix had already been embroidered on the upper part of the dress.

But there were more patterns that needed to be embroidered, such as more phoenixes and propitious clouds and so on.

Making the patterns took much time.

Old Feng was frightened when hearing someone knocking the door just as he was about to turn on the light.

This was a quiet place. And he was the only one living in this building. Who would look for him... at this time?

It couldn't be Zhou Zihao as it was not their meeting time now.

Old Feng didn't make a sound. He walked closer to the door lightly to see who was outside.

It was... the club boss!

Old Feng hesitated for a while and chose to open the door. It would be easy for this club owner to come in if he would want to.

But... why would he come here?

Old Feng was not trying to find out who was behind that mask. He asked, "Are... you looking for me?"

"It seemed that you are the only one living here." Luo Qiu said gently, "We will perform an after-sale service sometime. Please relax... Have you eaten anything? I brought some food for you."

Old Feng led him in.

Luo Qiu took a dining box. Old Feng smelt a familiar flavor from the box.

Luo Qiu took a glance around and noticed Old Feng was absent-minded. He said, "The noodles were bought from the restaurant downstairs. Neighbors here said the noodles were delicious and had never changed these years."

"I know that restaurant..." Old Feng sunk into his memories. He nodded, "It was opened ever since I came here. I would go there to order food if there was no time to make dishes."

There was a father as well as his daughter running that restaurant.

Old Feng recalled old memories, "I made the wedding dress for his daughter when his daughter got married."

Old Feng looked at the old pictures on the wall.

That was a wonderful time.

"Their smiles look beautiful." Luo Qiu came close to Old Feng, "Can you tell me the story of them?"

"Story?" Old Feng was stunned.

Luo Qiu nodded with a smile, "It's fair. I paid for the noodles, and you can tell me something about them. It won't take very long, I think."

Maybe the noodles reminded him of the past.

Maybe he felt lonely.

Maybe time for a meal was enough for him.

Old Feng nodded, "Fine, who would you like to know about?"

"Er... how about her? " Luo Qiu pointed at one woman in the picture.

She was a gentle and elegant woman.

Old Feng walked to the working station and wore his glasses. He took off the picture and looked at it carefully. "I remember this woman as well as her husband."

Old Feng sighed, "They impressed me the most."

Luo Qiu was curious and asked, "Why?"

Old Feng smiled bitterly, "I was arrested by her husband. You... should have known that already, which was why you selected this picture."

Luo Qiu shook his head... He merely wanted to know the story.

The story of his mother.

"We can change another one if you recalled something sad."

"No."

Old Feng shook his head and sat down, "I told you I deserved it... I regretted what I did these years. Prison was actually a relief. I can tell you all of it."

"Yes, please." Luo Qiu gave him a cup of water.

The old man didn't drink the water. He thought for a while and started, "I forgot their names. But I remembered the couple came together with an infant in their arms."

"An infant?" Luo Qiu was shocked.

Old Feng nodded his head, "The infant was born only for a few days. I heard from the man that he was too busy work to hold a wedding ceremony. So he wanted to customize a wedding dress for his wife. That was why they came here with their baby."

...

"...The baby never cried."

"But the baby fell down from the chair when that woman went to try on a dress... That baby fell down from this sofa and his mother was terrified, but he didn't cry."

"Let me think... Oh right, that woman always wore a hairpin with a blue butterfly on it..."

Luo Qiu listened carefully without saying a word. He knew that Old Feng could recall more and that the old man didn't hold any hatred towards anybody.

He also knew that he had been here before, long long ago.

Chapter 381: Sealing

Luo Qiu had already finished the shaved noodles, while Old Feng was still absorbed in either the taste of the shaved noodles or in his memories.

Now, the city night was already occupied by different lights.

After Old Feng almost finished telling all the details about the woman who brought the child, he drank the remaining soup in the bowl.

Then he stayed silent for a second.

At last, he said, "Later, which was the day I was arrested, I finished making the clothes of that lady. What's interesting, I've only seen that policeman twice. The first time was when he came up with his wife and the second time was the day of collecting the goods which I was arrested."

Luo Qiu was already immersed in the story, as if he was watching the story repeating in the living room.

"Do you think that policeman started to suspect you the first time you met each other?"

Old Feng smiled and shook his head, "Who knows? Maybe you're right, he just wants me to finish making the clothes; or he found that out by accident, so he investigated it; and by chance, the day he came to arrest me was exactly when I finished that... but whatever, it was a good ending for me."

Luo Qiu nodded, as if thinking about something.

But Old Feng longed to tell more, "Because I'm a criminal anyway. And it's a gift for me to have lived for so long..."

If Old Feng took it this dress as a common order, it would take more time to finish it. Of course, there would be more time for the father and the daughter got along with each other then.

...

Old Feng took off his glasses, massaging his nose and then wore it again, "I didn't stick this photo on the wall. That day, I asked if I could finish my work before going to the police station. That policeman agreed and then he took the photos."

Old Feng heaved a sigh, saying with a complex expression, "I think it should be stuck on the wall by that policeman. But he never mentioned it to me."

"He never told you that?" Luo Qiu asked.

"That policeman even came to visit me several times." Old Feng said, "The first year, he came three times, and then once every year. But in recent years, he didn't come to the prison."

Old Feng smiled as looking at Boss Luo, "Maybe he forgot it. But it's common that one wouldn't remember an old man except for their relatives. You should know this better than me. I think time holds no meaning for you. Maybe you have met much more similar incidents."

"He didn't forget you." Luo Qiu interrupted him.

Old Feng gave a start, he wanted to know the answer.

"Well, it's too late. I'll leave now. Have a good rest." Luo Qiu stood up, "I like your story, and I'll come again later... Of course, I'll bring you some food next time."

After saying that, Old Feng saw a living person disappeared from his sight.

Old Feng told himself that all this behavior was of part of the ability of the club boss.

"He's also a weird guy."

Old Feng shook his head, slapping his face gently to wake him up. It was getting dark outside, but his work had just started.

He picked up the needle, starting to sew.

He had never been so quiet like this in the recent decade.

...

After leaving Old Feng's house, Luo Qiu just turned to the shaved noodle restaurant again to buy two portions of noodles.

He didn't go back to the club, but went back home.

Ren Ziling came back with a tired face, not long after Luo Qiu's arrival.

"Huh, our dinner is shaved noodles?"

Boss Luo poured some vinegar, but didn't answer her.

They didn't talk anymore during dinner.

He thought, if his parents had tasted the shaved noodle those many years ago, they should have the same feeling as he had now.

...

...

There were two cases waiting to be processed by the boss, but he treated them both equally.

"Black Soul No. 18 greets master..." She never had that experience where the boss suddenly came to her.

The former boss seldom walked out of the club---at least she had never seen him appear in front of her.

"You Ye ever said you met some problems, right?" Luo Qiu calmed her down, "Don't be reserved, you can speak about it freely."

But the Black Soul Envoy dared not to be rude to the boss... through the countless years, all those rude guys have been smashed.

There was only one Black Soul Envoy that dared to query and contradict the boss sometimes, but it could not go against the boss...

"Yes, I met some troubles that I can solve myself." Black Soul No.18 nodded, "But I thought a Black Soul Envoy should not hide anything from the boss, so I came back to report it to Miss You Ye. I never expected Master will participate in this."

Black Soul No. 18 seemed to try to express something, "Master, don't worry! That guy is just a dabbling magician, I can solve it by myself."

It was not a magician with real skills, but only had a false and nice appearance.

Luo Qiu asked curiously, "How did you know it is a dabbler?"

Black Soul No.18 answered, "Because he didn't show any basic manners of a magician. The magician of a sect appears like a noble and his temperament can reveal that easily. But that person..."

Black Soul No.18 shook her head, "...he didn't seem to receive any traditional education. So I speculate that he may have learned magic by himself. And only those dabblers will not care about regulations and cause chaos in the ordinary society. Adversely, orthodox magicians will look down upon those matters except for some of them with psychological problems... but there won't be a lot of that. So the conclusion is that he must be a dabbler."

"You have more experience than me, so I'll choose to believe your speculation." Luo Qiu nodded.

Black Soul No. 18 was surprised and honored... after all, the boss was supposed to be omniscient.

But she didn't know that the boss would seek enjoyment in the process of digging out the answer by himself, instead of asking others.

That was the boss's habit since childhood.

He could just ask his followers, why should he get ripped off by the altar?

"Tell me about the information on Miss Zhao Ru."

Black Soul No.18 nodded, "Master, this potential customer has a serious antisocial disorder..."

...

While listening to the report of this Black Soul Envoy, Boss Luo didn't stop looking.

He saw Zhao Ru sitting alone in her paper 'house'.

She sat in darkness hugging her knees. With her head buried in her arms and knees, her world turned even darker.

Chapter 382: Behind the Human World

Someone people lived without any worries their whole life.

But some others had a hard time being born. They had to work hard during their early years, but also had to work hard during their later years. Throughout their life, no matter how hard they worked, they seemed unable to get a better life.

It seems that some things had already been destined the moment one was born.

And it was impossible to change the end, no matter how hard you try to rebel against the injustice.

Some people say that everybody just needs a strong heart.

Saying that those vexing issues won't accompany one throughout one's life. There is always a better poem, a further place to aim for.

What the hell were those b*llshit?

This sentence was merely suitable for those who eventually became successful.

But so few people could achieve that... Even if those people seem to reveal their attitude toward life and often appear in numerous newspapers, magazines, or interviews. Nevertheless, the number of them was actually very little.

That's right, those speakers who were interviewed were prime examples of success, but their listeners comprised of all sorts of people.

And not many people could imitate their way to improve their lives... even if they deeply believe in that f*ckin sentence.

Zhao Ru didn't know how many people were like her, but she knew she had never admired any kind of poem, nor look far into the future.

She was one of this generation that couldn't do it.

Within the 7 billion in this world.

She knew she had given up on her life.

She saw those students that had the best environment and envious lifestyles; yet, some of them abandoned themselves just for purchasing some luxury clothes or a pair of limited sneakers.

The world was really unfair, like so.

In that case.

Please allow me to express my anger a bit.

Since I'm abandoned by the world anyway.

...

...

She had a similar dream... faintly, she felt that someone was gazing at her.

She raised her head.

Raising it from between her hands and knees, she found the alley more bright than before.

But she could not get used to such bright light; her sight turned blurry.

Maybe it was a hallucination; she hadn't slept well these days.

But right then, her sight became clearer. She saw a young face---Mai Xiaojun.

He had just came back from school.

She heard a low voice from Uncle Mai, "Don't always disturb her."

But Mai Xiaojun didn't care... because his grandpa always told him not to bother the other seniors.

"Sister Xiao Ru, I finished my work today."

"Really?" Zhao Ru nodded.

She turned around and reached for her bag that was rectangular and had something heavy in it. However, as if getting an electric shock, she drew back her arm.

She didn't take it out in the end, merely pulling out two bags of snacks for Mai Xiaojun.

Mai Xiaojun received her kindness, tearing open one bag and eating it.

Then Zhao Ru said, "No need to go tomorrow."

"Ah?" Mai Xiaojun showed his disappointment, "Why?"

"It's not necessary." Zhao Ru said indifferently, "Today is the last time."

But Mai Xiaojun only thought that he wouldn't receive any rewards from Sister Xiao Ru... He didn't finish the snacks everyday and had already saved seven bags these few days.

He was taught that way to calculate and save money and food.

But Mai Xiaojun didn't know the hidden meaning of the so-called 'last time'.

He never saw Sister Xiao Ru ever since.

When he woke up the next day, he went to greet the big sister before going to school as usual, but found the paper 'house' was empty.

Nobody was staying there.

His grandpa said a sentence, but Mai Xiaojun didn't understand it, "It's a place to gather people, and also a place to lose people. If someone leaves, it may mean it's time to leave."

On the way to school, Mai Xiaojun looked up to his grandpa, "Grandpa, did Sister Xiao Ru go back to her family?"

Uncle Mai fished out a wrinkled cigarette, and looked around the

street, "I don't know, maybe she finally made a decision."

'I don't understand.'

But weird sentences occasionally came from his grandpa... especially when some people never came back.

Mai Xiaojun thought he would never meet this big sister again. The big sister who never smiled but would teach him and buy food for him.

...

...

5:55 p.m.

"So... this is the reason he crossdressed?"

Before sunset, Lin Feng checked the time and asked Officer Ma, who was at the opposite unit of the home of a high school female student.

She was the one who received a threating letter.

As Wang Yuechuan predicted, she was very safe with many police officers around.

Her family was not at home.

They were arranged by the officers to have dinner outside.

Wang Yuechuan seemed to have that ability to arrange that.

"Don't ask too much! Focus on your target! We'll act as soon as they appear!" Ma Houde patted Lin Feng's head.

The young policeman shrugged, picking up the telescope and gazed at some unit of the opposite building. He laughed, "But... Wang Yuechuan crossdressing is really beautiful... Hahahahahaha, Officer Ma, it's 6 o'clock, we still have three hours. Would you like to have a look... hahahahahaha..."

"Stop laughing!"Ma Houde patted heavily his head, saying seriously, "Do you think I'm interested in these? Humph! Give me

the telescope! Lin Feng, I'm afraid you are too careless to do this job and may make mistakes! I'll do it myself!"

'Officer Ma... where is your moral integrity!!!'

Chapter 383: The Picking Party

"Cool Wind blows, Autumn Moon hangs...balabala."

Such poem came from the TV on the top floor. Wang Yuechuan stood on the rooftop.

Wang Yuechuan frame was the slim type. After wearing a female's clothing, he looked enchanting and quite similar to a real girl.

He was taller than the targeted high school girl... but it didn't matter, because he... 'she' was now sitting on the rooftop.

With legs hanging in midair.

"Where are you, Zhao Ru..."

Wang Yuechuan was not afraid of heights. His sight was like a falcon, staring at every tiny figure on the street.

"And..." Wang Yuechuan squinted eyes, "Cao Yu, I know you will come."

At 8:31 p.m.

Zhao Ru, with her head hung down, got off the bus... It was rush hour, nobody would notice a woman walking with her head lowered.

Her destination was the next street. She could even see the sign on the rooftop.

Zhao Ru carefully looked around, and then sneakily slipped into an alley, getting close to her target.

She was convinced that nobody discovered her... She only believed in her eyes now, rather than the words of anyone else.

But she didn't know there were some things she couldn't see—such as Black Soul Envoys.

About 1 meter behind her, Black Soul No.18 was following her.

Black Soul No. 18 was waiting for the harvest.

Human beings tend to ignore their real intention even if they understood their heart--- but a Black Soul Envoy knew more about human nature than the human's themselves.

Especially those who had similar dreams to her.

Yet, Black Soul No.18 stopped at that moment.

She said indifferently, "Tut, you haven't had enough last time. And you came to court death? Dabbling magician."

She was following Zhao Ru but someone was approaching her... It was that dabbling magician with glasses.

Cao Yu.

"You merely broke my mirror image spell. Don't be so happy."

"Really?"

Black Soul No.18 said while turning around. Before she turned, she flicked her finger and a lump of black light went into Zhao Ru's clothes.

Black Soul No.18 actions were totally concealed though Cao Yu was observing every action of hers.

He was not relaxed like what he said.

He merely said some words to provoke her, attempting to make her lose her composure and revealed more openings. Of course Cao Yu didn't expect that but he wanted to have a try.

"Looks you're prepared this time before coming... tut..."

Cao Yu smiled faintly, "I should be careful."

Black Soul No.18 said, "Oh, really? Then let me guess... you came here with your true body, right?"

Cao Yu replied indifferently, "You're the first one that could

break my 4-star barrier. Besides that, the mirror image spell failed... I have to use a different strategy to deal with you."

Black Soul No.18 gave out a gruesome laughter like knife scratching on glass, "But it doesn't seem to be safe if you revealed your true body."

Cao Yu adjusted his glasses, and nodded, "You're right, but you ignored something."

"Oh? I'd like to listen to your opinion."

From the start, Cao Yu had placed his hands behind him. At the moment, both his palms were pressed together; yet, his face didn't change, "You ignored the fact that this woman is a good carrier for my materials to be nurtured. I know her better than other people and I know clearly about her mode of operating."

Black Soul No. 18 couldn't help sneering.

Cao Yu wasn't angry; he added, "Since I know her intention and her mode of operating... I'll definitely know which way she will choose. For example, here."

Black Soul No.18 looked around the alley at this instant!

At the same time, Cao Yu opened both his hands, while squatting and pressing them on the ground!

Then, a big blue circle and a small one showed beneath Black Soul No.18's! And six dim light spots appeared on both sides of the alley walls.

There were 12 spots in total!

All of them were rapidly rotating... black crystals! They seemed to be hidden in the wall earlier! Now they formed a regular icosahedron!

And Black Soul No.18 appeared in the middle of it!

"You laid an ambush!"

That was a scream with anger. But Cao Yu didn't care; rather, he took a deep breath, and magic power poured out frantically!

A second later, he heaved a sigh and stood up. The regular icosahedron had shrunken and turned into a fist-size one, which was floating toward Cao Yu's palm.

Cao Yu seemed a bit wobbly on his feet as he collected the 12 sided icosahedron. He lay against the wall, as if he desperately needing a rest.

He lowered his head and looked at the black shadow in it, then sneered, "I prepared it for three days. How is it compared to a top magician?"

The black shadow didn't answer him, merely falling silent.

Cao Yu said coolly, "Don't worry, we have a lot of time to play... but now, I'm going to pick up the ripe fruit."

Cao Yu walked out of the alley quickly.

At 8:37 p.m.

...

...

At 8:50 p.m.

Lin Feng peeped through the door gap and found the high school girl was still staying by the policewoman quietly, without speaking.

He then checked his watch... it was 10 minutes to 9.

But right then, Officer Ma raised his arm, and told all members through interphone, "Everyone, attention! The target has appeared! Repeat, the target has appeared! Prepare to arrest her... Dragon, who is the guy that went past you?"

Officer Ma asked.

The hiding policeman, Dragon, looked around, but he just saw

the silhouette of a back, "I don't know, it may be a passer-by."

"Passer-by?" Ma Houde frowned. He looked through a telescope, but could only see a lowered head, rather than the face.

The man was walking ahead of Zhao Ru... unless something unexpected occured, he would encounter Zhao Ru soon.

A strange prediction rose up to Ma Houde's head but he didn't know what it meant.

An innocent passer-by, or...

And just at that moment, a guy from another ambush point said, "Officer Ma, the target will enter the effective capturing range! 10 meters!"

How long would it take a person to move 10 meters, based on the normal walking speed?

However, at the moment, Zhao Ru stopped.

Chapter 384: Merry-Go-Round

Zhao Ru frowned.

That was because when she put her hand in the pocket, she found a black card. She remembered all the items on her except for this black card, "What happened?"

Who placed this in her pocket? And when?

Her footsteps stopped but her thoughts did not.

With this card... a transaction could occur by giving any valuable things.

This thought appeared when she touched that black card, but soon she started moving forward again, because the harvest time of the "fruit" was nearing. She urgently needed it to mend the hole in her heart.

It was a fruit of death, a fruit of desperation, and a fruit of regret and misery.

Maybe only the pleasure of watching that moment the thing shattered was the only way to mend her the hole in her heart.

At that moment, she could even see the figure on the roof of the building... She knew a girl was sobbing there, and she heard the panic, regret, self blame and desperation...

The moment to enjoy the delicious sweet fruit was coming. She could hardly wait to savor the pure and sweet delight; she had tasted it and knew the delicacy. Unwittingly, the corners of her mouth started to turn upward...

"Very happy, eh?"

The words came from the front. Looking at this strange man who was wearing glasses, Zhao Ru subconsciously frowned.

"Yes, he's really a stranger." Her good memory told her that. The first time she was caught and sent to the police station, she had remembered the faces of all policemen she met.

The man naturally came to her from the left side and said, "Unfortunately, happiness will always leave you... And you'll never obtain it... Thank you for giving me such good...materials."

Zhao Ru's mind turned blank the moment she heard those words. When the man disappeared around the corner, she subconsciously tried to grab the black crystal pendant, but... it was missing.

Missing.

Missing.

Missing.

Then, a pain started to spread through her body. She subconsciously touched her stomach... it was bleeding.

Suddenly, she saw a deep abyss.

...

"Officer Ma, She stopped again!"

"Sh*t! Act right now! Catch up with that man!" Ma Houde directly threw off his binoculars and pulled out his pistol, hurriedly running to the elevator.

At this moment, some officers hiding in the back suddenly came out with guns and said to Zhao Ru, "Stand still! Don't move!"

Other policemen came across the street from the shop! They pointed their guns, aiming at Zhao Ru, "Just surrender!"

However, she didn't move the whole time...

A policeman gestured to the one beside him. The other policeman nodded and approached her slowly, but when he pressed his hand on Zhao Ru's shoulder, she suddenly toppled to the ground.

He uncovered her coat and found her stomach was bleeding due to a knife being inserted into it...

"Damn! How could that man!" This policeman then quickly rushed toward that man's way.

When Ma Houde came here, he didn't feel any joy from catching Zhao Ru.

"Hold on! The ambulance is coming! Please hold on!" Officer Ma held Zhao Ru's hand and said, "Tell me, who tried to kill you? Who?"

But Zhao Ru just opened her mouth and said nothing. Looking at the sky, the dark sky, she felt cold. The big hole of her heart suddenly seemed to grow, swallowing her...

She slowly closed her eyes, Ma Houde had never seen such desperate eyes in his life.

"Officer Ma, let's drive her to the hospital! We cannot wait for the ambulance any longer!" A policeman suggested.

Ma Houde nodded. After Zhao Ru entered the private car, he struck the guardrail by the sidewalk. Then he said to the intercom, "Did you catch that man?"

"Sorry, Officer Ma, he vanished!"

"Sh*t!" Ma Houde struck the guardrail again, "Wang Yuechuan? Where's Wang Yuechuan?"

"Officer Ma, Wang Yuechuan seems to have left the roof... We have no way to contact him!"

Officer Ma struck the guardrail the third time, and angrily said, "F*ck!"

...

...

"Hopelessness... Hopelessness is good."

At the bus station, Cao Yu took off his glasses and obsessively sized up the black crystal pendant hanging before his eyes.

With this, he believed his magic power could become stronger... and those unused skills in that ancient book could be practiced...

"Do you like desperation?"

"Of course."

Cao Yu was fascinated with the black crystal pendant; he directly answered, without even considering.

But who was talking to him?

Cao Yu just frowned, but soon he smiled, and took out a regular icosahedron and said, "It turns out you can still talk. That's great. I will refine you and turn you into a good tool."

"You didn't answer me yet, do you like desperation?"

"Is it important?" Cao Yu shook his head and suddenly said, "I've changed my mind. you're a very weird soul, I want to carefully study you."

"Answer me, do you like desperation?"

Cao Yu didn't reply. He sneered and wanted to put it into his clothes... But at this moment he suddenly felt the regular icosahedron cracking slightly in his hand...

When Cao Yu looked at it again, it had completely shattered and turned into countless powdery dust.

Black Soul No.18 was in front of him... like she had never been trapped!

"You... used illusion sorcery on me?" Cao Yu squinted his eyes, yet did not panic

He underestimated the power of this Black Soul. So now he wanted to cause a direct confrontation to find an opportunity to escape.

"Sorcery?" Black Soul No.18 said with scorn, "Are you strong enough for me to use sorcery? You can't trap me with this... I just stayed inside and let you do things for me."

"What did you say?" Cao Yu frowned.

Black Soul No.18 indifferently said, "How stupid you are... Real Black Soul Envoys are good at taking advantage of all favorable conditions... I'm so happy that we have the same purpose... Haha..."

Cao Yu didn't know what the Black Soul Envoy was, but he clearly saw an ugly witch beneath the black robe hat.

Suddenly, he couldn't move! And the crystals slipped out of his sleeve, bouncing on the ground.

It was the first time... that he felt the power from that ancient book to be so small.

"Who... Who are you? "

"You don't deserve to know that." Black Soul No.18 came near and stretched out a bony hand...

She smiled as her finger scrapped Cao Yu's face, "But I can tell you, in this world, only my new master can get that fruit..."

"Who are you!!!!!!"

"Do you like desperation?"

Black Soul No.18 suddenly shrouded Cao Yu.

...

...

In the hospital emergency room.

"Doctor, her temperature is rising..."

Beneath the glaring light, the doctors and nurses were operating frantically on this woman that was just brought in.

Just then, all the nurses and the doctor suddenly stood still and stopped doing anything.

Everything here seemed to stop... Except those instruments.

"Are you looking for me? Dear customer."

Zhao Ru suddenly heard such a voice on the table.

She slowly opened her eyes, seeing the dazzling spotlight... and a vague figure...

She felt someone lightly hold her hand and transmit some magical power to her. Her vision became clearer... but she knew she was dying...

She saw her whole life before waking up this time. It was like a merry-go-round.

Chapter 385: A Never-Withering Flower

In this room, the passing time and the immobile staff formed a sharp contrast...

Luo Qiu let go of Zhao Ru's hand so that they could have a long talk.

Zhao Ru looked around, but she was not surprised. She even didn't feel a trace of pain from her wound on her stomach.

Maybe the sight in front of her caused her pain to be separated from her.

"The black card..." Zhao Ru said this after a long while.

Luo Qiu waved his hand and moved the doctor who was holding the scalpel; he sat at the edge of the bed, "It's what one of my employees gave you. And that employee,..."

Luo Qiu suddenly stopped and shook his head, "Is having fun now."

"Having fun?"

Luo Qiu calmly said, "Just a personal interest... It has nothing to do with you."

Zhao Ru didn't understand. She just subconsciously nodded... But what surprised her was that this man with a mask in front of her made her feel peaceful.

But also crazy.

The black crystal pendant was missing, but she didn't feel upset. Just as she habitually wanted to touch it, she suddenly realized many things. raising her head, she said, "The pendant... is it from you..."

Luo Qiu lightly shook his head, "Maybe you were chosen, or maybe you just happened to obtain it. It has a great attraction for people with heavy desires."

Zhao Ru bitterly smiled, "Yes, I understand... Can I ask you a question?"

"Go ahead."

Zhao Ru took a deep breath, "Why are there unfortunate people? What is the world filled with injustice?"

"Can I give my own point of view?"

Zhao Ru subconsciously nodded.

Luo Qiu thought for a while, "Actually, I don't know why. Even truths or philosophy can't give us a clear answer."

"So... there is no answer?" Zhao Ru was stunned.

"Not that complicated."

Luo Qiu still shook his head, "Well... in this world, unfortunate people and lucky people are relatives. This is a balanced world. For example, we keep getting resources from nature, and the resources would be used up... But for the planet, all the exhausted resources just exist in another way."

"You mean the misfortune fosters the lucky?"

"Who knows!" Luo Qiu shook his head, "Maybe this is just a wrong proposition."

Zhao Ru was silent. But the clock hanging on the wall was still moving constantly.

"I'm surprised that I'm so calm after watching everything I have done..." Looking at the club boss, Zhao Ru finally said.

"There is a saying that death gives people peace."

Now, Zhao Ru was just an onlooker of her life, because... she had already died once.

...

Zhao Ru's eyes became more gentle... She shook her head, "The mistakes and crimes wouldn't leave even if we die... As you said, they would exist in another way, like sadness. And the pain will be in the heart of victims... forever."

Luo Qiu didn't say any word. He just accompanied her, silently watching the clock.

"I don't want to stay here. Can you send me to a place?" Zhao Ru suddenly said.

"Where do you want to go?"

...

This small single rented "home" where she had lived for a long time didn't have any changes except that there was a lot more heavy dust.

"I like the design here." Boss Luo smiled.

"I put some effort to it." Zhao Ru smiled. Then she came to the window and opened it.

Outside of the window, a few plants were the only scenery. However, these plants had dried up, except for the gem flower...

She quietly looked at it for a long time.

"It's better for me here. Though it's small, simple and there are only two hours of sunlight... It's really better for me here." She turned around and looked at the club boss, showing a pale smile.

"Better for the former you." Said Luo Qiu.

Zhao Ru shook her head, "It is still the same now."

Boss Luo boss reminded, "Time is short, once your protection time is up, you will return to your original situation."

Zhao Ru said, "I have nothing. What can I buy with my impaired soul?"

Boss Luo said, "A bit of life, some small wishes, wealth, wisdom

or something else. Of course, some interesting tools are also available. May I know what do you want?"

Zhao Ru thought for a moment and smiled, "Wealth."

Chapter 386: Relic

Abruptly, a horrible voice full of terror rang out.

It was the man's voice, the one who wore a pair of glasses standing next to the bus stop.

He pressed his head heavily, letting out a roar, as if seeing something fearful.

"Ah!!! Ah!!! Don't come over!! Don't come!!!"

The man squatted down with a pale face, body shivered with fear.

"Sir? Are you ok?"

A kind passer-by came and patted his shoulder. Soon, this place was surrounded by onlookers because of his scream.

"Sir?"

"Don't come over!! Get out here!!"

He shoved the passer-by's arm, rolling and crawling out of the crowd.

The man bumped into pedestrians again and again.

Nobody knew what he witnessed that got him so fearful.

"What happened here?"

While the crowd was still confused, a person with weird clothing came, asking one onlooker.

It turned out it was a person with a man's voice, but that person had long hair and was in female clothes.

A perverted crossdresser?

"Tell me what happened?!"

"Some weird guy who seemed to be in a lot of pain just ran over there."

"Was he wear a pair of glasses with a mole at the corner of his eye?"

"I don't know if there's a mole, but he wears glass... Oh, man, wait, can I have a photo with you? I don't mind if you are a crossdressing man..."

But this crossdressing freak had rushed out of the crowd.

People left gradually.

"What happened here?"

A middle-aged and big-belly man asked one passer-by.

"Tut, I thought it was the crossdressing man..."

"What are you muttering? Police! Let me ask you, did you see a crossdresser..."

...

...

The man... Cao Yu, was now hiding in a dim alley; he shuddered seriously.

Countless shadows were filled in his sight... but there was only one shadow in reality.

It turned into a person wearing a black robe.

Black Soul No.18 whispered at Cao Yu's ear, with laughter, "You're not necessary in this world... I like torturing magicians, especially watching you become crazy in the abyss of desperation, and despair even more... hahaha..."

"Get out here!! Don't laugh!! don't laugh!!!"

Cao Yu covered his ears hard, but that harsh and terrible laughter resounded clearly in his brain.

Cao Yu then did a crazy thing: he destroyed his eardrums! Just to get rid of the agony brought by the laughter!

Ah---!

He screamed!

"You think you won't hear it that way? No... It'll get even clearer, until you can even see it. More and more and more!"

The laughter could still be heard distinctly.

Black Soul No. 18 showed a twisted smile, "Magician, are you in pain? Despair?... but it's just less than 1/10000 of what I suffered in old days... I swear, I will kill all the magicians that I meet! You could have lived longer and if chose to run away that time, I would not be able to catch you because of my task. But now, you put your neck into the noose, so don't blame me, it's all your luck, hehe..."

"Stop laughing!!"

He almost had a mental breakdown. He only wished to get rid of the nightmare... for this, he was even willing to pay everything he had.

"Oh my god, what a strong wish you have, tut..."

Black Soul No. 18 shook her head, "What a pity. I have countless of merits, but never used my vacations... I used all my merits to strengthen my ability... Isolation! As long as I wish, and as long as you're weaker than me... you'll have no chance to enter the club, tut... You can only watch yourself die in desperation. Take it easy, I'll take 'care' of you."

"Lunatic!! You are a lunatic!!"

"I'll have you see things that make you even more hopeless... Magician, are you ready? Tut..."

"I would never let you be...Ah!!!"

Cao Yu laughed... even if he was in a desperate situation. He knew he couldn't escape from this demon-like witch; and at the same time, he didn't want to continue bearing this hopelessness.

He didn't want her to be satisfied---so he chose to commit suicide!

He stabbed a knife into his heart, sneering while bleeding, "I will...never...let you...be..."

Black Soul No.18 sneered, "Stupid magician, do you think you're completely dead? Look at this!"

Black Soul No.18 opened her black robe, and countless of twisted and despairing faces were filled in it!

Cao Yu lay alongside the wall, slowly falling down. While bleeding, he was approaching the end of his life. However, he didn't understand what those faces meant!

Soul... all of them were souls!

This horrible and crazy witch was torturing these souls every day and night!

"They...are...all...magicians..." Cao Yu felt extremely cold, with a heavy heart.

"Yes, you're right, your reward is..." Magic light emitted from Black Soul No.18's eyes, "becoming one of them, haha..."

She collected her robes, walking to Cao Yu and stretching her hands, ready to press his forehead.

"Put your hands up!"

Wang Yuechuan held his gun up, appearing behind Black Soul No.18... He clearly saw Cao Yu on the ground, as well as the weird person wearing a black robe.

He judged the situation... This black-robe person had probably tortured him seriously!

"Another person that doesn't know death." Black Soul No.18 didn't turn back, because she felt he was not a threat to her.

She didn't want anyone to disturb her 'interest'.

"Put your hands up! And go to the wall!" Wang Yuechuan said calmly, "You'll never escape."

"Do you think you can kill me with a gun? Stupid human!" Black Soul No.18 raised up her arm with head tilted.

A streak of purple light generated on her palm.

At the same time, another pair of footsteps was heard... It was heavy accompanied by heavy breathing.

"F*ck, I've found you... what happened here?"

It was Officer Ma.

He looked around, gun pointed at the black-robe guy, "F*ck, hold still! I'm Ma Houde, a policeman! Now I'm arresting you!"

"OK, I won't move. Don't be too agitated..."

The voice shocked him---It was an old woman's voice.

Not only Officer Ma, Wang Yuechuan was stunned too.

She really obeyed.

Black Soul No.18 had to give in... because of the identity of Ma Houde...

She dared not to hurt Ma Houde.

Black Soul No. 18 glanced at Cao Yu. She couldn't torture him, well, she would just have to let him go after having that meal.

"Go put your hands on the wall!" Ma Houde yowled.

"OK." Black Soul No.18 replied and went to the wall.

But at that moment, she suddenly threw off the robe, and something dropped down. 'Boom!' a mass of smoke appeared.

"F*ck! Aerosol bomb! Officer Wang, don't shoot! Officer Wang, Officer Wang!!"

"Stop shouting, I'm here."

Ma Houde waved to disperse the smoke; he faintly looked at Wang Yuechuan that was kneeling on the ground. After the smoke dispersed, Officer Ma picked up a can.

It was only a common cola can.

"F*ck! Is it the newest smoke screen?" Officer Ma was sure that this was the thing the old woman threw down.

He shook it heavily... but found nothing special.

"Officer Ma, call an ambulance." Wang Yuechuan said quickly.

Ma Houde nodded, looking at the man with a knife stabbed in his heart.

Cao Yu breath was pretty weak, but still revealed a weird smile... as if he relieved.

"Cao Yu! You are Cao Yu, right! Answer me!" Wang Yuechuan asked.

He saw his ears bleed, but he had no time to care these, "Did you tempt those people to commit crimes one year ago? What method did you tell them? And what's your purpose? Tell me!!"

Cao Yu opened his eyes slightly, he couldn't listen to his words... but could guess what Wang Yuechuan said.

"You...found...me..." Cao Yu voice became lower, "The answer... an, swer...You'll... be...the, the next...I... you'll fall...the darkness, darkness will...swallow you..."

As he said this, he looked down to his body.

Following his gaze, Wang Yuechuan felt about Cao Yu's clothes... he found a book.

"What do you mean? What's this? Tell me!" Wang Yuechuan was shocked... at the moment he took this book, his heart beat faster.

"Tell me!!"

He shook Cao Yu's shoulder heavily, but he didn't hear his voice again.

"He's gone."

Ma Houde squatted down and check his breath, and touched his

pulse. He shook his head, "Totally dead."

Officer Ma shuddered suddenly.

Because of the evil smile on this fellow. He might have done some villainous deed before dying.

...

...

The alley was cordoned off; the policeman needed to obtain evidence from Cao Yu's dead body.

Officer Ma took a smoke break before going to Wang Yuechuan. He probably didn't feel too good after hunting that man for more than one year.

Wang Yuechuan was leaning against the wall.

"This is Cao Yu, dead of reason unknown." Ma Houde took this as the subject and opened his mouth, "Who's that old woman? Why did she kill Cao Yu? Do you have any idea? Is there anything that you didn't tell me before?"

It was reasonable for Officer Ma to suspect, because he never knew about such a weird old woman.

After investigating, no neighbors said they ever saw such a black-robe person.

"I have no idea about her." Wang Yuechuan shook his head, "Maybe she was the enemy of Cao Yu. He died from torture. But I'm not sure... Since he is dead, I cannot ask him any longer."

"Oh..." Ma Houde shrugged, and asked suddenly, "What's this?"

In Wang Yuechuan's hand, there was a thick book which was taken from Cao Yu.

"I don't know." Wang Yuechuan shook head as opened this book, "Do you know this language?"

"I only know the 26 alphabets." Ma Houde opened it, "They are

like earthworm words... give me some time, I know several university professors!"

"Then let me do it myself." Wang Yuechuan took it back.

Officer Ma couldn't help but shrug.

Cao Yu was Wang Yuechuan's target, and Zhao Ru's case was under Officer Ma. Now that Zhao Ru had been arrested and was laying in the hospital, Officer Ma had finished his task.

And finally had time to drink the soup his wife cooked.

While Officer Ma was immersing himself in such a wonderful thought, his phone rang.

"What? Zhao Ru disappeared again??"

Chapter 387: Gem Flowers

"I need an explanation!"

Officer Ma spluttered at the policeman when he rushed to the hospital, even though Wang Yuechuan and Lin Feng came along with him.

"Officer Ma, we don't know." The policeman confusedly said, "We saw her being sent into the emergency room, but later, we were told she went missing!"

Ma Houde gave a start then clapped his hands, "Missing, in the emergency room?"

The policeman did the same action as Officer Ma and said, "Missing, in the emergency room."

Officer Ma wordlessly waved his hands, "Flew away?"

The policeman also repeated his action and nodded, "Flew away."

"What the hell! Why don't you tell me she turned into a ghost and went through the wall?"

The policeman hurriedly said, "Is she really a ghost, Officer Ma? So many staff there didn't know how she went missing..."

Ma Houde showed a blank face, "I don't know, what I know is that you won't sleep tonight."

"Why?"

"To look for her! You idiot!" Ma Houde furiously ordered, "Notify everyone on duty to find her!"

"Yes, yes..."

As this policeman was about to run out, Ma Houde added, "Wait a minute. Fully interrogate all the people present at that time."

...

...

The sun still rose and people still had to face a new day.

"Xiaojun, have you packed all your things?" Uncle Mai loudly said to Mai Xiaojun, who was brushing teeth.

Mai Xiaojun vaguely answered in front of a drain, "Yes! I have."

Uncle Mai nodded and massaged his tired waist... He didn't sleep well---the sirens from the police officer's motorcycles woke him up at midnight. He couldn't help but shook his head at their "professionalism".

When he walked out of this alley with Mai Xiaojun, he greeted those people he met as usual.

"Excuse me, are you Uncle Mai?"

Suddenly, someone called him.

Uncle Mai turned around and saw a young man in ordinary clothes. He gave off an impression of stillness, it felt like the world became silent as he stood there.

"Who... are you?" Uncle Mai frowned--- he didn't find any memories of him.

The young man came over and crouched down with smile, "Are you Mai Xiaojun?"

Mai Xiaojun nodded, "But who are you? Are you here to ask my grandfather to pick up garbage?"

The young man smiled, "Maybe later, but not today... I'm here to give you something."

"Giving Xiaojun something?" Uncle Mai was stunned, "Who are you?"

The young man stood up and said, "Well, Uncle Mai. I'm a client from a charitable organization."

"Charitable organization?" Uncle Mai was totally puzzled.

"Yes, a new charitable organization." The young man showed a

card to Uncle Mai, "Our aim is to give poor children an opportunity to study. And Mai Xiaojun is a lucky child."

"Are... Are you kidding?" Uncle Mai suspiciously frowned.

Looking at this card, he thought nothing would come for free... Maybe the young man was a swindler, but what he could get from a shabby old man?

"No, the company has been legally registered and it will expand." The young man lightly said, "If you don't believe, you can go there based on the address... Take his birth certificate and study information, you will get our free help."

"Real...really?" Uncle Mai was surprised.

"Yes. He's very lucky." The young man said, "But we have a small request."

"I have no money!"

"No, no, no." The young man smiled, "You only need to sign a contract to promise that you will spend all these money on his studies. And if the child dies or is unable to continue studying we would hold his guardian accountable."

"No problem!" Uncle Mai nodded, "Absolutely no problem!"

The young man added, "It may not be that much for every semester, but will be enough for all necessary expenses."

Uncle Mai happily nodded, "That's very good. You must have many children to help. How kind you are!"

"I'm just entrusted to tell you about it." The young man shook his head, "The members of the organization are other people... Well, they are now recruiting people, but it won't be a problem."

Uncle Mai didn't understand what he really wanted to say, he just touched the head of Mai Xiaojun, thinking if one day he had left, how would this child survive...

"This is another thing to give you." The young man crouched

down and handed a bag to Mai Xiaojun, "It will come in handy one day."

"Xiaojun, don't take things from strangers." Uncle Mai glared at him. Mai Xiaojun reluctantly gave it back.

Unexpectedly, the young man shook his head and said, "The person left a message for you." Then he whispered in Mai Xiaojun's ear, "Don't eat too much crunchy wafer. And you will meet your parents some day."

When Mai Xiaojun raised his head from surprise, the young man had vanished from his sight.

"Well... gone so fast!" Uncle Mai scratched his head and murmured, "Was he joking?"

Uncle Mai still doubted the kindness of the so-called charitable organization.

"Xiaojun, what did he give you?"

Mai Xiaojun opened the bag and in it was a Xinhua Dictionary in it.

...

After that day, Uncle Mai never saw the young man again. But whenever he collected garbage, he would see the name of the organization--- Gem Flower Fund on the screen. He thought maybe he should go there for a look...

...

...

"Dear customer, please read." Boss Luo put a sheet of paper in front of Zhao Ru.

This detailed contract was very clear. The money belonged to a

legal company and the company would continue.

"Gem Flower Fund... Why this name?"

Looking at the plant on the windowsill, Luo Qiu softly said, "I just named it that, don't you like it?"

"No... no." Zhao Ru lightly shook her head, "It's OK. It's OK."

She suddenly coughed, showing a painful smile. Then she went to the simple but exquisite dresser and sat on the cushion.

Zhao Ru combed her hair, tidied her collar up as usual, and put the light pink lipstick on. Her face became paler, but she didn't powder it.

She sat upright and quietly looked at the mirror. The club boss who was half kneeling behind her could also be seen in it.

"What did you see?"

In the mirror, she could not see herself.

"Can't you see it?" She lightly answered, "Lots of... bright... gem flowers."

She slowly closed her eyes, falling into arms of the club boss with a light smile, which was somehow brightened by the sunlight.

She said before, "It's small, simple with no more than two hours of sunlight every day..."

She had also said, that this place suited her.

Chapter 388: A Blood Bath

"What? Found in a rented house?" In a café near the police station, Subeditor Ren surprisingly asked.

After drinking a sip of coffee, Officer Ma said, "Yes, the house owner found her corpse when he was going to clean up the house."

Ren Ziling thought for a moment while biting the pen in her mouth, "You mean she went to her rented house after she mysteriously disappeared from the emergency room? How could such a seriously injured person get so far away? Didn't the driver suspect her? Or could she walk so far?"

Ma Houde shrugged and said, "It's a mystery."

Ren Ziling nodded and suddenly said, "What did she look like when she died? Was there anything left there? For example, a note?"

Ma Houde shook his head and said, "Nothing. The house was very clean. We don't find any traces, only her lying there in bed with a light smile."

"Well..."

Ma Houde suddenly asked, "Madam Ren, what are you going to write this time?"

"Write what?"

"News! The dead in the rented house is an escapee. All the headlines are discussing this."

Ren Ziling shook her head, "I don't want to write anything."

Ma Houde was astonished.

Ren Ziling turned her eyes, "Now any speculation or discussion about her is a slander. Why should I do that after she died?"

Ma Houde shrugged, "OK... That's it. I'll go back to work. There's

a watchdog in my office."

"You mean Wang Yuechuan?" Ren Ziling nodded, "Why is he still here?"

"How would I know what that big man thinks?" Officer Ma rolled his eyes, "Well, I have to go. See you."

"OK... Bye." Ren Ziling said and lowered her head to pack things and going to leave.

But she suddenly thought of something, "Sh*t! You haven't paid for the information! You miser!"

...

In a small conference room of the police station, Wang Yuechuan was having a video call with his old classmate, who was studying for a doctorate degree at an Australian university.

"Is there any result?" Wang Yuechuan directly asked at the moment.

"Yes, a little." The man nodded, "According to your scans, I've asked someone to translate this kind of Egyptian Language. You can read it first."

A picture was then received. Wang Yuechuan read the content with a frown, "Death opens an eternal door for the soul... What's the meaning of this?"

The man shrugged, "Something like spells? Not very clear... But why do you care about this?"

Wang Yuechuan shook his head, "A criminal left this. And I just want to figure it out."

The man smiled, "You are still the same, so serious about cases... I can't help you much, but I know an excellent professor. He specializes in civilization and history of ancient Egypt."

"Contact information."

"Don't be so eager, I haven't finished." The man shook his head, "He should be in Japan for an academic exchange."

"I'll go there, if necessary." Wang Yuechuan said.

The man couldn't help but smile, "Oh, good for you... I'll give you his phone number later and you can tell him that you are the person I introduced. Perhaps he will be interested in what you're doing."

Wang Yuechuan soon tried to call the professor in Japan.

...

...

Qiang Zi was big on promises. Thanks to Fatty Zhang, he now lived a better life. In return, he would do everything to repay him.

According to the address, Zhou Xiaokun's brother Zhou Xiaopeng had been found.

"Excuse me... Sir, Have I met you before? " Zhou Xiaopeng was scared by wild and strong Qiang Zi, who had a tiger tattooed on his arm.

"Mr. Zhou, don't be afraid, I'm a decent man." Qiang Zi took off his sunglasses and showed a smile, "Are you Mr. Zhou Xiaopeng? And you can call me Qiang Zi."

"I dare not to call you that... Brother Qiang, what can I do for you? "

"Bring me to look for a woman, her name is Tao Xiaman." Qiang Zi directly said.

Zhou Xiaopeng was stunned... because his brother also asked him to investigate this woman...

He quietly took a glance at Qiang Zi's back, seeing a van and four men with outlandish clothes in it... What kind of "decent" were they...

"Excuse me, Brother Qiang, what do you want to do with her?" Zhou Xiaopeng swallowed hard.

"Oh, nothing, my boss wants to do her." Qiang Zi said this, but then he felt it improper, "No, my boss wants to see her... Anyway, take me to find her."

Zhou Xiaopeng was pulled into the van. He held his breath when facing these "decent" men.

"Wow, Brother Qiang, how effeminate he is."

What... What kind of their "decent"!!!

...

"Be serious! Don't laugh!" In the cabin, Tai Yinzi proudly stood with his hands behind him. Fatty Zhang, his two men, Frog and Zhou Xiaokun lined up in front of him.

Tai Yinzi slightly coughed and seriously said, "I'd like to teach you some simple skills. But don't tell others that I'm your teacher!"

"Yes, sir!" They spoke in one voice.

Fatty Zhang strongly nodded... thinking the most important thing was not his teacher but the skills!

Tai Yinzi nodded and went on, "I'll teach you something new. Listen carefully and pay all of your attention to it."

"Yes, sir!" They said.

"Very good, take out the props!" Tai Yinzi now cleared his voice.

Then Zhou Xiaokun showed a dish with a white cloth covered on it. What was in it? The five people were eager to know.

Tai Yinzi now waved his hand hinting at Zhou Xiaokun to return. Then, he slowly lifted the white cloth.

The five were so surprised they forgot to breathe. Fatty Zhang suddenly said, "It's... a pen? Apple? Pineapple?"

"Yes!" Tai Yinzi loudly shouted, turning around with the pen and

singing with funny dance, "I/have/a/pen..."

...

Since that day, the song, PPAP, went around within the jail...

Chapter 389: Revisiting Hometown

"Lunch? Oh... It's too late. OK, OK, I'll eat when I'm hungry. You have a meeting with someone? I see, I see." Tao Xiaman hung up the phone and kept strolling.

Strolling in this city.

As a shutterbug on a rare holiday, how could she not move her camera?

Photos could keep memories that time couldn't. Her photography hobby was a good way for her to remove her bad and irritable mood at the moment.

She sat on the bus, feeling that those buildings and passers-byes caught-on-camera were no longer the same as those in her memories.

When the tour bus called out the stop, Tao Xiaman got off. She unexpectedly hesitated when she saw the signpost "Jihua Road".

Back here again--- the place she had once lived... Tao Xiaman shook her head.

Here, was her hometown...

Tao Xiaman walked in this old street without taking many pictures. Even if this was the place within her memories, many new buildings had appeared. Many things weren't the way they had been before.

She stopped in front of a noodle restaurant.

"-Dad, I want shaved noodles and a lot of toppings."

"Shaved noodles are shaved noodles. Topping noodles are topping noodles. They are separate."

"I don't care, I want it. Can I?"

"- OK. OK."

Cheerful laughter and chatter from her memories seemed to be heard now. And many past scenes also appeared...

She felt a bit nostalgic about what she saw. But she just took a picture instead of walking forward.

"Don't you want to go inside?"

Tao Xiaman turned around and saw a younger man in casual clothes--- looking like a college student around 20.

She suddenly realized she was in his way---the noodle restaurant was too small.

"Sorry." Tao Xiaman said and made way.

The young man nodded and walked in with a smile. Tao Xiaman was struck by a sudden urge and just followed. Then, she heard his conversation with the white-hair shop boss...

"It's you again, boy. Same as before? "

"Yes, please."

"Well! Take a seat and wait a minute!" The white-hair boss said and then shouted to the kitchen, "One topping noodles, one shaved noodles with toppings! Take-out!"

The young man sat on a stool and began to read a book with a bookmark in it.

Tao Xiaman looked at the amusing scene.

She rarely saw such quiet young people nowadays. Someone who wouldn't use their phone while , read a book.

There was even a bookmark. He really must love reading.

"Why do you put toppings on the shaved noodles?"

She sat down in front of the young man. The restaurant was deserted with only 4-5 customers during lunch time.

"Is there a problem?" The young man slightly raised his head and answered without any surprise.

Tao Xiaman shook her head, "No, I'm just curious. Sorry about that... Oh, hello, my name is Tao Xiaman, a photographer."

"Hello." The young man nodded.

What a simple self-introduction! But only this made Tao Xiaman feel even better.

She asked, "Do...you come here often?"

The young man nodded, "Recently."

She went on, "Do you live here?"

The young man shook his head, "No."

Tao Xiaman smiled, "Not living around here but still come all the way to eat. So you must like the taste here?"

The young man also showed a smile, "I am just buying it for my friend... He often works too hard and forgets to eat."

Tao Xiaman nodded, "You're so kind."

The young man didn't say anything but smiled. The shop boss came to him and said, "Hey, boy, here are your noodles!"

The young man paid the money and stood up. Before he left, he glanced at Tao Xiaman and said, "My friend will eat topping noodles no matter if they taste good or not."

How strange!

...

Tao Xiaman didn't know the name of the young man. This encounter was not a romantic meeting since she had a fiancé, but this was really a wonderful episode in her life.

"What do you want to eat, girl?"

However, the boss of the noodle shop still stood in front of her.

Tao Xiaman, who had already sat down, decided to eat here to avoid any awkwardness.

She thought for a moment with her head lowered and looked at the chopsticks tube on the table, "Shaved noodles with toppings."

"OK!"

...

After leaving the noodle restaurant, Tao Xiaman passed through the house she'd lived. She wanted to go and look at it, but the passers-byes banished the impulse, leaving her with a hint of melancholy.

She looked up at it, taking a deep breath, and walked away.

The shaved noodles with toppings were still delicious, but this may be the last time for her to taste it.

Because she didn't know if the noodle shop would still be there when she passed by in again in the future.

When she was about to walk out of the old street, Tao Xiaman saw her primary school classmate, who was fatter than before, walking through an ice cream stall with her four or five year-old son...

Her classmate did not recognize her and just walked away. Tao Xiaman thought maybe she should greet her, but her memories seemed to keep returning to that noodle shop, and she did not want to lose that sense of nostalgia.

She hoped time would remove all of her pain and memories.

This was Tao Xiaman revisiting her hometown.

...

But Tao Xiaman never dreamed what would happen later.

"Are you Tao Xiaman?"

A very tall man with sunglasses and tattoos---Qiang Zi bumped into her in front of her old house.

Chapter 390: Kidnapping

"What? Kidnapped?!!" In the office, Officer Lin pounded the table and jumped to his feet.

"Yes, Officer Lin, a man just reported a kidnapping case."

Lin Feng frowned. As a replacement for Officer Ma who was out having fun, Officer Lin also had a hard time tearing himself away from the Minesweeper game. He reluctantly looked away from the computer... And seriously asked, "Where's the person?"

The policeman answered, "Outside."

...

"Mr. Zhou Zihao, right?" After reading the information, Officer Lin looked at the young man.

Overseas Chinese, graduated from a prestigious university, came back for a wedding... Well, no problem.

Fiancée was kidnapped, uh... that's the problem!

"Mr. Zhou, would you please tell me what happened?" Officer Lin solemnly asked.

Zhou Zihao nodded and said anxiously, "In a distance, I saw my fiancée arguing with a man downstairs of her house. Then, the man pulled my fiancée into a van. I didn't manage to catch up to them. Until now, I still can't get in touch with her."

"Do you remember the number plates?" Officer Lin asked.

Zhou Zihao quickly said, "I wrote it and gave it to this officer."

Officer Lin gave a grunt and continued, "Maybe they knew each other... Oh, you are coming back for the wedding, is the man her former lover? Turning from love to hate?"

"Officer, why don't you write love stories?" Zhou Zihao frowned, "I met my fiancée in foreign college. She lived abroad since she was

a child. How ridiculous your speculation is!"

Officer Lin covered his anger with a smile, "We won't ignore any questionable points. Please understand... You said she just came back to China, then was there anything unusual with her recently?"

"No." Zhou Zihao shook his head.

"Have you received any message from the kidnapper?"

"No." Zhou Zi Hao thought for a while and said, "Not yet."

At this time, a policeman came in. "Officer Lin, the van has been found. The owner is Long Qiang, his nickname is Qiang Zi. He has criminal records. Now, he is a labor contractor and this is his photo."

"Mr. Zhou, is he the man?" Officer Lin put the photo in front of Zhou Zihao.

Zhou Zihao said, "Yes! Officer, it's him!"

Officer Lin slammed the table and sternly said, "Go and catch him!"

...

...

It would take more than an hour to go to the jail, which was about 100 kilometers away.

Qiang Zi was driving this woman as quickly as possible there to meet Fatty Zhang--- Because if the given visiting time was missed, they must wait till evening. It would be a troublesome thing to send her back by today then!

"What have you done! What kind of work are you doing? Where's the petrol I told you to fill up!"

"Sir, you didn't tell me how far you'll drive... And I didn't know there will be no gas station all the way."

"Didn't I tell you I'm going to the prison?" Qiang Zi said in surprise, rubbing his head, "I didn't?"

"No..."

"F*ck! I forgot again! "

Qiang Zi hardly clapped his head and looked at the desolate place.

"What shall we do now?" the man asked.

"Who knows!" Qiang Zi opened the trunk with frustration and saw a surprising scene--- Zhao Ru's hands and feet were tied with plastic bands and her mouth was sealed; she was crying. He said with panic, "Oh, shit... What have you done?!"

"This... sir, didn't you say she was too noisy?" The man shrugged, "I just used the tools in this car..."

"Damn it, set her free!" Qiang Zi hit the man's back, "We're decent men."

Qiang Zi came to Tao Xiaman with a smile, "Miss, please forgive his rudeness... I'll undo it for you. It might be a bit painful, just hold still..." Unexpectedly, when he tore off the tape, his hand was deeply bitten.

He instinctively pushed the woman away and shouted, "Damn it! You bit me!"

"This is kidnapping! You'd better let me go!"

"Miss! I've told you, I am just taking you to meet my boss, Fatty Zhang!"

Qiang Zi went on, "Please rest assured. I'll pay for everything... Everyone will be happy, right?"

"I don't know who Fatty Zhang is and I'm not a whore!" Tao Xiaman said angrily.

This man brought a few others and appeared suddenly, saying that she was requested to sleep with someone.

Qiang Zi said, "OK. Anyway, my boss knows you. And he wants you, so please be quiet!... We'll give you enough money."

Then he suddenly came close to her, "Don't be afraid, my boss is very skillful... And maybe someday we'll meet in a brothel... Oh, sh*t! Don't bite my ear... It hurts... Ouch!"

"Kidnapping! Help! Help!!!!" Tao Xiaman screamed.

"Sir, what should we do?"

"Don't ask me... I'm in pain." Qiang Zi rubbed his ear, "My ear is bleeding... What a crazy woman... Be quiet! Seal her mouth!"

"Help!!! Help... ooh!!!!"

Seeing she was quiet, Qiang Zi walked to a tree and sat down, "Give me some water, I want to wash my ear... Go! Call them to send some gas! Do you want to stay here tonight?"

"Yes, sir!"

...

"Sh*t, so many mosquitoes here!" Qiang Zi forcefully clapped the air... What lousy luck!

Pah---!

The "pah" sound surprised him and he subconsciously said, "What are you doing?"

"To slap mosquitoes for you, sir."

"So many people here? One, two, three, four?" Qiang Zi was now wordless.

"Sir... The air-conditioner isn't working, we come forth to get some air."

Qiang Zi rolled his eyes, "Then who is keeping an eye on that woman?"

His men shrugged, "She is tied up and can't run away... This woman doesn't seem to be a whore, have we made a mistake?"

Qiang Zi scratched his head and subconsciously nodded his head, "I also feel it a little strange... Oh, no! I forget what the boss said... I have to ask again."

While saying that, Qiang Zi went toward the vehicle. The only problem was, when he approached the van... Tao Xiaman had vanished.

Obviously, she had broken through the plastic straps by rubbing them against some steel tools in the van when they came forth to get some air...

Then secretly ran away.

Chapter 391: Unexpected Consequences

"Boss, what should we do next?"

One of the workers asked in a Sichuan accent.

"I don't know!" Qiang Zi scratched his head and commanded. "You, you, you, and you, go search the surroundings."

These workers started searching, leaving Qiang Zi sitting there alone... Anyhow, he was their head. He wouldn't degrade himself by working with them.

"Sh*t, what f*cking place is this... I am dying of thirst."

Suddenly, Qiang Zi heard something vibrating... He found a cell phone under the seat of the van.

The screen showed the caller was "Zihao".

"Maybe that woman dropped it here?" Long Qiang answered the phone.

"Xiaman! Xiaman! Is this Xiaman on the phone?"

"Wait, this is not Xiaman." Long Qiang dug his nose, "Who is that?"

"Who...is that?" Zhou Zihao sounded hurriedly. "Don't hurt Xiaman, I can give everything you want! Or I will make you regret."

"What are you talking about?" Qiang Zi was stunned. "She was the one that injured me. Sh*t, are you her boyfriend?"

"Yes." Zhou Zihao got serious, "Deal with me directly, don't bully her."

"Who do you think you are!" Qiang Zi got angry, too. "F*ck, if you don't pay for my medical expenses... I will bite her ears off!"

"Okay, okay! Easy there. You can name a price!" Zhou Zihao was terrified.

"Hold on..." Qiang Zi's phone rang at that time.

He muted Tao Xiaman's phone and answered his own, "Hello, Wu Tiaozi, why haven't you send the gas to me?"

"Head, Boss Wang needs us to load some cement urgently, can you wait for a moment, please?"

"Sh*t!"

"No choice. The construction crew is urging is to hurry. You know that!"

"Fine, I will think of another idea!" Qiang Zi frowned and hung up the phone unhappily. And he continued the other phone, "Hello, still there?"

"I am here!"

"All right!" Qiang Zi continued, "You send a barrel of gas to... the road to Zhaoyun Prison. And then you can see me on the way!"

"Fine. When?" Zhou Zihao asked immediately.

Qiang Zi looked at the rear view mirror while pulling his nose hair. "Of course now. Send it now. If you can't arrive before evening, I will... make you regret it!"

"Okay. I will. But how much... do you want?"

"Are you an idiot? I said a barrel of gas. It must be filled up!"

"But... I mean the compensation money..."

"Oh, I almost forget it." Qiang Zi rubbed his ears and said, "Maybe thousands or hundreds RMB?"

"What... is the specific price?"

"Eight hundred. Lucky number!" Qiang Zi ended up the conversation, "Alright! You act quickly! I can't wait for you very long."

He hung up!

Long Qiang whispered to himself after the call, "Is eight hundred RMB too little? Fine, let me have a nap first..."

...

Zhou Zihao held the phone tightly and rushed into Officer Lin's office.

"Mr. Zhou. Take it easy. We will inform you once we find Long Qiang's house."

"No, I was contacted by the kidnapper via phone just now!"

"Continue!" Officer Lin got serious.

Zhou Zihao nodded and added, "Sir, they were on the way to Zhaoyun Prison and they requested eight million in a gasoline barrel."

"A road deal? Eight million?" Officer Lin was stunned, "What are they thinking about? It's silly to run away with money from the highway."

"Sir, the key is my fiancee's safety, okay?" Zhou Zihao continued, "That guy also said he would bite her ears off if no money is provided!"

"Bite?" Lin Feng nodded, "Er...It seems he is pretty violent... And did he know you called the police?"

"I think... not." Zhou Zihao recalled, "He didn't mention about this."

"Mr. Zhou, did he command you to send the money?"

"Yes, he asked me to send it directly."

Lin Feng wandered into the office. "Don't worry, he must be well prepared. Let's calm down and make a perfect plan."

Zhou Zihao frowned, "I need to go to the bank first."

"Mr. Zhou, we suggest you'd better not. This will make these kidnappers rampant!"

"That's your business! I care for my fiancee only!" Zhou Zihao stared at Lin Feng and called the bank regardless of his words.

"Hello, Stephen. Help to prepare eight million for me. Yes, now..."

...

...

Old Feng stopped.

He was not going to have a cup of water but merely let out a breath with a pleased smile.

"Finished?" Luo Qiu asked.

Old Feng had gotten used to his companionship.

Luo Qiu never got tired of his stories. He was enjoying these stories without asking a word.

As for Old Feng, telling stories made him more energetic and he got more efficient with Luo Qiu's companionship.

Old Feng felt amazed.

"I haven't finished yet."

Old Feng laughed, "Many details need to be adjusted. And the fitting needs time, too."

"It is a wonderful work in such a short time."Luo Qiu bowed. He said, "May I touch it?"

"Er?" Old Feng agreed after a pause, "Yes, you can."

Every stitch of this dress was full of love and beautiful memories of a father. Every pattern contained best wishes to his daughter.

The club owner closed his eyes while touching the dress. It was full of spirit.

"This is a real treasure which I rarely met." Luo Qiu withdrew his

hands.

Old Feng smiled. This wedding dress was a significant work for him.

Every craftsman was willing to hear such praises.

"Do you know?" Old Feng raised the dress lightly, "I want Xiaman to try it now."

"You can try to contact her."

Luo Qiu provided his phone, "Call her now. Nobody can trace this phone number."

Old Feng was surprised... He believed what Luo Qiu said, even if he was a little mysterious.

"Hello, is that Mr. Zhou?"

"Who... are you? I am on the way with ransom money. Don't hurt Xiaman, please!"

Old Feng was shocked, "Wait, this is Master Zhou, the one who made the wedding dress. Where are you going and what are you talking about?"

"Master Zhou? Sorry... I am too nervous."

"Ransom money?"

"Nothing. Master Zhou, I will contact you when I am available."

"Hello? Hello?"

Old Feng called back in a hurry. But Zhou Zihao refused to accept. Old Feng looked at Luo Qiu anxiously. "What... happened to my daughter?"

Luo Qiu waved his hands and turned back.

He closed his eyes while frowning.

A while later, he told Old Feng in an apologetic tone, "I know what happened. I am sorry that something unexpected happened."

"What's that? Did you hurt my daughter..." Old Feng's eyes became sharp.

Luo Qiu shook his head and explained, "No. Xiaman is safe now. I will go help find her free of charge. Please rest assured."

Chapter 392: Time for Poetry

"I cast my gaze toward the moon, yet the moon shines on the gutter... Oh God."

With such heartfelt words, obviously it wouldn't be Fatty Zhang or the rest who would recite it. Tai Yinzi stood at the iron window and lovingly recited the poem.

"Hi... Brother Zhou, what's the master doing?" Fatty Zhang lightly patted Zhou Xiaokun's shoulder and curiously asked.

"He's reciting a poem." Zhou Xiaokun also softly followed, "I cast my gaze toward the moon, yet the moon shines on the gutter. What a pity!"

"I know it's a poem, but what does it really mean?"

Zhou Xiaokun shrugged, "I like you, but you don't like me. Plus his wife died, so... maybe he is thinking of his daughter."

"Well! Why doesn't he speak frankly!"

Fatty Zhang rolled his eyes at Zhou Xiaokun. Then he put on a pleasing smile and approached Tai Yinzi, "Master!"

"Don't call me master. I cannot accept any disciples unless my master agrees!"

"Master Feng." Fatty Zhang went on, "Actually, you don't have to mourn, happy things are going to happen."

"What?" Tai Yinzi turned around and looked at him in surprise.

Fatty Zhang blinked his eyes, "Master Feng, did you forget what the date is today?"

"Today? Anything special?"

"Yes, today is special!" Fatty Zhang cheerfully said, "Believe me, Master Feng, I've arranged it well!"

Was this person the type that Boss Luo would call.... retarded?

Tai Yinzi frowned, "What the hell? Arranged what?"

"Hey! You'll see. Please wait!"

Fatty Zhang laughed, patting his chest, "Don't thank me. That's my duty. I'm loyal to you! Of course, if you really want to thank me, it is not like there isn't anything you can do. I am not good at anything, but I am a man that treats brotherhood very seriously."

Slapping his chest hard, Fatty Zhang said, "Those of us that walk the in the underworld place the greatest value on brotherhood. Furthermore, you are our future master. Your matters are my matters!"

"What are you trying to say?"

"Hey, surprise! Please wait!" Fatty Zhang patted the shoulder of Tai Yinzi, "The guard will call for you!"

What a ridiculous guy!

Tai Yinzi reluctantly shook his head and recited the poem again, thinking of the time he could get out of this jail--- The concert of "Germanic Chariot" was nearing...

A sense of foreboding suddenly gave Tai Yinzi a shiver.

...

...

Long Qiang had been stuck in this desolate road for several hours. He shook his head and muttered, "Sh*t!". Then he saw his men come back.

"Where is she?" Long Qiang asked.

"Sir, we can't find her! She must be hiding!"

"Sh*t! What am I supposed to tell her fiancé!" Long Qiang brushed his hair with frustration.

"What do you mean?"

Long Qiang explained, "This is her phone. I answered a call from

her fiancé. And I asked him to send some petrol over."

"Did he agree?"

"Yes." Long Qiang shrugged, "And he said he will pay for the medical expenses."

"He's so kind, sir!"

Long Qiang suddenly knocked his head and fiercely said, "What so kind! Why don't you kindly find her... Oh, God damn it, there's the phone again!!"

Qiang Zi asked in a panic, "What... what should I say?"

The man's feverish and excited mind hurriedly suggested, "Tell him he'll see her if he comes with petrol. Maybe this woman will come back when she's hungry."

"Well, not bad." Long Qiang nodded, "I will tell him that!"

"Go ahead, sir!"

Long Qiang cleared his voice, "Hello...Yes, it's me! Where's my petrol? Good... Your fiancée? You'll see her when you come! Don't talk nonsense! Hurry up!"

Long Qiang hung up the phone and asked, "How... how did I do?"

The man immediately thumbed up, "Nice!"

Long Qiang smiled, "I also think so! My ability to bluff is marvelous!"

...

"Officer Lin, we've reached the location of Tao Xiaman." On the outer ring road, a policeman showed the computer in the commercial vehicle, "And they don't notice us."

Lin Feng nodded and looked at Zhou Zihao who was nervously holding two bags of cash, solemnly saying, "Mr. Zhou, just go and take these cash for the moment. We will protect you. But please wear this bulletproof vest for the safety."

"OK." Zhou Zihao heavily nodded, "But Officer Lin, be sure to keep my fiancée's safety first!"

"Trust me, we'll rescue her in safety." Then Lin Feng went off and seriously ordered, "Fall in!"

When all of the policemen lined in front of him, he loudly said, "Please get ready and arm yourself well in case of dangerous weapons, even with guns... And you, give me one bulletproof vest..."

Chapter 393: Mistake and Compensation

Weeds had swallowed up one side of the muddy road. And the undeveloped woodland was on the other side.

"Sir, NO. 1 locked on the black target."

"Sir, NO. 2 locked on the white target."

"Sir, NO. 3 locked on...."

...

"Sir, five male targets acquired. Snipers, await for your orders!"

"Sir, the raid unit awaits your orders!"

In the police car hidden behind the trees not far from the van, Officer Lin listened to the headset and asked, "How about the drone's mapping?"

"Officer Lin, the drone shows five men with no weapons. And one is Long Qiang. Initially speculation is that the hostage is hidden in the van."

Lin Feng nodded and touched the screen, "Attention please! Weapons may be in the car! Please be ready for the rescue! And be sure to put the hostage's safety first!"

"Don't worry, Officer Lin, we are all equipped with low-speed rubber bullets," said a policeman.

Officer Lin took a deep breath, put on the bullet proof coat, and hid in Zhou Zihao's car with him.

This SUV was enough for the two to hide. Then Officer Lin whispered, "Mr. Zhou, if you see any weapons, please get down at the first instance."

"Yes, yes." Zhou Zihao nervously took a deep breath.

Officer Lin thought for a while and suddenly pulled one grenade out, "Take this, just in case."

"This..."

"Stun grenade, non-lethal object. But it can blind people. It's very easy to use, just pull it and throw it out, but remember to protect your eyes and cover your ears."

Zhou Zihao calmed himself down and gently took it.

Lin Feng now sternly said, "Then, move out!"

...

...

"Sir, why have we still not seen that man? Can we trust a whore's fiancé? Well, should I call the workers to check if the cement is done?"

"You ask me, I ask who?" Qiang Zi fanned himself with his hand, "Well, you'd better ask the workers... Oh, a car is coming!"

Long Qiang waved his hand and his men who were sitting on the roadside all stood up.

A black SUV came to them and stopped at three meters away from the van. Then a refined young man got off.

"Sir, what a nice car this gigolo has!" A man whispered, "His clothes look good... Maybe he is kept by that woman ..."

"Sh*t, good-for-nothing gigolos!" One man spat.

"Come on! It's none of your business!" Long Qiang knocked at the heads of this two men and walked towards Zhou Zihao, but noticed Zhou Zihao nervously retreating...

Long Qiang frowned and asked, "Are you that guy who just called us?"

Zhou Zihao lightly said, "Yes, I am... Where's Xiaman? I want to see her!"

Long Qiang waved his hand and said, "Don't worry, where's my petrol?"

"In, in the car." Zhou Zihao said, "But... Let me see Xiaman first, then I'll give you."

"Damn it! Don't mention that b*tch!" Long Qiang suddenly scolded.

Zhou Zihao was frightened, "What... What did you do to her?"

"You should ask what she did to me!" Long Qiang pointed to his ear, "She bit me! Shit! I'm not a fan of SM... If not for the fact my boss wanted her, I would have never taken her!"

Officer Lin listened in the car and whispered, "Boss? They have a boss... Attention, everybody! The leader could be in the car."

"Yes, sir!"

But Zhou Zihao got angry---he fiercely seized Long Qiang's collar and said, "You! What did you say? You bastard! What you did to her!!!"

"Mr. Zhou, please keep calm!" Lin Feng hurriedly reminded through the headset.

But Zhou Zihao yelled and pulled the grenade, "Go to the hell! Ah!!!!!!!!!"

Bang -!!! Long Qiang and his men fainted by the road.

Lin Feng bit his teeth, "The situation changed! Raid unit, go!"

"Yes, sir!"

At the same time, Lin Feng kicked the door open and slowly came to the van with guns, eight raid unit members with LS2 assault rifles also followed him and were well prepared.

A policeman hurriedly took Zhou Zihao away, and another three raid unit members aimed at Long Qiang and his men with guns.

When Long Qiang gradually recovered from the dizziness---He patted his head and said, "Oh, sh*t! Is this a movie?"

However, the dark gun barrels scared the utter hell out of him.

Let alone watching those raid unit members armed to the teeth.

Why did the situation change after just hearing a bang?

"Sh*t! What happened? Have I... come to another world? How ridiculous!"

At this point, a raid unit member suddenly opened the door of the van and said, "Officer Lin, it's empty. No man, no weapons!"

"Empty?" Lin Feng was surprised.

...

...

Luo Qiu now looked at the beach.

"What was that sound just now?" Lao Feng nervously looked at the boss and asked.

He didn't know how he came here from his home in just a moment. Just like before, when he was transported out of the prison. however, he never doubted the boss's ability.

Boss Luo shook his head with dislike and lightly said, "Nothing, just a joke."

He suddenly pointed to the front, "Your daughter is there, behind that stone."

Lao Feng was overjoyed; he hurriedly went to the stone and saw the fainted Tao Xiaman leaning against the stone.

She was soaked, with half her body submerged in the water.

"Xiaman! Xiaman!" Old Feng hastily pulled his daughter up and anxiously cried, "What happened to my daughter?!"

"Miss Xiaman just fell down and fainted." Luo Qiu pointed to a slope near the river, "The current brought her here. Don't worry, she's not in danger, she just fainted."

Old Feng was relieved. He was about to say something, but the scene in front of him suddenly changed with a wave of the club

boss's hand.

This place seemed to be a cave.

He subconsciously looked around and felt calm when he saw his daughter was still here. Puzzled, he asked, "Why did you bring us here?"

Luo Qiu slowly said, "Well, Mr. Feng, I'm going to deal with some things. Now, you can just take a rest and have a good talk with your daughter... It's a really rare chance."

At this moment, Old Feng clearly felt Tao Xiaman was going to wake up. He quickly said, "No, no! I can't let her know about me now!"

"Don't worry! Miss Xiaman can't see anything for the time being."

"What do you mean?"

Boss Luo was leaving, "Mr. Feng, sorry for causing trouble for you and your daughter... We've made a mistake and this is our compensation."

Then, he vanished.

...

Old Feng was shocked. Then he heard Tao Xiaman weakly and alarmingly cried, "Who... Who's there... My eyes! It's so dark here..."

Old Feng subconsciously waved his hand in front of Tao Xiaman---This cave was dark, but it wasn't that dim until one couldn't see anything.

Was she temporarily blinded?

Chapter 394: Lose

Long Qiang crouched down on the ground with his hands on head... This had happened to him before, but this time it was submachine guns, rather than police batons, which were pointed at him.

Long Qiang said, "Officer! It's not a kidnapping! To be honest, I am just inviting her to go to the prison. I'm really not a kidnapper."

"Officer Lin, Long Qiang has actually visited a guy named Fatty Zhang in the prison many times," said a policeman.

Lin Feng was puzzled... Was this just a joke? How embarrassing it would be if Officer Ma knew that?!

He frowned and gave a shudder, then knocked Long Qiang's head forcefully, "Not a kidnapping? Then why did you force her on your car?"

"This... Well, I thought she pretended to be pure to get more money. And I didn't have time to wait for her and listen to her blatter about.."

Lin Feng groaned, "Don't talk b*llshit."

"Officer, you are wronging me!" Long Qiang bitterly said, "If I kidnapped her, why would I chose this god-forsaken place?"

"But her fiancé said the ransom demand was eight million! Don't go back on your word!"

Long Qiang was stunned, "What? I just said eight hundred."

"Eight hundred?" Lin Feng surprisingly showed the number with his fingers.

"Yes, eight hundred! And it was just for the medical expenses since she bit my ear..." Long Qiang miserably said, "Officer, You really are wronging me! If you don't believe me, you can ask Fatty Zhang. It's him who asked me to bring this woman there."

...

"Officer Lin, what should we do now?" A policeman came and asked.

Lin Feng looked at the sky and suddenly said, "How is Zhou Zihao?"

"He is resting in the car." The policeman went on, "If what Long Qiang said is true, shall we ask the search team to find Tao Xiaoman?"

"Go ahead." Lin Feng nodded, "And you go and bring Fatty Zhang here. I'll confront him with Long Qiang."

"Yes, sir!"

...

...

"Where am I? Is anybody here?" Tao Xiaman shuddered with fear and said with a tremble in the cold cave... Her clothes were soaked through and her face was pale.

"Please... Please wear this coat first." Old Feng sighed, taking off his coat.

"Don't come to me, who are you... Where I am? " Tao Xiaman quickly stood up, but the sharp pain from her feet made her fall down to the ground all of a sudden.

Old Feng hurriedly held her up, "You've twisted your ankle. Don't move!"

And he whispered, "Don't be afraid. I'm not a bad guy. I'm just living nearby. And I pulled you up when I was fishing."

Tao Xiaman thought for a while and asked, "You...you saved me?"

"Yes, I did." Old Feng sighed, "Please rest assured. I'm just an old

man... If you don't believe, you can touch my hand."

Gently holding her hand, he continued, "Touch my hands or face as you like. I'm weaker than you."

The wrinkled hands were dry and skinny, and the face was rough with stubble.

"Put on this coat. Don't get cold." Seeing Xiaman calm down, Old Feng whispered, "I'll make a fire to warm you."

"Thank you..." Tao Xiaman nodded. Though her reason warned her not to trust this old man, a familiar peaceful feeling from touching the hand was spreading in her heart, which made her feel warm... This was really a strange but wonderful feeling.

"My pleasure." Old Feng looked around but found nothing that could start a fire. He walked out of the cave and unexpectedly saw a bunch of withered branches and some dry leaves...along with a lighter nearby.

Perhaps these were prepared earlier by the club boss... But why did he do this and leave them here? Old Feng didn't believe that it would require an effort for the boss to send him back along with Tao Xiaman, yet, he and Tao Xiaman was left in this place.

Old Feng wasn't sure what was the boss thinking but he was now experiencing a complex range of emotions.

However, for him to bring a blinded Tao Xiaman to leave this place was a little too hard.

The sky and turned totally dark. To go out of this empty and desolate place with an injured Tao Xiaman was difficult and even dangerous for him.

While the burning firewood was crackling and the heat was spreading to Tao Xiaoman's feet, she subconsciously asked, "Excuse me, have you already made a fire? Why is it still so dark?"

"Yes, you can come closer."

"But... But why can't I still see anything?

Old Feng thought for a while and said, "Have you hurt your head? You really can't see anything?"

Tao Xiaman subconsciously touched her painful head..."I can't see...I can't see...How could I..."

Looking at panicked Tao Xiaman, Old Feng quickly comforted her, "Don't worry, girl. Maybe only the swelling is temporarily pressing down on your optic nerve. Don't be afraid. I will be here with you. Don't be afraid! "

This "Don't be afraid" really comforted Tiao Xiaman as she quietly sat there with her knees bent and hands held together. Then, everything became quiet except for the crackling firewood.

"Excuse me, are you still there?" Tao Xiaman asked with hesitation.

"Yes, I am here!"

"I... I'm a little scared. Can you talk about something with me?" Tao Xiaman bitterly smiled, "Your voice somehow makes me feel relieved."

"Really?" Old Feng felt sad, quietly breaking the branch and throwing it into the fire.

"Yes. And where are we?"

"Oh, we're just in a village." Old Feng thought, "I have lived here since I was a child."

"Have you ever gone out of here?" Tao Xiaman surprisingly asked.

Old Feng shook his head and sighed, "I don't want to go anywhere. What's more, I have nowhere to go."

"Why do you say that?" Tao Xiaman curiously asked, "How about your family?"

"Family?" Old Feng kept silent for a while and whispered, "My wife is gone and my daughter, I haven't seen her for a long time."

Tao Xiaman hurriedly said, "I'm sorry."

"That's OK." Old Feng shook his head, looking at Tao Xiaman under the firelight, he couldn't help but think of his wife...

"Excuse me? Excuse me? Are you still there?" Tao Xiaman hastily stretched out her hand.

"Yes, I am here." Old Feng hurriedly answered, "Don't be afraid, girl. You just sit here for a while. I'll go and pick you some fruits."

"No, thanks. I'm not hungry...Where, where are you going?"

Hearing the footsteps vanish, Tao Xiaman subconsciously curled up like a lost and helpless child.

She lost her sight and even injured her leg, How could she not be afraid?

She never dreamed she would experience this once again--- when she was a child, she'd lost her way home when she played outside with her playmates...

She slowly closed her eyes---this time, who would come and find her?

Dad.

Chapter 395: Rising Fog

Old Feng usually waited for the visiting hours alone or accompanied by Zhou Xiaokun, but this time he was followed by several inmates.

"Oi! Haven't you eaten? Harder!"

Old Feng---Tai Yinzi now was leisurely enjoying the massage from an inmate.

"Why did you stop?" Tai Yinzi suddenly opened his eyes. Just as he was about to scold the inmate, he fell off the stool. Then he quickly stood up and courteously said, "Miss You Ye, my apologies for being unable to greet you."

Miss Maid smiled, "Tai Yinzi, I have been researching the Eastern Cultures. In this situation, you must be a local emperor? Enjoying the life here?"

"I..." Tai Yinzi embarrassedly glanced at the motionless inmate and explained with cold sweat, "Miss You Ye, don't get me wrong! They are just good at flattery. I'm really loyal to master...Trust me!"

You Ye lightly said, "Well, then solve the problem well and remember not to talk nonsense and waste the resources."

"Yes, yes..." Tai Yinzi nodded, but then he suddenly looked up and asked, "What's the meaning of wasting resources?"

Miss Maid smiled with her eyes narrowed, "Tai Yinzi, did you know Master is in bad mood?"

Tai Yinzi was astonished, "Miss You Ye, what...what happened?"

Miss Maid lightly answered, "You can ask your good disciple."

"My disciple?" Tai Yinzi was stunned and carefully asked, "Which one?"

"Do you have many disciple?" You Ye asked back.

Tai Yinzi instantly shook his head, "No! I don't have any disciple! You're mistaken!"

"In order to flatter you, Fatty Zhang has kidnapped Tao Xiaman to meet you."

"Well..." Tai Yinzi nodded and smoothed his chin, "Fatty Zhang is really good-hearted. Great." But then he dramatically changed his face from a sudden reaction, "Oh, sh*t!"

...

At night, tents were set up on the road. The search team was doing an exhaustive search, even the helicopters were used for it.

At that moment, two cars appeared. Officer Lin hurriedly came over with bread in his mouth, "Why did you bring so many guys? And where's Fatty Zhang?"

The policeman took Lin Feng a step forward and whispered, "Officer Lin, you must be prepared for this..."

"For what?"

"Officer Lin, I think this is a huge conspiracy..."

"Say it clearly!" Lin Feng calmly said... Though he had guessed the answer.

The policeman sighed, "That is Fatty Zhang, and the old man next to him is Feng Guichun, the man with glasses is Zhou Xiaokun's brother Zhou Xiaopeng. Officer Lin, here's the thing..."

After Officer Lin listened to the whole thing, he stopped eating the bread and surprisingly asked, "So what they did was just for flattering?"

"Yes, it was just for flattery...Officer Lin, what's wrong with you? Don't frighten me!" The policeman held Lin Feng.

"Wait, is Xianman the daughter of Old Feng?" Zhou Zihao who quietly listened to their conversation suddenly said, "How is it possible? Xiaman is adopted."

The policeman shrugged, "Mr. Zhou, the household registration says Feng Guichun has a daughter Feng Xiaman before he went to prison, she's almost the same age as your fiancée. Maybe the fastest way to know whether they are the same person is to ask Tao Xiaman's parents."

Zhou Zihao was silent for a moment, shaking his head, "Unnecessary...This is probably true." ---Tao Xiaman had hardly spoken about her past and her parents.

He took a deep breath and walked to the prisoners with eyes frowned, looking Feng Guichun up and down and tentatively saying, "Mr. Zhou?"

"Who is Mr. Zhou?"

"You don't know me?" Zhou Zihao lowered his voice.

"Why should I know you?"

Zhou Zihao frowned and politely asked a prison guard nearby, "Excuse me, sir, has he never been out of prison?"

"Absolutely he's never been out of prison those ten years. He's a murderer." Answered the prison guard.

"Murderer?" Zhou Zihao's face slightly changed and he suddenly knew why Xiaman concealed her family background.

He took a deep breath and hesitantly said, "Sorry for that. I've seen an old tailor Mr. Zhou outside, do you know him?"

"An old tailor Mr. Zhou... Oh, he's my brother!" Old Feng clapped his head.

"Brother?"

"My twin-brother." Old Feng went on, "When I was young, he was sent to the other family since my parents couldn't bring up two kids."

"That's the way it is..." Zhou Zihao nodded. No wonder Mr. Zhou was unwilling to talk about himself and always wore a mask---He

didn't want Xiaman to recognize him.

Zhou Zihao sighed, complexly looking at Xiaman's biological father and also his "father-in-law"...

"Mr. Zhou, are you all right?" Lin Feng came over.

Zhou Zihao shook his head and sighed, "Officer Lin, to get my fiancée back is the most important thing now. Please talk about other things later."

"OK. I'm sure I'll get Miss Tao back."

Zhou Zihao nodded. But at the same time, something was happening in the prison car.

...

"Ouch! Boss, don't hit me... Pain, pain!"

"You son of b*tch!!!"

Fatty Zhang grabbed one ear of Qiang Zi, angrily scolding, "I asked you to find and invite her, what have you done? You son of b*tch. Go to the hell!"

Seeing Fatty Zhang's punches were not going to stop, Lin Feng came over and loudly said, "Enough! Stop!"

"Well...officer, I just want to give him a lesson!" Fatty Zhang hurriedly said, "He has caused so much trouble for you."

Lin Feng snorted, "The biggest trouble is you! Well. Don't playact here! This is illegal confinement. You must bear the responsibility!"

"Yes, yes, officer. You are the Boss."

At this point, the prison guard said, "Officer Lin, I think it's time to take these prisoners back..."

"Oh, please go ahead." Lin Feng nodded, "But I want my men to follow you, for safety."

"Thank you, sir!"

...

...

Miss Maid now was on a hill near the road. She walked to Luo Qiu who was looking at the road lights below.

Taking a glance at the helicopter hovering nearby, You Ye lightly said, "Master, Tao Xiaman will notice this sooner or later."

Luo Qiu nodded and suddenly said, "They've waited for each other for more than 10 years... Give them more time."

The club boss waved his hand and the fog began to rise.

Chapter 396: Buried Memories

"Fortunately, I found some sweet potatoes." Old Feng said with smiles, "But the fruit tastes sour."

Tao Xiaman looked at Old Feng. She felt relaxed upon hearing his voice and smiled. "I haven't eaten sweet potatoes in a long time."

Old Feng tried to ask her. "Can you see anything now?"

Tao Xiaman shook his head with smiles. "Yes. I can see now but it is very blurred."

Old Feng sighed with a relief. He sat down and buried the sweet potatoes under the bonfires. "No wonder you look happier now."

Tao Xiaman spread her hands to the fire and nodded, "I never thought how a bit of light was so important."

Old Feng didn't respond.

Tao Xiaman asked, "Old man, can you borrow me your cellphone?"

Old Feng shook his head and answered, "Do you want to call your families? But I don't have one."

Tao Xiaman sighed, "I want to call my fiancé. He must be worried now."

Old Feng reminded, "It's foggy now. I will take you back tomorrow."

"That's the only way left." Tao Xiaman felt sorry, "Old man, sorry. You wouldn't have to stay here if you didn't meet me."

Old Feng shook his head, "It's okay. Chatting with you is better than..." He lowered his voice and looked at Tao Xiaman, "...staying alone."

Thinking of his words, Tao Xiaman empathized with this solitary old man. "Old man, did your daughter abandon you? Why do you

not meet with her?"

"It's all my fault." Old Feng shook head.

"Er..." Tao Xiaman comforted him, "Old man, you should speak to her directly, you two are not enemies."

Old Feng broke off the firewood and whispered, "Really?"

Tao Xiaman sighed, "Maybe... I have no right to say so. I haven't seen my father in a long time too."

"Why not?" Old Feng raised his voice.

Tao Xiaman said nothing and hugged her knees. She was sinking into deep thought while looking at the fire.

Old Feng sighed too. "Sorry."

"No... it's nothing." Tao Xiaman shook her head.

She wanted to share her feelings but she couldn't find a suitable person. The old man knew nothing about her. Maybe he would be a great listener. "Old man, I..." She raised her head, "My father is a murderer."

Old Feng trembled. He put the firewood down and managed to breathe shallowly.

"Will you despise me?" Tao Xiaman was nervous.

"Of course not." Old Feng shook his head, "I have no right to look down upon others."

"Old man, you..."

"It's nothing" Old Feng took a deep breath, "Everyone has their story. I have nothing to comment about others."

Tao Xiaman smiled with a relief, "The world will be more peaceful if people can be tolerant as you are."

Old Feng frowned, "Do you care a lot about how people see you?"

Tao Xiaman shook head and continued, "I don't know. I can't

remember a lot of things from my childhood. But some will still come into my mind just like a clock, reminding me when I forget them... I am afraid of them."

"Afraid?"

Tao Xiaman raised her head and tried to hold back her tears in an effort, "At that time when my father was arrested... the families of that victim vented their anger on me..."

Tao Xiamn smiled bitterly, "Can you imagine that... they accused me of being a daughter of a bloody murderer... Everyone gave me cold looks..."

"How could they treat you like this! You are just a kid.They! They! They! " Old Feng was sorrowful. He threw the wood into the fire heavily.

Tao Xiaman was shocked, "Old man, why are... you so agitated?"

"I..." Old Feng sighed, "I heartily sympathize with you!You shouldn't undertake your father's faults."

Tao Xiaman smiled bitterly. "I don't know...maybe this way, they can they feel better."

The cave was quiet. A tantalizing aroma of sweet potatoes filled the air.

"It's done, right?" Tao Xiaman said lightly, "It smells good."

"Wait a moment." Old Feng nodded. He held the food with hands after taking it from the fire by wood but the potato was too hot causing Old Feng to be scalded and he shouted out.

"Are you alright?" Tao Xiaman held Old Feng's finger and blew. "Why didn't you wait until ti got cooler?"

"I was impatient." Old Feng smiled bitterly

Tao Xiaman started smiling and put the potato in her hands carefully using her sleeve. She added, "My father was always burned by hot potatoes too."

"You...still remember that?"

"What?" Tao Xiaman was stunned.

"Nothing, let's start eating."

"Here you go." Tao Xiaman smiled and provided Old Feng with half of the potato.

They began eating without a word.

This was the most delicious potato that Old Feng ever tasted these years. A meal, where he could chat and see his girl happily. He had looked forward to this meal for many years.

...

Old Feng didn't notice when Tao Xiaman began to fall asleep. She had gone through too much today. He was watching the fire as it died out. He still wanted to ask her more. "Xiaman? Xiaman?"

"Yes?"She gave a yawn. "Is something the matter?"

"Do you want to see your father? Maybe he misses you."

"I don't know..." She was too tired, "I don't...know...how to face him..."

"Xiaman..." Old Feng turned back and saw her sleeping. He sighed, "Xiaman, I am sorry."

...

Old Feng broke off the firewood one by one gradually and threw them into the fire. He sat alone at midnight with a newfound inner peace. Walking toward Xiaman, he tried to touch her face gently... but he dared not.

Maybe she had a great dream now as he could see her smile on her face. Old Feng sighed and walked out of the cave under the misty moonlight. He stood for a while and made a decision.

"You can show up now." Old Feng said, "I know you are there... Boss." Luo Qiu appeared after his word.

"Is there anything you summoned me for?" Luo Qiu asked.

Old Feng sighed after a silence. "Thank you for your help with this meeting... It's enough."

"It is nothing, that's my promise." Luo Qiu looked at the watch and continued, "Her eyes will recover soon."

Old Feng nodded. He wanted to say something but not. Finally, he requested, "Send me back to the prison..."

"Customer." Luo Qiu said, "According to our contract, the deal has begun. You will get nothing if you stop here. But if you go ahead, I can let you go back to finish that wedding dress."

"It doesn't matter now." Old Feng looked at that cave deeply. "It was valuable to have a dinner and chat with her. I have no regrets now. I only care for myself but did not think about her feelings. I shouldn't be in her life. Her life would be beautiful without me..." Old Feng walked to Luo Qiu. "So...send me back, please."

"I understand. I will make it as you wish."

...

Tao Xiaman woke up from the cold air.

She could see clearly now but she didn't find that old man who accompanied with her last night. She noticed the fire had died out with only a coat covering her. Later, she heard someone calling her name. It seemed that many people were looking for her. Walking out of the cave, she found a helicopter in the sky.

It was dawn. "Help, I'm here! I'm here!" She shouted.

A while later, someone from the rescue team found her. She looked back at the cave, feeling that everything that happened felt like a dream.

Chapter 397: Father and Daughter

Besides her twisted ankle, Tao Xiaman felt her body condition was great but Zhou Zihao insisted on her staying in the hospital for a body check. They also tested her eyes and found nothing wrong except that she was a little nearsighted.

Lin Feng and another policeman came in when Zhou Zihao was cutting apples for Tao Xiaman.

Lin Feng sat down after inquiring about Tao Xiaman's condition. "Miss. Tao, could you please help us make a record for this case?"

Tao Xiaman nodded and added some details.

Lin Feng continued, "As for Long Qiang, will you prosecute him or let it go? After all, this is a family quarrel."

"A family quarrel?" Tao Xiaman was confused. "Sir, I don't understand."

Officer Lin looked at Zhou Zihao skeptically. Zhou Zihao smiled bitterly, "Sir, I haven't told her all..."

"Zihao?" Tao Xiaman frowned.

Lin Feng stood up after a few coughs, "We will be back soon, you two go ahead..."

...

"My father? He..."

Tao Xiaman sank into silence after getting the whole story.

Zhou Zihao smiled bitterly, "It's Fatty Zhang's idea. Your father... Mr. Feng doesn't seem to know about that."

"Really..." Tao Xiaman nodded.

"Xiaman, you..."

There was an uncanny silence before Tao Xiaman sighing. She looked at him. "You already know my story..."

Zhou Zihao didn't respond.

She continued, "Your parents... Zihao, we could cancel the wedding. I know your father thinks highly of reputation. I don't want anybody to laugh at you and your family."

"So what?" Zhou Zihao frowned, "I am the one getting married to you. Don't you remember how we met?"

Tao Xiaman shook her head.

Zhou Zihao was serious. "We met in a restaurant while fighting for a part time job. At that time, we didn't know each other's background!" He held Tao Xiaman's hand and said to her gently, "Xiaman, nobody will care about that except yourself."

"Zihao..." Tao Xiaman put her head on Zhou Zihao's shoulder for a long time. She added, "I... don't want to look into this issue again."

"I agree." Zhou Zihao nodded, "but don't you want to see your father?"

Tao Xiaman shook her head, "Give me some time, OK?"

Zhou Zihao planned to change the subject, "I didn't realize that we met your uncle already."

"Uncle?" Tao Xiaman was stunned.

Zhou Zihao complemented, "Yes, Master Zhou, who is making the wedding dress for you is your uncle. He looks exactly the same as your father, no wonder they are twins. I mistook your father for him last night. If I had known earlier, I wouldn't have invited so many designers for you."

Tao Xiaman was confused because she never knew she had an uncle as a tailor, She asked Zhou Zihao, "Where... did you see him?"

Zhou Zihao thought for a while and answered, "There is no necessity to keep his address as a secret. Er... It's on No.33, Lane 2,

Jihua Road."

"No.33, Lane 2, Jihua Road?" Tao Xiaman raised her head suddenly, "Is that a five-story building? Have you gone upstairs?"

"Of course."

Tao Xiaman held Zhou Zihao's hand tightly, "There were many photos on the wall and a work station with a black sewing machine in the living room, right?"

"Yes." Zhou Zihao patted his own forehead and said, "Oh, you must have been to your uncle's house during your childhood. But he really is a person that likes the past. His furniture never changed."

'That... was my home...' Tao Xiaman wanted to tell him the truth but she failed. She even started to believed that Feng Guichun had a brother. "Zihao, I want to go there now, can we?" Tao Xiaman took a deep breath.

He couldn't reject his fiancée's request.

...

...

Tai Yinzi wore skinny pants and a treed suit while spouting an afro. As a five hundred Daoist, he still preferred this skin-tight style much more.

"Idiot." Qin Chuyu said and then left the club's main hall. She had stayed here for one month but had no gains. Leaving now was probably due to wanting to relax... or maybe because she didn't want to see this crazy fellow.

However, Tai Yinzi was overjoyed due to leaving that prison. 'Fine, I forgive you today, Qin Chuyu.' After Qin Chuyu left, there was no one in the club's main hall now.

"Master is not here!" Tai Yinzi walked towards the old gramophone while squinting, "And You Ye went to the

supermarket. Now is my time!" He opened the dresser and tried to get a gramophone record out. Nevertheless, his arm became entangled with a black rope.

The rope came in all directions. Soon, Tai Yinzi was tied up tightly and hung on the ceiling.

"F*ck, same trick again?" Tai Yinzi then saw there was a note on the dresser saying 'Don't touch, or suffer the consequences.'

"No!"

...

...

Zhou Xiaokun felt that Old Feng was rather normal today---He went on sewing since he woke up. "Bro, are you alright?" Zhou Xiaokun looked worried.

"I am fine." Old Feng replied with a smile.

"Bro, you... recently..."

"Just let it go." Old Feng shook his head.

Zhou Xiaokun pat his shoulder and sighed, "Did you put it down?"

Old Feng stopped working with a dispirited smile, "If she is happy, I am happy. That's enough."

"Bro..." Zhou Xiao wanted to say something else.

Old Feng laughed, "You can help me to cut off these threads. Work harder so that you can get out earlier."

"You are correct." Zhou Xiaokun was a little sad... he could get a reduced sentence but Old Feng couldn't.

At that time, Fatty Zhang ran into the room urgently, "Master, I am looking for you." He pushed Zhou Xiaokun away and sat down on his seat. "Master, I will give Long Qiang a lesson. Please trust me, I really wanted to help you, I didn't mean to hurt your

daughter."

Old Feng didn't know what happened since he left. But he didn't intend to ask... Fatty Zhang was the head among these prisoners. Now his treatment toward him became so nice. Old Feng shook his head and said, "That's fine."

"I knew you were a tolerant person!" Fatty Zhang flattered and got closer to Old Feng, "Master, although I made a mistake, but I am honest and loyal to you. Do you think I am a qualified student?"

Fatty Zhang blinked and asked carefully, "You have seen my sincere heart. So will you teach me something new?"

"Teach you? What do you want to learn?"

Fatty Zhang was hopeful. He rubbed his hands and said, "A skill or two is fine."

Old Feng frowned and put the needle on Fatty Zhang's hand. "You keep it. That's my key skill."

Fatty Zhang stared at the needle for a while and asked, "A... needle? Wait... maybe this is about the Sunflower Bible?"

Fatty Zhang, who was the prison head, clamped his legs tightly after trembling...

"No---!!!!"

Sunflower Bible was a cultivation technique which was very strong. However, a man must cut off his male reproductive organs to learn it.

Chapter 398: Let It Go

Tao Xiaman didn't say anything on the way. Zhou Zihao knew that companionship was more important than words at this moment.

Finally, the car stopped at the destination. Tao Xiaman had been here... before. But she hesitated and didn't get off.

At this time, Zhou Zihao carried her out of the car and smiled, "I can bring you upstairs."

"Let me down." Tao Xiaman was shy. She said lightly, "Help me up."

In this way, they went upstairs step by step. Tao Xiaman felt relaxed even with her injured leg. She realized that time had flown by once she saw the familiar old lock on the door.

"Master Zhou, are you at home? Master Zhou?" Zhou Zihao knocked at the door but there was no response. He frowned, "Is he out?"

"Zihao, the key may be at the top of the door." Tao Xiaman pointed at the left part of the door, "It should be near here."

"Fine." Zhou Zihao nodded and found the key after several attempts. "There it is!"

"I couldn't reach it when I was a child." Tao Xiaman added.

Zhou Zihao led Tao Xiaman into the room... There was still no response in the room. He had observed the layout of the living room last time. "It seems that nobody is at home. Does your uncle have any family?"

Tao Xiaman walked toward the work station along with the wall...She couldn't help stopping at the workstation and look vacantly at the wedding dress.

"It's done!" Zhou Zihao came close, "No wonder he called me

yesterday. It's for you to try!"

"Did he... call you?" Tao Xiaman asked.

Zhou Zihao nodded, "I know why he sounded worried. I called him back but it failed to connect." Zhou Zihao looked at the wedding dress. "It seemed that he went out for something urgent so that he had no time to fold the dress up."

"Maybe..." Tao Xiaman tried to say something.

"Maybe what?"

Tao Xiaman shook her head, "Nothing... I want to wait for him."

"Fine." Zhou Zihao nodded, "Let's sit there."

"No..." Tao Xiaman refused, "I want to stay here." She noticed the marks at the corner, "Zihao, take me there." Zhou Zihao knew that these remarks were for measuring height. "Are these marks for your cousins?"

"For me."

Tao Xiaman touched one remark which fitted her height exactly. Her hand covered the remark slightly as if touching the face of an old person.

"For me." She stuck to the wall subconsciously. Zhou Zihao saw her eyes filling with tears.

"It might be made last time when Master Zhou measured your height for you." Zhou Zihao thought for a while and said, "Your uncle must have treated you well. But strangely, he seemed to know about me before. I actually found his contact on a website and we have never met before."

"I don't... understand, either." Tao Xiaman shook her head.

"Er..." Zhou Zihao said gently, "No more thinking. We can ask him directly when he is back. Oh, do you know where is the washroom?"

Tao Xiaman pointed for him...She was too familiar with this house. She sat down and sorted out the wedding dress slowly... She knew that it took great effort to finish the dress in a such short time.

There were many needles and threads on the box and many tissues with blood in the trash can. Blood from being pierced by needles

"Who...are you?" Tao Xiaman took a deep breath. She had a feeling that... the old man would never return here. She seemed to have kicked something at that moment and found many plastic lunch boxes under the workstation... It seemed that he ate take-outs all the time.

---'I am buying it for a new friend. He is busy with work and always forgets to eat lunch.'

She bent down and held these boxes up while the conversations rang around her ear.

---'He will always eat them no matter if the food is good or not.'

...

"Xiaman, are you hungry?" Zhou Zihao came out from the washing room. But he didn't find her after searching all the rooms. Then, he found her cell phone on the sofa as well as her bags.

She vanished!

...

...

With the help of the wall, she moved jerkily towards a noodle shop.

The grey-haired boss of this noodle shop was doing the accounts. It was not lunch time, so he was stunned upon seeing Tao Xiaman walk in. "Hi, Miss. We have not opened yet." However, noticing her injured leg, he helped to support her, "Are you OK?"

"I am fine..." Tao Xiaman shook her head, "May I ask you something?"

"Sure."

Tao Xiaman hesitated for a while and asked, "Do you remember a young man who always ordered two set of noodles?"

"Er..." The boss thought for a while, "You mean the man ordering sliced noodles and topping noodles?"

"Yes. Did you see him today?"

"No... I also wondered why he didn't come today."

"What time does he come every day?"

"Er, usually in the morning or evening. But it depends, do you want to find him?"

"Boss, may I sit here for a while?"

"Of course you can." The boss helped her sit down, "Miss. Coffee or tea?"

"No. Thank you." Tao Xiaman asked him, "Did that man say something strange?"

"No." The boss shook head, "He was quiet and paid the money without a word.... I need to do the accounting if nothing is needed."

"It is alright, go ahead."

Tao Xiaman sat alone and realized that she forgot to inform Zhou Zihao when she left. However, she found out she didn't bring her phone with her when she wanted to call Zhou Zihao. She wanted to head back but just then, a boy with a ball came in at this time.

Then a fat woman shouted at the boy, "I told you not to play ball by the road. Now, you kicked it into the shop!"

"Mummy! I didn't kick it, but it went in itself!" The boy was aggrieved.

"How could it be! You are lying even when you're so small!" The woman came close to the boy and wanted to beat him. But the boy hid behind Tao Xiaman right away.

"Chen Cheng, come here!" The woman stood with arms on her waist. She felt sorry and apologize to Tao Xiaman, "I am so sorry. My son is very naughty...Oh? Are you Xiaman? Feng Xiaman? It's me, Jiang Xiaomei!"

...

The two women began chatting while the boy was drinking a soda. "You went abroad, no wonder..." Jiang Xiaomei sighed, "I didn't imagine that we would meet today."

However, Tao Xiaman had met her once... but she didn't call her out last time. She was looking at that boy and said gently, "Years have passed, you have had a son already."

"Do you know who his father is?" Jiang Xiaomei asked.

"No."

"Chen Zimu!"

"It's him!" Tao Xiaman was shocked, "Oh, my God, you two got married!"

"Is that amazing?" Jiang Xiaomei smiled sweetly. "Everything's possible. For example, we didn't imagine you would transfer to another school so suddenly."

"It's nothing." Tao Xiaman shook her head.

Jiang Xiaomei stopped this topic... She felt this Tao Xiaman was not the one she was familiar with before. Maybe they became estranged because of their families instead of the passing of time. "So why did you come back?"

"I am going to get married. My fiancé was born here."

"Congratulations!" Jiang Xiaomei held her hands but loosened them soon.

Tao Xiaman grasp back her hands back, "Will you attend my wedding?"

"Of course!" Jiang Xiaomei lowered her head, "Xiaman, I felt sorry the way I treated you..."

"Forget about the past."

Jiang Xiaomei smiled bitterly. She touched her boy's head and said, "Our classmates, including me, shouldn't have treated you that way. Since my child was born, I know that kids are innocent. They can understand what adults mean when they speak. And maybe they will keep it in their minds forever."

Tao Xiaman said, "Just let it go. We can still sit down and chat together, right?"

"Yes, we are lucky. I am a full-time housewife and would pick up my son every day at this time before going to the market. I didn't expect to see you again today."

Tao Xiaman smiled.

"I remembered, Uncle Feng always took you here to eat. I haven't been here for a long time,too... Oh, sorry."

Tao Xiaman said nothing.

Jiang Xiaomei said after a pause, "Have you ever visited your father?"

"No. We haven't met since he was arrested."

"Do... you hate him?"

"Maybe."

"Do you plan to visit him?" Jiang Xiaomei held her hand, "Actually, I can understand how parents feel since I am a mother. I love my child even when he makes me angry. So would Uncle Feng. He has paid for his mistakes and raised you up since your mother passed away. No matter what happened, he is your father."

"Meimei..."

"Xiaman, you have been surrounded by happiness all this time. You have nice foster parents, a beloved fiancé. But you never felt happy, why?"

"I..."Tao Xiaman wanted to say something but failed.

"Xiaman! You are here!" Zhou Zihao ran over and held her hand at once, "Are you OK?"

"I am fine." Tao Xiaman shook head.

Zhou Zihao noticed that there was a mother and a son here. "This is..."

"My classmate, Jiang Xiaomei."

"Hello, nice to meet you." Zhou Zihao said politely.

Jiang Xiaomei nodded and smiled to Tao Xiaman, "Aren't I right? Who said you are not blessed. You are the one that never forgave yourself."

...

"What did you talk about?" Jiang Xiaomei went to the supermarket with her son. Zhou Zihao asked Tao Xiaman curiously.

"Nothing special. She became naggy these years."

"Parents are always naggy. Will you be like that someday?" Zhou Zihao asked seriously.

"You're dead!"Tao Xiaman gently hit Zhou Zihao.

Who said she wasn't blessed?

...

They went back to the old house again. Zhou Zihao hugged Tao Xiaman on the sofa and waited until the sky turned dark. The clock showed 9 p.m, then it showed 11 p.m. However, Master Zhou didn't come back and the place became dark at night since there was no

electricity.

Tao Xiaman fell asleep and had a strange dream. She was invisible in this house with only a small lamp on the workstation.

On a quiet night, an old man was sewing a wedding dress while squinting his eyes. She sat next to him for a long time. Yet, in an instant, she travelled to another strange place.

It was a cave. She heard a familiar voice saying, "...It is enough to chat and have a meal with her. It's enough."

"I shouldn't be in her life. I can't ruin her happiness. Send me back, please."

She saw the old man disappearing in the mist and she herself sleeping in the cave. The, she woke up suddenly. It was dawn already and she was still with Zhou Zihao. Touching her face, she found tears filling her eyes.

Chapter 399: Phoenix-Pattern Dress

Tao Xiaman moved back to her old house ever since her ankle started recovering.

Although there was no water and electricity, Zhou Zihao accompanied with her and helped her fixed it all. They lived here while waiting for Master Zhou. Occasionally, Tao Xiaman would like to go to the noodle shop and ordered noodles with her fiancé.

Sometimes, she would meet and chat with Jiang Xiaomei on the way to the supermarket. They would talk about their childhood as if time went back to the days when they were young.

Unfortunately, Tao Xiaman failed to meet the young man who bought noodles as well as Master Zhou. In the end, she had to leave the old house and prepared for her wedding.

Tao Xiaman closed the door and put the key back to the original place. She left... No.33, Second Lane, Jihua Road.. with Zhou Zihao.

...

...

Old Feng watched the sunset on the grounds alone. In the old man's world, he liked to see himself as the setting sun. His mood was as peaceful as the burning cloud but his life seemed a little different.

The difference was not because Fatty Zhang would pester him to learn skills, nor the respect shown by other prisoners. He found out there was a different 'Old Feng' from Zhou Xiaokun during the days he left.

However, those were not the key points. He felt that his obsessiveness was gone, although he still slept with that old photo like before. In his eyes, the burning cloud was changed by winds and finally, it turned into beautiful streamers at a wedding.

"Tomorrow will be her big day." Old Feng whispered. Later, he saw Luo Qiu appear in front of him.

Luo Qiu was enjoying the sunset too. He said to Old Feng lightly, "Tomorrow will be the last day of our deal. You can leave and attend her wedding. Of course, you can also choose to stay here, but we will still collect our payment. "

"No need." Old Feng smiled, "I am pleased that Zhou Zihao and her new family treats her well. Her wedding will be fantastic. That's enough."

Luo Qiu nodded. He stood up and bowed to the old man. "I will do as your wish."

Old Feng shook his head without a word.

"But you gave me a great memory. Please enjoy a surprise from me... my dear customer."

"Em?" Old Feng was stunned but Luo Qiu disappeared right now. It was dark outside and he knew he had to go back.

However, before he could head back, an officer came toward him. "Feng Guichun, someone is looking for you."

...

...

Old Feng followed the officer with mixed emotions while thinking of Luo Qiu's words. He asked, "Sir, whom we are going to meet?"

"It's Officer Lin from the police station," the jailer replied.

"Oh..." Old Feng nodded... He seemed to have overthought things.

Old Feng saw a young person in the special interrogation room. He must be Officer Lin.

"Sir, what can I do for you?" Old Feng got nervous. He thought

that the officer came for the case of Fatty Zhang and Long Qiang.

Lin Feng said nothing but stared at him, which made Old Feng anxious, "Sir?"

"Are you Feng Guichun?" Lin Feng asked.

"Yes."

Lin Feng stood up suddenly and walked toward the door. He said to Old Feng,"Congratulations on your daughter's wedding," and then left.

Old Feng was confused... He wondered why Officer Lin Feng came here to say 'congratulations' to him. He had been wanting to hear that sentence but he didn't dare to hear it. The people around him, Zhou Xiaokun and Fatty Zhang, didn't dare say it either.

He didn't know why Officer Lin specially came to him... just to say 'congratulations'?

Old Feng took a deep breath. He sank into deep thought while his daughter busied herself with preparations in the evening before the wedding.

He thought of Luo Qiu's words, which made him have an impulse to ask for the ability to leave, but he fought it off.

The door opened again, Old Feng asked subconsciously, "Officer Lin, what are you going to do? Are you laughing at me?" But there was nobody outside.

Old Feng frowned... He realized that there was no officer outside, which was strange. Old Feng had a feeling that he could meet anyone he wanted if he stepped out of the door.

His heart beat heavily. The inner peace he had gained these few days shattered. Old Feng moved toward the door gradually but no one came in. It seemed that there were no guards at all.

Finally, he stopped with a bitter smile. "Feng Guichun, you belong to the prison. Xiaman is well and she has her own life. Why

are you still greedy?" He said to himself and sat back. Old Feng sighed deeply.

At this time, another voice was raising and calling to Old Feng lightly.

"Daddy."

Old Feng turned back suddenly without any hesitation.

"Daddy!"

Tao Xiaman appeared and called Old Feng in a red phoenix-pattern dress. She had worn it!

"Daddy."

Tao Xiaman... Feng Xiaman called his name again and again.

"Xiaman... my little girl!" Old Feng gave a low, choking moan and began to tremble violently.

"Daddy, I am going to get married tomorrow. Can you comb my hair for me?" She turned around and said with tears in eyes, "Am... I beautiful?"

"Yes."

"Very beautiful."

"You are the most beautiful bride in the world! My daughter!" Old Feng tried to control his excited expressions and keep this scene in his mind.

...

You were my lover in my previous life.

You are my daughter in this life.

Now, I made the phoenix-pattern dress for you.

To wish you all the best.

Chapter 400: A Crescent Moon

Weddings are always filled with best wishes. No matter if there were ordinary cars or luxury cars, no matter if there dined at a high-class hotel or a normal restaurant.

People would like to give their wishes to the new couple on the wedding day as it was a lucky and important day filled with their expectations. The day belonged to the newlyweds.

...

The beautiful smiling face of the bride could make a diamond gloomy. Tao Xiaman threw the embroidered flower into the sky with her blessings. However, the embroidered flower flew across the crowd and disappeared.

"Where did it fall?"

"Look for it!"

The new couple smiled while watching the girls look for the flower. But after a while, they still couldn't find it. Zhou Zihao was curious, too. "Xiaman, that was a well shot. I don't see it at all."

"Me, either." Tao Xiaman smiled.

Zhou Zihao saw Lin Feng standing in the corner of this wedding party. He said to his wife, "Xiaman, I am going to greet Officer Lin. Thanks to his help, we could visit your father in the prison."

"Sure, I will be there later."

Tao Xiaman didn't expect that Officer Lin would help her meet her father in the interrogation room. Sometimes, life would give one an unexpected surprise.

Tao Xiaman noticed that a man passed her quickly with the embroidered flower in his hands. This was the third time for her to see him.

She still remembered that the second time when she met him on

the street. On that day, she was preparing to leave the old house of hers.

He stood on the road, as if no one could see him. The world in Tao Xiaman's eyes seemed to slow down... At that moment, he seemed to have said something.

At that distance, she should not have been able to hear him, but his words came into her ears clearly.

"Since you've been waiting for the answer, why not go affirm it? The answer may be at the place you are able to get access to."

The man disappeared into the crowd and time seemed to start once more.

"Xiaman, Xiaman!" Zhou Zihao was waving his hands toward her.

"I'll be there now." She walked to Zhou Zihao without thinking... After all, nothing was more important than her big day.

...

...

"To tell you the truth, I prefer Chinese Baijiu most. This foreign wine is not to my liking." Old Feng put the wine cup on the grounds and complained to Luo Qiu.

Despite complaining, Old Feng drank one cup after another as the wine and dishes were taken back by Luo Qiu from the wedding celebration.

Old Feng put one piece of meat into his mouth. He asked, "What's the name of the dish?"

"Happy union." Luo Qiu answered.

"It's just a plate of braised food!" Old Feng said ironically but he ate another piece of meat immediately. Later, he pointed at another dish and asked, "And what's this?"

"Darby and Joan."

Old Feng snorted, "Isn't it a pig hoof?" He took another bite and tasted the food slowly.

Time passed with Old Feng asking and Luo Qiu answering. Old Feng felt it was boring to drink by himself so Luo Qiu removed half of the mask and drank the wedding wine together with him.

"Actually, no one has drunk with me for a long time." Old Feng was drunk and watched the moon tipsily. "The last time was several years before."

Luo Qiu was curious, "Are you allowed to drink here beside during the new year?"

Old Feng smiled, "Do you remember the police officer I mentioned before? He would chat and drink with me sometimes. You remind me of him."

"Really?" Luo Qiu raised his glass to propose a toast to Old Feng. "It is a crescent moon tonight."

"Yes, a crescent moon." Old Feng whispered. He closed his eyes and fell asleep soon... Even though he wasn't used to drinking foreign wine, but he still drank a majority of it.

The moon was getting smaller. It was midnight now and was was the time to close the deal.

Luo Qiu sent Old Feng back to his bed and put his hands on the old man's chest. Ten years of lifespan was taken away from his body. However, the old man turned over with a sweet smile.

"He is healthy. Even now, he can live another twenty years." Miss Maid stood behind Luo Qiu with an envelope in hand. "Master, the photo is done."

"Well done." Luo Qiu opened the envelope with smiles.

Miss Maid had prepared the photos early, she knew that her master would like to see photos now.

These were new photos with a beautiful bride smiling in them.

Luo Qiu put these photos in Old Feng's hand and stood up. "Thank you for your patronage, my dear customer."

Then, all became quiet again in the dead of the night.

Table of Contents

- Trafford’s Trading Club
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 301: An Office that Wasn't Leveled Up.
  - Chapter 302: Former Site of the Club
  - Chapter 303: Is This Why You Become A Rich Woman?
  - Chapter 304: Heresy and the Story on the Train
  - Chapter 305: Cottage in the Forest
  - Chapter 306: Weird Man
  - Chapter 307: Silent Night 1st
  - Chapter 308: Silent Night 2nd
  - Chapter 309: Silent night 3rd
  - Chapter 310: Silent Night 4th
  - Chapter 311: Silent Night 5th
  - Chapter 312: Silent Night 6th
  - Chapter 313: Silent Night 7th
  - Chapter 314: Late Night Talk 1st
  - Chapter 315: Late Night Talk 2nd
  - Chapter 316: Monster
  - Chapter 317: There is a Monster in Everyone’s Heart
  - Chapter 318: Beneath the Skin
  - Chapter 319: No One is Worse Off Than Others
  - Chapter 320: Lake Water Before the Dawn
  - Chapter 321: For the New World
  - Chapter 322: High Weeds around the Grave
  - Chapter 323: Reasonable Boss Luo
  - Chapter 324: Border Gate
  - Chapter 325: Studious Butterfly Monster
  - Chapter 326: Cram School
  - Chapter 327: Which Deity You Are
  - Chapter 328: The Fifth Suicide
  - Chapter 329: Boss Luo and the Little Butterfly
  - Chapter 330: Investigation
  - Chapter 331: Resurrection
  - Chapter 332: A Formal Visit
  - Chapter 333: An Impudent Person

Chapter 334: Meeting Long Again
Chapter 335: Conflict
Chapter 336: Hedgehog
Chapter 337: Compassion
Chapter 338: The Vanishing Cancer Cells
Chapter 339: Famous Detective Luo Qiu
Chapter 340: I’m Zhu Li, Please Call me Lizi
Chapter 341: Palpitation
Chapter 342: The Way Black Souls Work
Chapter 343: Bronze Sheet and People in the Rain
Chapter 344: Building an Equal and Peaceful World
Chapter 345: To Be Continued
Chapter 346: Alone
Chapter 347: Criminal Suspect and Officer of the Provincial Government
Chapter 348: Supercilious Person
Chapter 349: The Devil In The Heart 1st
Chapter 350: The Devil Inside 2nd
Chapter 351: Breakthrough
Chapter 352: Decomposing
Chapter 353: The Feeling of Seeing the Walking Dead
Chapter 354: Twins
Chapter 355: Father
Chapter 356: The Soul's First Movement
Chapter 357: Touch
Chapter 358: Grievances in His Heart
Chapter 359: The Soul Would Die
Chapter 360: A Little Life
Chapter 361: Happy Heartbeat
Chapter 362: An Agonizing Feeling
Chapter 363: Interrogation Carried by Wang Yuechuan
Chapter 364: The High Walls Of Prison
Chapter 365: Wonderful Performance
Chapter 366: It Would Be Better Not To Meet
Chapter 367: Cost Saving
Chapter 368: Wedding Dress
Chapter 369: Shadow
Chapter 370: Uncommon
Chapter 371: Don’t Know Each Other
Chapter 372: Dicey Prison

Chapter 373: From Now On, I’m The Boss Of This Place
Chapter 374: Collecting Scraps
Chapter 375: Abandoned People
Chapter 376: Master's Business
Chapter 377: A Place to Belong
Chapter 378: Witch
Chapter 379: Past dreams & The Book of the Dead
Chapter 380: Long Long Ago
Chapter 381: Sealing
Chapter 382: Behind the Human World
Chapter 383: The Picking Party
Chapter 384: Merry-Go-Round
Chapter 385: A Never-Withering Flower
Chapter 386: Relic
Chapter 387: Gem Flowers
Chapter 388: A Blood Bath
Chapter 389: Revisiting Hometown
Chapter 390: Kidnapping
Chapter 391: Unexpected Consequences
Chapter 392: Time for Poetry
Chapter 393: Mistake and Compensation
Chapter 394: Lose
Chapter 395: Rising Fog
Chapter 396: Buried Memories
Chapter 397: Father and Daughter
Chapter 398: Let It Go
Chapter 399: Phoenix-Pattern Dress
Chapter 400: A Crescent Moon